

MANKIND

RECENT SCIENTIFIC BOOKS.

Haeckel's History of Creation : a Popular Account of the Development of the Earth and its Inhabitants, according to the Theories of Kant, Laplace, Lamarck, and Darwin. By Professor ERNST HAECKEL. The Translation Revised by E. RAY LANKESTER, M.A., F.R.S. 2 vols. post 8vo, with Coloured Plates and Genealogical Trees of the various Groups of both Plants and Animals, 32s.

Contemporary English Psychology : an Analysis of the Views and Opinions of the following Metaphysicians, as expressed in their Writings :—James Mill, Alexander Bain, John Stuart Mill, George H. Lewes, Herbert Spencer, Samuel Bailey. By Professor TH. RIBOT. Second Edition, large post 8vo, 9s.

Heredity : a Psychological Study of its Phenomena, its Laws, its Causes, and its Consequences. By Professor TH. RIBOT. Large crown 8vo, 9s.

Sensation and Intuition. By JAMES SULLY. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d.

The Physics and Philosophy of the Senses ; or, the Mental and the Physical in their Mutual Relation. By R. S. WYLD, F.R.S.E., LL.D. Demy 8vo, Illustrated by several Plates, 16s.

The Principles of Mental Physiology, with their Applications to the Training and Discipline of the Mind and the Study of its Morbid Conditions. By W. B. CARPENTER, M.D., LL.D., F.R.S. Fourth Edition, demy 8vo, Illustrated, 12s.

HENRY S. KING & Co., LONDON.

THE RACES OF MAN
AND THEIR GEOGRAPHICAL
DISTRIBUTION.

FROM THE GERMAN OF
OSCAR PESCHEL.

HENRY S. KING & Co., LONDON.

1876.

(The rights of translation and of reproduction are reserved.)

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

INCLINATION without some form of external pressure is insufficient to induce an author to publish a handbook, for though completeness is essential, the work is little attractive. Moreover, in such a subject as ethnology the author finds himself obliged to enter into matters requiring special study. He can no longer bring forward his own thoughts, but has only to repeat the dicta of the recognized authorities, and he never loses the oppressive sensation of gathering roses in the garden of another. It would never have occurred to the present author to reconstruct a doctrinal system of ethnology, had he not in the beginning of 1869 been requested by the then War Minister, General A. von Roon, to edit a fourth and revised edition of his "Ethnology as an Introduction to Political Geography" (*Völkerkunde als Propädeutik der politischen Geographie*). The wish of a man whose name is closely connected with the creation of our military system, became a duty to a German on whom the newly acquired strength of his nation has imposed obligations of gratitude towards its great originator and promoter. After a short correspondence it was agreed that the new work was to be described on the title-page as the joint production of Herr von Roon and the present author, and that it should be previously submitted to the former for approbation.

Last autumn, however, when after nearly five years a portion of the proof was ready, it appeared that, owing to the shattered state of his health, His Excellency Field-marshal Count Roon was for the time unable to examine the contents of the "Ethnology," and that although he intended to do so when convalescent, yet if such delay should be prejudicial to the author and the publisher, he urged an immediate publication of the work, but that in this case any mention of his name on the title-page must be omitted. Any longer delay was indeed undesirable, for the rapidity with which writings grow old, owing to the present activity of science, more especially in the province of ethnology, was painfully impressed upon the author while his work was in the press, by the appearance of several new investigations, of which he was unable to make use. Thus in the early chapters the Mohammedan monarchy at Talifu was described as extant and prosperous, whereas, according to the latest intelligence, the Chinese destroyed it in 1872.

The original object of the undertaking, namely, to urge anew the scientific claims of A. von Roon's "Völkerkunde als Propädeutik der politischen Geographie," thus came to naught, much to the regret of the author.

OSCAR PESCHEL.

Leipsic, Jan. 10, 1874.

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

THE issue of a Second Edition has been delayed for some time by the author that he might avail himself of the opportunity completely to rearrange his work. But owing to considerations of health this intention must be postponed to a future time. Such additional material as has been gathered, as well as all elucidations derived from critical discussions on ethnology in the press of Germany and of other countries, and in private correspondence, have been placed in the list of "Addenda and Corrections" before the list of "Contents."* Although at present no alteration of the systematic groups has been adopted, it must be remembered that new arguments have lately been urged against the combination of the Indo-European, Semitic, and Hamite nations into a Mediterranean race. When, for instance, Professor R. Hartmann recognized a remarkable correspondence between the skulls of the Shillook negroes and the heads of the old Egyptians and of their descendants, the Fellaheen (Schweinfurth, *The Heart of Africa*, vol. i. p. 96), such a fact could not fail to produce a deep impression. On the other hand, in the absence of measure-

* These have been inserted in the text of the English edition.

ments and distinct physical descriptions of many members of these groups, a separation could not as yet be carried into effect : nor is it indeed impossible that proof may yet be obtained of the common origin. In the three great groups of languages it is perhaps unadvisable hastily to replace an old and questionable arrangement by one which, though new, is also questionable.

OSCAR PESCHEL.

Leipzig, October, 1874.

CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

I.—*Man's Place in Creation*.. Similarities and Dissimilarities between Men and Apes.

II.—*Unity or Plurality of the Human Race*. Morphological and Physiological Conception of Species. Fertility of Racial Hybrids. Darwin's Natural and Sexual Selections. Psychical Identity of the Human Race.

III.—*Place of Origin of the Human Race*. Not on Islands. Not in Australia. Not in America. Lemuria.

IV.—*Antiquity of the Human Race*. Flint Implements at Abbeville. Discoveries in Caves. Reindeer Period in France. Schussenried. Kitchen middens. Lake Dwellings. Discoveries in Nilitic Deposits.

PHYSICAL CHARACTERS.

I.—*Proportions of the Brain-case*. Cross-heads. Sexual Differences. Index of Breadth. Index of Height.

II.—*The Brain of Man*. Weight in Men and Animals. Microcephals. Racial Weights. Size of Brain. Form and Weight of Brain.

III.—*Osseous Facial Apparatus*. Position of the Jaw. Zygomatic Arches. Root of the Nose.

Contents.

IV.—*Proportions of the Pelvis and Limbs.* Shape of the Pelvis. Stature Proportions of the Upper to the Lower Limbs.

V.—*Skin and Hair.* Pigment Cells. Colour of New-born Infants. Odour. Origin of the Colour of the Skin. Colour of the Hair: Section of the Hair. Matting of the Hair. Hair on the Body.

LINGUISTIC CHARACTERS.

I.—*Evolutionary History of Human Language.* Language of Animals. Independence of Sound and Sense. Onomatopoeetry. Interjections. Accentuation. Gestures. Deaf-mutes. Infantine Language. Wealth of Words.

II.—*Structure of Human Language.* Monosyllabism. Definition of Meaning. Ural-Altaic Type. Euphony. Incorporation. Prefix Languages of South Africa. Gender. Semitism. Indo-European Type.

III.—*Language as a Means of Classification.*

INDUSTRIAL, SOCIAL, AND RELIGIOUS PHASES OF DEVELOPMENT.

I.—*Primitive Condition.* No Animal Condition demonstrated. Discovery of Fire. Fire-Drills. Bushmen. Veddahs. Mincopies. Fuegians. Botocudos. Causes of the Extinction of Barbarous Nations.

II.—*Food and its Preparation.* Wild Nutritive Plants. Pantophagy. Cannibalism. Alcoholic and Narcotic Articles of Food. Stone Cooking. Earthenware Vessels. Forks. Spoons. Salt.

III.—*Clothing and Shelter.* Sense of Modesty. Materials of Clothing. Clothing of the Feet. Screens of Foliage. Leaf Huts. Stone Buildings. Arched Vaulting.

IV.—*Weapons.* Bows and Arrows. Blow Pipes. Arrow Poisons. Slings. Weapons of Agricultural Nations.

V.—*Boats and Navigation.* Rivers and Inland Seas. Phœnicians and Arabs. Inhabitants of Fiords. Islanders.

VI.—*Influence of Commerce on the Local Distribution of Nations.* Precious Metals. Cod Fishery. Fur-bearing Animals. Spices. Logwood. Slave Trade. Tin. Amber.

VII.—*Marriage and Paternal Authority.* Age of Marriage. Unchastity. Polygamy. Polyandry. Incest. Wife Stealing. Purchase of Brides. Heterism. Terms expressive of Relationship. Gynocracy. Heirship of Nephews. Kissing.

VIII.—*Social Germs.* Vendetta. Wergild. Ideas of Property. Dignity of Chiefs. Slavery. Caste. Nobility.

IX.—*Religious Impulses in Uncivilized Nations.* Man's Need of Causality. Stone Worship. Tree Worship. Animal Worship. Worship of Water, the Sun, and the Forces of Nature. Idea of Immortality. Ancestor Worship. Hero Worship.

X.—*Shamanism.* Priestcraft. Sorcery as the Cause of Death. Trial for Witchcraft. Trial by Ordeal. Prayer. Sacrifice. Brahma and the Brahmins.

XI.—*Buddhism.* Vedânta and Sâṅkhya. Life of Buddha. Nirvâna. Morality. Extension.

XII.—*Dualistic Religions.* Good and Evil Powers. Zoroaster. Ormuzd and Ahriman. Resurrection of the Dead. Morality.

XIII.—*Monotheism of Israel.* Polytheistic Rudiments. Former Crudeness of the Conception of the Deity. Appearance of the Prophets. Moral Order of the World. Contempt for Sacrifice. Lofty Conception of the Deity. Enlightenment in Exile.

XIV.—*Doctrines of Christianity.* Doctrine of Preëxistence in the Old Testament. Benign Providence. The Lord's Prayer. Morality. Christianity and Buddhism.

XV.—*Islam.* Mohammed. The Koran. Monotheistic Purism. Moral Laws. Doctrine of Election. Extension.

XVI.—*The Zone of the Founders of Religions.* Terrors of Nature. Influence of Food. Influence of the Desert.

THE RACES OF MANKIND.

I.—Australians. II.—Papuan. III.—Mongols. IV.—Dravidas. V.—Hottentots and Bushmen. VI.—Negroes. VII.—Mediterranean Nations.

I.—AUSTRALIANS.

Physical Characters. Language. Abode. Implements. Mental Endowments. Customs. Causes of their Extinction.

II.—PAPUANS.

Physical Characters. Australian and Asiatic Group (Alfurs, Negritos, Mincopies, Semangs). Mental Endowments. Implements and Customs. Fijians.

III.—MONGOLOID NATIONS.

I.—*The Malay Race.* Geographical Distribution of the Polynesians. Implements, Customs, and Mental Endowments of the Polynesian Malays. Asiatic Malays (Sundanese, Tagals, Bisaya, True Malays, Javanese, Batta, Dyaks, Macassarenes, Bugis). Micronesians. Inhabitants of Madagascar and Formosa. Physical Characters.

II.—*Southern Asiatics with Monosyllabic Languages.* Races in Thibet and the Himalayas. Burmese. Siamese. Laos. Annamites. Chinese. Chinese Civilization. Confucius. Laotse.

III.—*Coreans and Japanese.* Linguistic Characters.

IV.—*Mongoloid Nations in the North of the Old World.* Ural-Altaic Race. (a) Tungus Branch. (b) Mongolian Branch (Eastern Mongolian, Kalmuck, Buriat, Hazara). (c) Turkish Branch (Uighur, Uzbek, Osmanli, Yakut, Turcoman, Nogay, Basian, Kumuk, Karakalpak, Kirghiz). (d) Finnish Branch, Ugrian Division (Ostiak, Voguls, Magyar). Bulgarian Division. Permian Division. True Finnish Division (Suomi, Lapps). (e) Samoyed Branch.

V.—*Northern Asiatics of Doubtful Position.* Yenesei-Ostiak. Yukagiri. Aino.

VI.—*The Tribes of Behring's Straits.* Physical Characters. (a) Kamtskadals. (b) Koriak and Tshuktshi. (c) Namollo and Eskimo. (d) Aleutian. (e) Thlinkite and Vancouver Tribes.

VII.—*Aborigines of America.* Migration from Asia by way of Behring's Straits. Mongoloid Racial Characters. Linguistic Relation to the Altaic

Type. Mongolian Customs. Comparison of the New and the Old World. (a) *The Hunting Tribes in the Northern Continent* (Kenay and Athabask, Algonkin, Iroquois, Dahcota, South-eastern and South-western Group). (b) *South American Hunting Tribes* (Tupi, Guaycuru, Gês, Cren, Arawak, Carib). Comparison of Northern and Southern Hunting Tribes. Moundbuilders. Copper Mines. De Sotos' Military Expedition. (c) *The Civilized Nations of North America* (Sonora Languages. Cihola, Pueblo, Nahuatltec, Maya, Quiché.) *The Civilized Nations of South America* (Chibcha, Quichua, Yunca, Araucanian, Patagonian). Indigenous Origin of American Culture. Comparison of the Civilizations of the Northern and Southern Continents.

IV.—DRAVIDA POPULATION OF WESTERN INDIA.

I.—Physical Characters. Munda Nations, or Jungle Tribes.

II.—True Dravidas (Brahui, Tulu, Tamul, Telegu, Canarese, Tuda).

III.—Cingalese. Type of the Dravida Languages.

V.—HOTTENTOTS AND BUSHMEN.

Physical Characters. Dwarf Nations. Hottentot Language. Hottentot Customs.

VI.—NEGROES.

Physical Characters. I.—*Bantu Negroes*. Suaheli, Betchuana, Kaffirs, Inland Tribes, Bunda Nations, Congo Negroes.

II.—*Soudan Negroes*. (Ibo, Nuffi, Ewhe, Otshi). Ivory and Pepper Coast. Mandingo. Joloffer. Sererer. Fulbe. Sourhay. Hausa. Kanuri. Têda (Tibbu) not Negroes. Bagrimma. Maba. Nile Tribes. Fundi. Nobah. Africa as a Residence. Civilization of the Bantu and Soudan Negroes.

VII.—THE MEDITERRANEAN RACE.

I.—*Hamite*. Physical Characters. (a) Berber, Guanch, Shellah, Tuareg, Têda. (b) Ancient Egyptians. (c) East African Hamite (Berabra, Bedsha, Shukurieh, Kababish, Hassanieh, Dankali, Galla, Somali, Wakuafi, Masai). Civilization of Ancient Egypt.

II.—*Semite*. Physical Characters. Ethnography of the Bible. (a) Northern Semite (Aramaic, Hebrew, Canaanite, Assyrian, and Babylonian). Position of the Akkadian or Sumerian. (b) Southern Semite; a Northern Arab, ß Southern Arab, Abyssinian. Chaldean Civilization. Religion of the Semites.

III.—*European Races of Doubtful Position.* (a) Basque. (b) Caucasian Peoples (Daghestân, Tshetsh, Abkhas, Tsherkess, *Lazi*, Suan, Mingrelian, Georgian).

IV.—*The Indo-European Race.* (a) Asiatic, Sanscrit Nations (Neo-Indian Languages, Siah Pôsh, Gipsy). Erânian (Persian, Kurd, Armenian, Ossét, Tadshik). Afghan. (b) European. α Northern European. Letto-Slavonian (Lett, Slavonian.) Germanic Nations (Scandinavian, Goth, Teuton). β Southern European, Greek, Albanian, Latin (Portuguese, Spanish, Catalanian, Provençal, Northern French, Alpine Dialects, Furlanian, Roumanian). Celtic. Original Abode of Indo-Europeans. Europe as a Place of Abode.

APPENDIX A.—Welcker's Cranial Measurements.

APPENDIX B.—Barnard Davis's Cranial Measurements

INDEX OF NAMES AND SUBJECTS.

INTRODUCTION.

MANKIND



INTRODUCTION.

I.—MAN'S PLACE IN CREATION.

IN the earliest attempt to classify animated nature Linnæus excited no indignation, though he united Man and Apes in one order of the class of Mammalia, which he designated the Primates. In our days, however, a scientific dispute has arisen whether the human race is to be separated from the apes by the rank of an order or a sub-order, but as this is a question of the value to be attributed to the idea of orders and sub-orders in a systematic edifice, Ethnology is not called upon to join in the discussion. Richard Owen thought that he had ascertained that in man alone the cerebellum is completely eclipsed by the cerebrum, and that a decidedly superior rank was thus secured to us. But even naturalists who, with Gratiolet, oppose the doctrine of historically successive transmutations of species, have acknowledged that this assertion was founded only on erroneous observations.

The distinction between man and apes, as bimanous and quadrumanous, has also been set aside by recent investigations. The tarsal bones of the gorilla resemble those of man in all important respects—in number, arrangement, and shape; only the metatarsal bones and phalanges of this animal are relatively longer and slimmer, while the hallux is not merely comparatively shorter and weaker, but, in conjunction with its metatarsal bone, is attached

to the tarsus by a more flexible joint.¹ But though the attachment of the flexors of the toes may be somewhat different in man, the prehensile foot of the ape possesses three muscles (*M. peroneus longus*, *flexor brevis*, *extensor brevis*) which are wanting in the hand.² Although the hinder limbs of the gorilla must therefore be recognized as genuine feet, their arrangement differs from that of our foot, and by this alone the morphological rank of man is raised far above that of the highest apes; for we reckon as higher the bodily construction which restricts special functions to special organs. Conversely, we regard as lower, those creatures which accomplish a variety of actions with the same members, as for instance, birds which are obliged to use their mandibles (which serve us only for the mastication of food) for prehension, and occasionally for climbing; in other words, for locomotion. The fore and the hind limbs of apes perform the same service, *i.e.*, they grasp and climb, from which it may be conjectured that the locomotion of these creatures is mainly conducted by means of climbing. The anthropomorphous apes, it is true, endeavour to walk erect, but they accomplish only short distances, and this not without effort. In the Malay Archipelago the *Hylobates*, which otherwise stand far nearer to man than the other three highest apes, always walk erect, although with bent knees, but, to keep their balance, they touch the earth alternately to the right and left with the tips of their long fingers which reach down to the ground.³ On the other hand it must be admitted that in some races of mankind the foot is used for grasping, especially in the case of certain Nubian tribes⁴ who hold fast to the ship's tackle with the hallux, and the natives of the Philippines, who pick up small coins from the ground with their toes; even in the midst of European civilization, calligraphers and painters have, in consequence of bodily defects, guided pen and pencil with their toes.⁵ Still these slight approximations scarcely narrow the wide

¹ Huxley, *Man's Place in Nature*, p. 23.

² Claus, *Grundzüge der Zoologie*, p. 1125.

³ Dr. Mohnike, *Die Affen der indischen Welt*, Ausland, vol. xlv. 1872. No. 3, § 714.

⁴ G. Pouchet, *Plurality of the Human Race*, p. 39. London, 1864.

⁵ Mohnike, No. 36, p. 847. Waitz, *Anthropologie*, i. 117.

chasm between us and the apes, which is mainly founded on the division of labour between the fore and hinder limbs. As soon as the child ceases to use its hands for locomotion, it has acquired a high rank in creation. If the foot of the gorilla only preserves the distinction that the hallux can be opposed to the other toes, it becomes by this an organ of prehension and unfit for walking. Apes always tread either on the outer edges of their soles or, like the orang or chimpanzee, on the backs of their bent finger-joints.⁶ Man in contrast with the ape, stands, walks, runs, jumps, dances, climbs, swims, rides, sits, and can remain for a long time in a recumbent position. The erect gait has caused the shortening of the anterior limbs, and has also, as Carl Vogt observes, given rise to the dish-like form of the pelvis as a support to the intestines.⁷ Our comparatively spacious skull is poised on the support afforded by the vertebral column, and if the jaws greatly protrude, as in the negroes, the balance is restored by the elongation of the occiput. The anterior limbs, released from their functions of locomotion, now serve for prehension only, and as yet they have always been found adapted to carry out every purpose of the human mind.⁸

Naturalists such as Pruner Bey have given currency to the assertion that the vocal organs of the apes are not adapted to the ejaculation of articulate sounds, but this statement has been refuted by Darwin, who cited as an example a monkey of Paraguay,⁹ which, when excited, emits six distinct sounds which excite similar emotions in its comrades. And although the dentition of man and apes in the Old World is alike, the permanent canine tooth is developed in us before the last molar teeth, and of the molar teeth, the front before the back; in the

⁶ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 139.

⁷ *Vorlesungen über den Menschen*, vol. i. p. 172.

⁸ Steinthal (*Psychologie und Sprachwissenschaft*, vol. i. p. 342, § 453. Berlin, 1871) maintains that our eye is assisted by the arms in the recognition of the relations of space, and that hence the knowledge of space is more developed in man than in animals. But the same service is rendered to the apes by their arms, and to the elephant by its trunk, and the antennæ of the insects perform perhaps better services.

⁹ *Cebus Azaræ*. Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 53.

apes, on the contrary, the development of the canine teeth forms the conclusion of dentition, and the second back molar tooth appears before the front ones. Finally, the early disappearance of the intermaxillary bone in the human infant may be cited as a distinction from the apes.

These last facts oblige us to glance at the evolutionary history of man, which has gained great importance since Johann Friedrich Meckel, of Halle, asserted in 1812, that every animal in its immature condition (and this lasts from the fecundation of the egg to the first sexual functions) passes through all the forms which occur during the entire life of the animals of every grade beneath it. At the time of birth the gap between the child and the young of the ape is as yet very narrow. Novices might be puzzled to distinguish between the skulls of children and young chimpanzees. The brains of children and young apes approach very closely in size, but of all parts of the body, the brain of the ape grows the least. Thus, although the brain of the anthropomorphous ape contains all the main parts of the human skull, its development nevertheless assumes quite another direction. In the course of growth, the young of the orang or chimpanzee, which closely resemble our children in their ways, gradually lose their resemblance to the human structure. Before the change of teeth has begun, the brain of the ape has usually attained its completion, whereas in the child its proper development is just then actively beginning. In the apes, on the contrary, the facial bones grow in an animal direction, so that finally the largest ape has the brain of a child and the jaws of an ox. Thence it follows, that a man would never originate from the progressive evolution of the apes, for their development is directed to different ends, and the longer they advance towards these ends, the greater are the contrasts. It is in quite the lowest species of apes, the Uistiti of Eastern Brazil, which are, as it were, behindhand in their evolution, that the bony portion of the head presents a greater resemblance to that of man than in the anthropomorphous species.¹⁰ It is only a popular misapprehension that, by the theory of the transmutation of species, man is supposed to be descended from one of the four highest.

¹⁰ Virchow, *Menschen und Affenschädel*, pp. 25, 26. Berlin, 1870.

species of apes. Neither Darwin nor any of his adherents ever asserted anything of the sort, but on the contrary they maintain that the ancestors of mankind branched off, in the first or earliest part of the tertiary period, from species of the Catarrhine group long since extinct. If this conjecture is to be recognized by science, the intermediate and transitional forms from these apes of the eocene period to the man of the present time, must be somewhere discovered. From the moment that the separate links in the chain of transmutations of form become known to us, no thoughtful man will longer doubt as to the process. But till then every other hypothesis is equally justified, and so far geological discoveries afford no promise that this gap will necessarily be filled up either sooner or later.

We cannot conclude these observations without answering the accusation which may perhaps be silently made, that we leave out of sight the intellectual functions of mankind. We at once repeat what Darwin¹¹ has already said, that the motions of conscience as connected with repentance, and the feelings of duty, are the most important differences which separate us from the animal; that in the latter there is no capability of solving a mathematical problem, or of admiring a landscape painting, or a manifestation of power; neither can any reflection take place respecting the correlation of phenomena, and still less as to the hypothesis of a First Cause or a Divine Will.¹²

The greatest differences between man and animals will first claim attention during the investigation of the evolutionary history of speech; and the history of national customs likewise tacitly contains the best argument for the superior dignity of mankind. Yet all these facts in no way concern us in assigning to man his position in the animal kingdom, any more than the position of the elephant in a zoological system can be affected by its sagacity. Man is only entitled to that rank in a morphological system which, in future ages, when nothing is left of our race but a sufficient number of fossil bones, a thinking being

¹¹ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. i. chap. ii. Haeckel, *History of Creation*, vol. ii. p. 344. London, 1876.

¹² Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. i. chap. ii.

Man's Place in Creation.

would assign to him in a scientific arrangement of the animal kingdom. According to the principles of comparative anatomy and by systematic requirements, he would then be separated from the apes of the present geological era only as an order or a sub-order.

II.—THE UNITY OR PLURALITY OF SPECIES OF THE HUMAN RACE.

THE attempt to classify all the most similar creatures under one name, dates from the time when in the growth of language the invention of the name perfected the class. In nations which have remained at a low stage of civilization, we find names for different species of oaks, but none for the genus oak, nay, not even one for tree. The distinctive marks are therefore apprehended before the analogous qualities. Names for dog, wolf, and fox arose from a need of intelligible communication respecting the outer world, and with the names, a classification was already accomplished. Linnæus was the first who scientifically justified such use of language. Scarcely a century and a half therefore has elapsed since the idea of species was first instituted ; and Linnæus himself did not imagine species to have been created for ever invariable in number, but believed that new ones might be produced from the mongrels of dissimilar representatives of the genera. Goethe, on the other hand, still maintained that Nature knows only individuals, and that species exist only in school books. As soon as terms were to be invented for the typical varieties of the human race, a dispute arose as to whether the nations of the earth are divisible into different species or only into different varieties. Often, as in this instance, it is the highest and most obscure problems which most strongly attract the inexperienced, hurrying them on to premature and utterly worthless conclusions. Nor was it even with unprejudiced minds that anthropologists approached this difficult question, for some endeavoured to harmonize their conclusions with the Hebrew legend of the creation of a first human pair, while others strove to establish the plurality of species in order to withdraw the sympathy of humanity from the negro, and to hush the appeals of conscience against the degradation of man into a beast

of burden in tropical husbandry. It is a remarkable fact, that this dispute as to the unity or plurality of species should have occupied the attention of men before a single definition of species had found universal or even general acceptance. "We reckon in one and the same species," says Blumenbach, "those animated beings which are so analogous in structure and form that their differences can have originated only from variation. But we regard as separate species, those of which the differences are so essential that they cannot be explained by the recognized influences of variation, if this expression is allowable."¹

It is strange that Blumenbach, otherwise so acute, should not have perceived that in this play of words everything remains vague, since he assumes the idea of variation to be known, and therefore leaves it undefined. Moreover, if we can imagine that a being exactly similar to ourselves both in bodily structure and in mental functions, had miraculously descended from the planet Mars, Blumenbach must have agreed with us in reckoning it a member of the same species. This would have been the case in Cuvier's opinion also, for "the species," he says, "is the sum of all living beings descended from one another and from common ancestors, and those which resemble them as much as they resemble one another."² Thus Cuvier and Blumenbach did not as yet insist that all the members of the same species should possess common ancestors.

A common descent was however postulated by the elder De Candolle. "The species," so ran his definition, "is the association of all individuals which reciprocally resemble each other more than others, and from whose union proceed fertile offspring, which again, in their turn, reproduce themselves in successive generations, so that their descent from a single being can be inferred."³

Here at last species seemed to be sharply and well defined. All animated beings, however striking the differences perceptible in their structure and form, would be included in one species

¹ *De generis humani varietate nativa*, p. 66. Ed. 3. Göttingen, 1795.

² Quatrefages, *Rapport sur les progrès de l'Anthropologie*, p. 56. Paris, 1867.

³ *Ibid.* p. 104.

whenever they generate fertile offspring which, as well as their descendants, effect fertile crosses in their turn. Sterility in the offspring, or even in the second generation, was decisive of the contrary. Flourens also adhered to this mark of recognition. "Fertility," he says, "is the foundation of the persistency of specific character. Different species generate hybrids of limited fertility."⁴ Drawing the definition still closer, De Quatrefages says, "The species includes all more or less similar individuals which descend, or can be supposed to descend, from a single ancestral pair in unbroken succession."⁵

Before we decide as to the value of this definition of species, we will first inquire whether the hybrids of different races of mankind possess the characteristic of fertility. That Aryan Hindoos and Dravidas, Chinese and Europeans, Arabs and Negresses can generate hybrids, and that these hybrids in their turn produce offspring, has probably never been disputed, but on the other hand, it is frequently maintained that Mulattoes die out in subsequent generations, and in Central America, women of mixed blood are commonly considered barren. The cause of this phenomenon, which is certainly frequent, is not however physiological, but an immoral course of life.⁶ The fact that in the islands of Cuba and St. Domingo, the half-caste population has increased to hundreds of thousands, attest at least that the offspring of South European Creoles and Negroes are fruitful. Only one observer has affirmed the entire sterility of Mulattoes in Jamaica, and the statement was not left without contradiction.⁷ In America a hybrid race, the Zambos, has arisen, descendants of Negroes and the women of the so-called red aborigines.⁸ They

⁴ Flourens, Examen du livre de Mr. Darwin sur l'origine des espèces, p. 21. Paris, 1864.

⁵ Unité de l'espèce humaine, p. 54. Paris, 1861.

⁶ On this point of dispute, which it is impossible to settle in the absence of strict observations, the author has questioned German merchants long resident in Cuba, and invariably received the answer that mulatto women of every conceivable degree of fertility are not uncommon, and that the frequent unproductiveness of such women must be ascribed to early excesses.

⁷ P. Broca, Hybridity in the Genus Homo, p. 36. London, 1864.

⁸ Cases in which negresses form unions with the indigenous men of America are, as might be expected, very rare.

are frequently found⁹ among the Creek Indians of the United States, as well as in Central America; and on the coasts of Ystmo and New Granada the population already bears distinct marks of semi-African blood. In the former dependencies of Spain, the hybrids of Europeans and American women may be reckoned by millions; Ladinos, as they are termed in Mexico; Cholos, in Ecuador, Peru, and Chili, and collectively known as Mestizios. If hybrids are rarities in Australia, this, as judicial investigations have attested, is because the natives themselves habitually destroy the half-castes.¹⁰ Tasmanian women have likewise given birth to numerous hybrids, for James Bonwick knew and names the mother of thirteen half-caste children.¹¹ Paul Broca was therefore falsely informed when he denied the existence of half-caste Australians and Tasmanians,¹² and thus fall to the ground the conclusions which he pronounced with unwarranted assurance. But it is still more significant that half-castes are born of unions between Europeans and Hottentots, for if any race of men have a claim to be regarded as a separate species, it is undoubtedly these aboriginal inhabitants of the Cape.¹³ Finally in remote islands, such as Tristan d'Acunha, various crosses between English, Dutch, Mulattoes, and Negresses have taken place.¹⁴ To judge by experience in the vegetable kingdom, as Darwin observes, threefold crosses betwixt Negroes, Indians, and Europeans, as they occur in America, afford the most certain proof of the reciprocal fertility of the parental forms.¹⁵

Even were it no longer disputed that all the families of mankind, however different, were capable of generating hybrids, we should still be no nearer a decision as to the unity or plurality of the human

⁹ According to the Second Annual Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners, vol. iii. p. 412. Washington, 1871.

¹⁰ Charles Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 194. Also Edward John Eyre, *Central Australia*, vol. ii. p. 324. London, 1845.

¹¹ *The Last of the Tasmanians*, p. 316. London, 1870. ¹² Broca, p. 47.

¹³ In their own country, these mongrels are sometimes called hybrids, sometimes Griquas, but this latter designation has been so misapplied that it no longer conveys any strict anthropological idea. Fritsch, *Die Eingebornen Südafrika's*, p. 376.

¹⁴ Quatrefages, *Rapport*, p. 477.

¹⁵ *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 198.

species. For modern science acknowledges that animals which when in a state of freedom avoided one another sexually, can be induced to form an entire mixture of blood and specific characters. We do not say so much of the commonly cited hybrid productions of the dog, the wolf, and the fox, of the goat and the sheep, of the rabbit and the hare, for in some cases the mongrel forms were not successfully established, while in others the fertility of the hybrids was not continued beyond a few generations. But we will cite the experiment for which we are indebted to Mr. Buxton, who has naturalized two species of cockatoos, in his park in Norfolk, which not only breed every year, but have crossed in the open air and produced a hybrid race which, unlike both its parents, is decorated with a scarlet hood, so that creation here seems to be enriched by a new species. Moreover our canine races are certainly the result of a mixture of species. In shape and make the Eskimo dog approximates to the Arctic wolf; the Indian dog to the prairie wolf; the Nubian domestic dog and its mummied examples clearly testify to their descent from the jackal.¹⁶ Again, the peculiar smell of the last-named animal was acquired by dogs which Geoffroi St. Hilaire had for some time fed on raw meat. Our present breeds of cattle have moreover been evolved from two distinct European species: *Bos primigenius*, which was still wild in Cæsar's time, and *Bos longifrons* or *brachyceros* of the Swiss lake dwellings.¹⁷ As long as they lived side by side in freedom they preserved their specific characters in full purity, whereas their structure and form are now completely blended by intercrossing. European cattle are capable of generating hybrids even with the zebu (*Bos indicus*), the

¹⁶ Herr Jeitteles, who has been long studying this question, and has diligently collected the skulls of animals, maintains the complete accordance of the dog of the lake dwellings and the Algerian jackal (*Canis Sacalius*). *Alterthümer der Stadt Olmütz*, p. 79. Vienna, 1872.

¹⁷ Rüttimeyer arrived at the conclusion that the cattle of Chillingham Park are the descendants of the tamed ure-ox (*Bos primigenius*), also that the *Trochoceros* and *Frontosus* forms are likewise derived from the ure-ox, whereas the *Bos brachyceros* represents a distinct so-called species. *Art und Race des europäischen Rindes im Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. i. pp. 240-247. Brunswick, 1866.

Indian buffalo. Again, our domestic swine are mongrels of the wild-boar, or *Sus scrofa*, and the *Sus indica*, which no longer exists in a wild condition. We owe this statement to the craniological investigations of Herr von Nathusius, who in other points ranks among the enlightened opponents of the Darwinian school. That the same can be said of Agassiz gives double weight to the fact, that he declared the endeavour to employ fertility of union as a limitation of species to be a complete fallacy.¹⁸ If this be the case, no obstacle remains to the opinion that the several races of man are distinct species, provided they fulfil the condition which Grisebach holds to be essential for the formation of a species, namely, the absence of transitions not arising from crosses.¹⁹ Occasionally a distinct line may really be drawn, as for instance between Hottentots and the Kaffir tribes; the Papuans of New Guinea and the true Polynesians. Facts such as these have encouraged the pluralistic school of anthropologists to assert a multiplicity of human species. To the United States of America, where this school formerly found its most energetic champion, we may trace the doctrine which teaches that the various inhabitants of the earth were created in those regions which they now inhabit, and that they are not descended from single ancestral pairs, but, like seed sown broadcast by the Creator, at once peopled the earth in hordes, being already in partial possession of their present vocabulary; for in its zeal, this school assumed a plurality of species even within a family connected by ties of language as in the Aryan. These strange opinions were primarily based on the assertion that the characters of specific variety have been maintained in historic ages, especially by the Jews and Brahminical Indians.²⁰ These examples are incapable of converting sincere

¹⁸ Essay on Classification, p. 250. London, 1849.

¹⁹ Die Vegetation der Erde, vol. i. p. 8. "The systematiser's method of distinguishing between varieties and species consists in this," that in the first case he can point to intermediate forms, but none in the latter.

²⁰ Tyros in ethnology must be warned against mistakes with regard to the "Black Jews" of Cochin, which were formerly erroneously cited as an example that the sun is capable of altering the colour of the skin. The black Jews are natives of India, purchased as slaves by true white Jews, and received into the community after the fulfilment of the Mosaic rites.

sceptics, for we know that during thousands of years; Jews as well as Brahminical Indians have intermarried only among themselves, while the experience of breeders of animals proves that racial characters must thus necessarily become established. Even in modern societies, in which the precepts of caste enjoin marriages in the same rank, it is acknowledged that an aristocratic type occasionally appears; in the Hapsburgs and in the Bourbon families peculiarities of physiognomy have become hereditary in a comparatively short period.

It is furthermore supposed that this high antiquity and persistency of type is shown in the representations of various races in the monuments on the Nile. Egyptologists are certainly unanimous that the people of the Pharaohs are distinctly recognizable in the Fellaheen of the Nile, and that, although much defaced, the negroes of the Soudan are beyond all doubt so distinctly portrayed beside them on the wall-paintings that there can be no confusion. It is, however, a suspicious circumstance that the old Egyptian artists unnaturally distorted their figures according to fixed prototypes; they draw the face always in profile, the eye always full face, and the hands invariably as two right hands. Hence we are surprised at the temerity of the pluralists who would infer from these portraits of kings and queens an admixture of Semitic or European blood in the Pharaohs. Of the wife of the founder of the 17th dynasty, Amunoph I., ascribed to the year 1671 B.C., it is said that she most strongly and evidently bears the characteristics of Hebrew blood, and this is at once adduced as proof that the Chaldean type has been traced in Egypt, prior to the arrival of Abraham.²¹ The head of Rameses the Great is spoken of as highly European and Napoleonic in type. In Rosellini's representation the portrait of Rameses does certainly vividly recall the first Emperor of the French, but that this copy was either unsuccessful, or was purposely endowed with Buonapartist features, is shown by a more accurate drawing published by Robert Hartmann.²² Darwin relates that, in a visit to the British Museum, he and two officials of that institution, whom he speaks of as competent

²¹ Morton, *Types of Mankind*, p. 163, fig. 33.

²² *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*, p. 153. Berlin, 1869.

judges, were struck by the strongly marked negro character of the statue of Amunoph III.²³ Yet this is described by Nott and Gliddon as a "hybrid without admixture of negro blood." Robert Hartmann was unable to satisfy himself that the Egyptian type had undergone alteration by mixture with Asiatic races, but on the contrary he perceived modifications such as might be accounted for by Nubian conquests and invasions.²⁴ If the monuments of Egypt prove on the one hand that, after the lapse of 4000 years, the inhabitants of the Nile valley still resemble their ancestors, they teach us on the other that, even at that time, the so-called types were merged into one another by intermixtures. No one can feel more forcibly the weakness of the opinion which holds to the immutability of racial characters, than one who has endeavoured to describe various nations, for no single characteristic is strictly the exclusive possession of any race of men, but each loses itself by imperceptible gradations. If it were easy to draw the line between the various races, anthropologists would not so far differ from one another, that one feels himself obliged to separate mankind into two, another into a hundred and fifty species, races, or families.²⁵ The method followed in these divisions is usually founded on error, for it is not the frequent occurrence of definite characters which is established, but among the numerous representatives of a type, that one is selected which differs most strongly from the members of other races of mankind. Thus the German traveller before he crosses the Alps, possesses a definite conception of the Italian countenance and figure. At Naples he expects everywhere to meet men on whose heads he has only to put a Phrygian cap, in order to recognize in them the well-known operatic figures, and he imagines that he has but to place a trunkless head on a silver plate in the hands of any girl to transform her

²³ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, i. 217.

²⁴ *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*, p. 147. Berlin, 1869.

²⁵ Quatrefages, *Unité*, p. 366. According to Darwin (*Descent of Man*, i. 226), Virey assumed 2, Jacquinot 3, Kant 4, Blumenbach 5, Buffon 6, Hunter 7, Agassiz 8, Pickering 11, Bory St. Vincent 15, Desmoulins 16, Morton 22, Crawford 60, and Burke 63 species or races. Haeckel (*Natürliche Schöpfungsgeschichte*, 2 Aufl., p. 604) and Friedrich Müller (*Anthropol. Thl. iii. der Novara-Reise*) are satisfied with 12 species, and we ourselves have been led to accept 7 divisions.

into a Judith.²⁶ The delusion does not last long, and the traveller soon confesses that what he had pictured to himself as the Italian type is only to be found at Rome assembled on the steps of the Trinità di Monte, where models selected from among thousands offer themselves to the artist. The same thing occurs in Germany. If we see a child with delicate skin, rosy colour, flaxen hair, and modest blue eyes, we congratulate ourselves that we have found such a genuinely German type of girl, without considering that we are thus declaring thousands of others to be not genuine, that is, belonging to no race.

In our days, belief in the persistency of specific characters hitherto current has been profoundly shaken by Charles Darwin. Even before his time the fanciful idea of the older geologists had been refuted, that each of the sectional periods, which teachers are obliged to assume for the sake of clearness of expression, had closed with a total annihilation of organic nature, and that then, by a creative fiat a new organic world had followed in its place. As long as our planet has harboured organic life, single new forms of living creatures have silently mingled with the old ones, others have silently disappeared, until, after the lapse of certain periods, new species, all differing from the older ones, are found associated. The succession of time in which the different forms replaced one another was not arbitrary, but presents a morphological chain, each link holding the other, each innovation (in obedience to the law of all genesis) is connected with that which previously existed.

Perhaps there is not a single expert in Europe who would not acknowledge that the organic world of the present age presupposes with imperative necessity that a tertiary creation preceded it, for in Australia and South America, as well as in other portions of the earth well-secured against an interchange of species, the animal world is most closely allied to the local fauna now extinct.

Hence if Darwin's doctrine consisted merely of the proposition that the succession of species is connected with the past by some cause or other, all geologists, botanists, and zoologists would belong to the school of the great Englishman. But, not satisfied

²⁶ Peschel is thinking of Bernard Luini's picture of the daughter of Herodias, not of Judith, at Vienna.

with this claim, he believes himself able to disclose the process itself and its necessity. According to his theory, parents or sexual couples will transmit all their characters, including even the smallest varieties, so that the offspring resemble their parents and yet differ from them in a useful, indifferent, or detrimental direction in some exceedingly minute peculiarity. The detrimental deviations would lead to the speedy destruction of their possessors, nor would the indifferent have any prospect of permanent preservation; the useful alone would effect the transformation of the creatures. But by continual accumulation, imperceptibly minute variations may in the course of considerable periods gradually grow up into specific differences. In this development of new forms, creation at the same time, as it were, criticizes its own works, for as each individual or parental pair usually generates far more descendants than can prosper on the earth, there arises between the offspring of the same, as well as between the representatives of the different species, a struggle for existence in which the more vigorous competitors overpower those less favourably equipped. By continued elimination of the feeble members of the species, and by constant transmission of the favourable newly acquired variations, a change of form gradually occurs. The gist and novelty of Darwin's doctrine consists in the selection just described and which is supposed to be carried on by Nature. This process of transmutation of species has therefore been justly spoken of by Nageli as a utilitarian system. When enthusiasm for this novel and bold idea had given way to cooler reflection, it became more and more evident that selection on utilitarian principles could not always have taken place. The evolution of new organs, or the transformation of old, would certainly have required long periods, during which the incomplete novelty, if not directly detrimental, must at least have remained neutral in the struggle for existence. Moreover, it became evident that organs may exist before advantage can be taken of them. Even among the most different races of mankind, a majority of their number possess vocal apparatus admirably adapted to song, although not employed for musical purposes.²⁷ Nor does natural selection explain how the shape and

²⁷ This is admitted by Darwin himself.

appearance of the organic world can arouse æsthetic dispositions in sensitive persons. We find not only the beautiful, the graceful, the agreeable, but also the repulsive, the terrible, the ridiculous, and the demoniac, represented in animals or plants. Darwin, in his book on the descent of man, has attempted to overcome this difficulty by a new article of belief, namely, in sexual selection; the female animals being supposed to prefer the male which most actively excites their senses. But in butterflies, particularly in the *Sphingidæ*, the lower wings are coloured with peculiar brightness and are adorned with gaudy eyes; yet this creature conceals its own decorations when at rest, while all perception of penciling and colour is precluded by its rapid movements when in flight.²⁸ Many finely formed men and women in America and Africa habitually disfigure themselves by placing discs and plugs in their lips and cheeks, and thereby prove that their taste is still undeveloped, so that their other physical beauties are certainly not due to a fortunate selection. Again we find beauties in such members of the animal kingdom as fecundate themselves, and even in the motionless vegetable kingdom. The aspect of an oak during a storm, the mournful appearance of a *Deodara*, the hues of many a corolla, the graceful lines of trailing vines, the fabric of a rosebud, are all capable of affording us æsthetic satisfaction, and yet any idea of the exercise of sexual selection by these objects is absolutely impossible.

Still less can the transmission of prejudicial characters be reconciled with intentional selection. Darwin indeed appeals to the correlation of the constituent parts of an animal body, in consequence of which changes in one part are accompanied by changes in remote portions of the body; but as we cannot demonstrate, or even imagine, the necessity of this correlation, this argument has no foundation.

According to the Darwinian theory, the ancestor of modern man must have been a hairy creature, protected from changes of temperature by a furry coat. Yet the loss of this fur could only

²⁸ Darwin, who never conceals anything that disturbs him, gives in his *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 354, a number of cases in which the lower surface of the wings of nocturnal butterflies are brilliantly coloured or adorned with splendid eyes. When at rest these beauties are invariably concealed.

act prejudicially in the struggle for existence.²⁹ In the case of birds the same observation applies to gaudy plumage, which favours the schemes of their enemies, to the boat-like excrescences of their beaks, as well as to the trailing tails which hinder flight and incubation. Thus it is just the new pith of the Darwinian doctrine, namely, natural selection, which still remains unaccredited; nay, Darwin himself, truth-loving as he always is, has openly confessed with regard to the objections made by Nageli and Broca, that in the earlier editions of "The Origin of Species" he has probably ascribed too much to the effects of natural selection and the survival of the fittest.³⁰ We may add that the older history of the organic world exhibits cases in which the extinction of families of animals has been originated by profound alterations of structure which, as far as such inferences are justifiable with regard to phenomena exhibited by fossils, must have been prejudicial to them. The Ammonites, which died out during the cretaceous period, previously began to pass into so-called cripple forms. Their shells, originally curled into a planiform spiral, subsequently become perpendicularly spiral, extend themselves lineally, or bend like a bow, a hook, or a shepherd's crook, or at least distend themselves so much, that the individual convolutions are no longer in contact with one another.³¹ But this abandonment of the old type was followed by the complete extinction of the family.

We, nevertheless, hold the Darwinian doctrine, not indeed as a successful, but yet as the best attempt to explain the connection of the older with the newer creation, and it will only be supplanted by a more satisfactory solution. It is scarcely comprehensible that pious minds can be disquieted by this doctrine, for creation

²⁹ Inveterate disciples of Darwin remind us that if graminivorous animals, such as horses, take to animal food, their bellies lose their hair. Seligmann, Fortschritte der Racenlehre, Geogr. Jahrbuch, vol. iv. p. 288. Gotha, 1872. The ghost Lemur (*Tarsius*) is, however, a beast of prey. Carl Semper himself witnessed how one of these creatures killed a mouse with a bite, and devoured it (*Allgem. Ztg.*, p. 239. 1873.) Yet we do not find that baldness has been caused by these articles of food.

³⁰ *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 152.

³¹ Credner, *Elemente der Geologie*, 1 edit. p. 435.

gains in dignity and importance if it possesses the power of renovation, and of evolving higher perfection. We may remind the religious world of the danger to which they expose themselves by condemning an investigator so highly esteemed as Darwin. When Copernicus came forward with his, as yet, feebly substantiated doctrine of the planetary character of the earth; nay, even later, when the telescope had discovered in the crescent shape of Venus, as well as in Jupiter and its satellites, a testimony confirming that of the senses; and Kepler by his laws had furnished strict proofs of the truth of the Copernican theory, the new revelation was condemned not by the Roman Curia alone, but also by Protestant zealots. The true Creator, because he had acted on the plan pointed out by Copernicus rather than that of Ptolemy, was placed on the Index in the person of those who had made known his system of worlds; they were persecuted as heretics, for whom, as Kepler writes of himself, God waited six thousand years, in order that they might recognize his works.³² Once more, two creators are represented to us; the Creator as Cuvier pictured him, who destroys his works because he has devised better ones, and the Creator as Darwin pictures him, who created life variable, but foresaw the tendency of this variation of form, and now allows the clock to go undisturbed. A single fossil discovery, which, however, we will not either desire or predict, might any day testify that the true Creator more nearly resembles the Darwinian conception than that of Cuvier; the rash zealots would then have to lament, as did Galileo's tormentors, that they had persecuted the true God for the sake of a scientific phantom. The history of the transmutation theory can already claim a brilliant case of refutation. Cuvier silenced Lamarck, Darwin's precursor, by requiring him to discover the intermediate form between the *Palæotherium* and the horse of the present day, if a transformation from the older into the newer animal was supposed to have taken place. Were he still alive, Cuvier, seeing in any of our museums the graceful *Hipparion* of prehistoric times, with its two aborted hoofs, would have been forced to acknowledge with shame that his demand had been strictly fulfilled.³³

³² C. G. Reuschle, *Kepler und die Astronomie*, p. 127. Frankf. 1870.

³³ Richard Owen, *Anatomy of Vertebrates*, vol. iii. p. 791. London, 1868,

Although Darwin has not been able to give strict proof of his theory of the transmutation of species, he has, nevertheless, thoroughly shaken the credit of the opposite theory of the immutability of specific characters, and, in the sphere of ethnology, has corroborated the conjecture that all races have sprung from a single primordial form, and by the accumulation of small differences, rendered persistent by undisturbed transmission, have developed into varieties. This opinion is favoured by a number of facts, which lead us to infer the high antiquity of our race as well as the capacity of man to adapt himself to the greatest contrasts of temperature found on the face of the earth.

As far as man has hitherto advanced in the direction of the poles, traces of inhabitants have been discovered; for not long before the sailor Morton and the Eskimo Hans reached Cape Constitution on the west coast of Greenland ($81^{\circ} 22'$ north lat.), on June 24th, 1854, they noticed the fragments of a sledge.³⁴ Traces of inhabitants, such as walrus ribs which had been used as sledge-runners, an old knife handle, and some circular stones for fastening tents, were found by the crew of the *Polaris* at the extremity of West Greenland.³⁵ These testified to the previous presence of Eskimo, whom in Homeric language we must regard as the "uttermost men" (ἑσχατοὶ ἀνδρῶν). With the men we also discover the tracks of at least one domestic animal, for the dog has always been his companion. That portion of the earth has yet to be found which could not be inhabited, or at least visited by some race or other. It is true, the transitions from different climates must not be too sudden. Even Icelanders who immigrate to Copenhagen, are apt to perish from consumption,³⁶ although they are of common origin with the Danes, and only eight hundred years ago spoke the same language. While in the New World, and in the Philippine Islands, the Spaniards have adapted themselves to a tropical life,³⁷ the English have been unable to populate India, and the Dutch to people Su-

³⁴ Kane, *Arctic Explorations*, i. 297. Philadelphia, 1856.

³⁵ *Proceedings of the Royal Geogr. Society*, vol. xviii.

³⁶ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. i. p. 145.

³⁷ Jäger, *Reisen in den Philippinen*, p. 29. Berlin, 1873.

matra and Java with the descendants of Europeans. Children born of English parents in India, sicken and die when they pass the age of about six years. Hence the English send their children to Europe on the approach of the dangerous moment, and the same occurs among the Dutch. In the Dutch possessions in India a European woman reflects maturely before she consents to a marriage, for the first child-bed usually costs the life of the mother. Even the Portuguese women at Tete, on the Zambesi, succumb to this fatality, as is stated by Rowley, the English missionary. But if the transitions to other climates follow gradually and at great intervals of time, there is no doubt that men of the same breed can people every zone of the earth, for no one disputes that the Hindoo of high caste, whether in Bengal, in Madras, or in Scinde, or any other tropical portion of his own country, is of the same Aryan origin as the old northern inhabitants of Iceland, and that the unknown primordial ancestors of both must have dwelt in a common home. Nor will any one maintain that the Gothic conquerors on the other side of the Pyrenees did not long preserve the purity of their "blue blood," and give birth to children of their own stock, Spaniards in Spain. From the Spanish peninsula again were derived the settlers in Madeira and the Canary Islands who, some twenty years ago, after the outbreak of the vine disease, emigrated in multitudes to Trinidad and British Guiana. All ethnologists agree that the aborigines of America, with the exception perhaps of the Eskimo, constitute a single race, and that this race has succeeded in adapting itself to every climatic condition in both hemispheres from the Arctic circle to the equator, and beyond it as far as the 50th latitude. We meet the Chinese at Maimaitchin (Kiakhta) on the Siberian boundary, where the mean temperature is below freezing point, and the thermometer falls in winter to 40° Reaumur; and we find them also on the island of Singapore, which almost touches the equator.³⁸ Turkish races, such as the Yakuts, are settled on the Lena, where Kennan found them³⁹ gossiping in the open air at a temperature of 32° Reaumur, clad only in a shirt and

³⁸ Pumpelly, *Across America and Asia*, p. 256. London, 1870.

³⁹ *Tent Life in Siberia*, p. 218.

a fur coat. The Kirghiz pasture their flocks on the Pamir plateau, perhaps the highest steppe in the world, and they dwell as the dominant race in the tropical part of South Egypt,⁴⁰ as well as at the ill-famed Massowah on the Red Sea.

In the examination of racial characters, we shall show how little these great fluctuations permit fixed limits to be drawn ; but meanwhile we may prove by a number of facts, that nations and races of men the most remote from, and least resembling each other, are so analogous in their mental habits, that at least it is impossible to question the unity and identity of the intellectual faculties of the human species. We shall refer later on to the fact that the language of signs and gestures used by the deaf and dumb of Europe coincides with the method of communication employed under similar circumstances by the North American Redskins. With but few exceptions, all nations have arrived at a single or double decimal system, because they have used their fingers in counting. Skin-painting⁴¹ and tattooing reappear in every part of the world. Knocking out the front teeth is not only a negro custom, but occurs also in Australia. Again, the teeth are filed to a point in Brazil,⁴² as well as by the Otando, Apono, Tshogo, and Ashango tribes in Western Africa.⁴³ Hippocrates even, or whoever else may have been the author of the book on "Air, Water, and Situation," mentions that by the people of the steppes of Southern Russia, the skulls of free-born children were pressed between boards to give them a more upright form ;⁴⁴ and we meet the same fashion among the Conivos on the Ucayali, in South America ;⁴⁵ it was observed by Ch. Bell and Berthold Siemann in the Mosquitia among the Smu ;⁴⁶ it is practised also on the northern continent, especially by the Tshinuks of British Columbia, and generally by all the so-called Flatheads, who further only permit the pressure of the skulls of the children of the

⁴⁰ Latham, *Varieties of Man*, p. 77.

⁴¹ Von Martius, *Ethnographie*, i. 536.

⁴² Du Chaillu, *Equatorial Africa*, p. 74, and *Ashango Land*, p. 431.

⁴³ Cap. 80. ⁴⁴ Grandidier, *Perou et Bolivie*, p. 129.

⁴⁵ *Journal Royal Geogr. Society*, vol. xxxii, p. 256, and Siemann, *Nicaragua, Panama, and Mosquitia*, p. 308.

free-born.⁴⁶ Sanitary considerations have induced many nations to introduce circumcision. Herodotus⁴⁷ considered that the Egyptians and Ethiopians were the inventors of this preventive measure, which was only borrowed from them by the Phœnicians and Syrians. At the time of the conquest, the Spaniards found circumcised nations in Central America,⁴⁸ and on the Amazon, the Tecuna and Manaos tribes still observe this practice.⁴⁹

In the South Seas it has been met with among three different races, but it is performed in a somewhat different manner. On the Australian continent, not all, but the majority of tribes practise circumcision. Among the Papuans, the inhabitants of New Caledonia⁵⁰ and the New Hebrides adhere to this custom. In his third voyage, Captain Cook found it among the inhabitants of the Friendly Islands, in particular at Tongataboo,⁵¹ and the younger Pritchard bears witness to its practice in the Samoa or Fiji groups.⁵² Another Mosaic statute requires that the Jew should endeavour to raise posterity to his brother's widow.⁵³ This view of fraternal duty was met with by Plan Carpin, the ambassador of St. Louis to the Mongols,⁵⁴ and by Martius among the Brazilian tribes of Tupinamba,⁵⁵ and it prevails also among the Kolush, in the north-west of America,⁵⁶ and the Ostiaks in Northern Russia.⁵⁷ We even find an instance in which we come upon two Mosaic statutes, namely, circumcision and the above-mentioned duty of brothers-in-law, which is quite beyond suspicion of any connection with Judaism, that is to say, among the Papuans of New Caledonia.⁵⁸ The strange custom of greeting by rubbing noses, is not only peculiar to all Eskimo even as far as Greenland,⁵⁹ but is also ascribed to the Australians.⁶⁰

⁴⁶ Paul Kane, *Indians of North America*, p. 181. ⁴⁷ Book ii. 104.

⁴⁸ Herrera, *Historia general*, Dec. iv. lib. ix. cap. 181.

⁴⁹ Von Martius, *Ethnographie*, i. 582.

⁵⁰ Cook, *Voyages in the Australian Hemisphere*, vol. iii. p. 156.

⁵¹ Cook and King, vol. i. p. 384.

⁵² *Polynesian Reminiscences*, p. 393.

⁵³ Deut. xxv. 5-10.

⁵⁴ *Receuil de Voyages*, iv. 613.

⁵⁵ *Ethnographie*, i. 153.

⁵⁶ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, iii. 328.

⁵⁷ Castren, *Ethnolog. Vorlesungen*, p. 119.

⁵⁸ Rochas, *Nouv. Caledonie*, p. 232.

⁵⁹ Barrow, *Arctic Voyages*, p. 30.

⁶⁰ Waitz (*Gerland*), *Anthropologie*, vol. vi. p. 749.

Darwin observed it among the Maori of New Zealand,⁶¹ Lamont noticed it among the Polynesians of the Penrhyn and Marquesas islands.⁶² Wallace, who was startled to see it in practice among his crew on taking leave of Mancassar, calls it the Malay kiss,⁶³ and Linnæus observed it in Lapland.⁶⁴

The descriptions of Cook's first and second voyages by Hawkesworth and the two Forsters, made us acquainted with the Polynesian custom of ratifying a bond of friendship by an exchange of names. The same practice prevailed among the Mohawks in North America,⁶⁵ and in South Africa, a bond of fraternity was concluded in the same manner by a Makololo and a Zulu Kaffir in Livingstone's presence.⁶⁶ Every possibility that such community of custom is the result of intercourse is removed, when we find that both among the Fuegians of South America, and the inhabitants of the Andaman Islands in the Gulf of Bengal, widows are obliged to wear the skulls of their dead husbands suspended round the neck⁶⁷ by a cord.

From the lofty plains of Peru and Bolivia may be seen cairns or so-called Apachetas on the mountain tops, which no mule driver will pass without adding a new stone to the memorial.⁶⁸ This custom extends all over the world. Captain Speke observed it in the region of Usui to the south of Karagve and south-west of the Ukerewe Lake.⁶⁹ Colonel Meadows Taylor in a romance⁷⁰ esteemed for its ethnographic delineations, describes the same custom in the Mahratta districts of India. Adolphe Bastian saw similar pyramids of stones in the mountain passes in Burmah, and among the Kayans in Borneo,⁷¹ the brothers Schlagenweit

⁶¹ Voyage in the Beagle, vol. ii. p. 198.

⁶² Wild Life among the Pacific Islanders, pp. 18, 269.

⁶³ Malay Archipelago, ii. 165.

⁶⁴ Tylor, Early History of Mankind, p. 66.

⁶⁵ Ibid. p. 161.

⁶⁶ Zambesi, p. 149.

⁶⁷ Frederick Mouat, Andaman Islanders, p. 327.

⁶⁸ Grandidier, Perou et Bolivie. In more detail in J. J. von Tschudi, Reisen durch Südamerika, vol. v. p. 52. Leipzig, 1869.

⁶⁹ Source of the Nile, p. 193.

⁷⁰ Tara, a Mahratta tale, i. 144.

⁷¹ Völker des östlichen Asiens, vol. ii. p. 483; vol. v. p. 47.

in Thibet,⁷² Michie during his journey from Pekin across the Mongolian steppes,⁷³ Ebers on the Sinaitic peninsula.⁷⁴ In Switzerland stones are piled upon the graves of the victims of fatal accidents,⁷⁵ and in Venezuela these monuments have precisely the same signification at the present day.⁷⁶ Spenser St. John relates that similar cairns are erected by the Dyaks of Borneo to the eternal disgrace of any man guilty of a shameless falsehood or a breach of promise.⁷⁷

Lastly, it is to all appearance a perfectly meaningless custom that a man, when a child is born to him, should stretch himself on a couch, and behave like a lying-in woman. Diodorus was acquainted with this custom in Corsica, Strabo notices it among the Spanish Basques,⁷⁸ among whom it is still maintained under the name of "couvade;"⁷⁹ Marco Polo ascribes this habit to the population of Zardandan or the "people with golden teeth," whom, according to Pauthier's explanations, we must look for westwards of the Chinese Yunnan on the upper Mekong;⁸⁰ and not very far from it, namely, in Borneo among the Dyaks, the father of the new-born child is for eight days allowed to eat nothing but rice, must take care not to expose himself to the sun, and must give up bathing during four days.⁸¹ In South America, east of the Cordilleras, the custom of the paternal lying-in has been observed by Martius among the Mundrucus and Manaos on the Amazon, and it extends to the Caribs⁸² and to the Macushi of Guayana, among whom it was met with by the younger Schomburgk;⁸³ according to James Orton⁸⁴ it

⁷² *Indien und Hochasien*, vol. ii. p. 330.

⁷³ *Siberian Overland Route*, p. 136.

⁷⁴ George Ebers, *Durch Gosen zum Sinai*, p. 188.

⁷⁵ Carl Vogt, *Vorlesungen über den Menschen*, vol. ii. p. 119.

⁷⁶ Dr. Ernst im *Globus*, vol. xxi. p. 124.

⁷⁷ *Life in the Far East*, vol. i. p. 76. London, 1862.

⁷⁸ *Geogr.*, lib. iii. cap. 4. Tauchn. ed. i. 265.

⁷⁹ Labbock, *Prehistoric Times*, p. 580.

⁸⁰ Marco Polo, lib. ii. cap. 41. (Vol. ii. p. 52, in Yule's edition.)

⁸¹ Spenser St. John, i. p. 160.

⁸² Spix and Martius, *Reise in Brasilien*, vol. iii. p. 1339, and Martius, *Ethnographie*, pp. 392 and 538.

⁸³ *Reisen*, vol. ii. p. 314.

⁸⁴ *The Andes and the Amazon Land*, p. 172. 1870.

is also customary among the Jivaros on the Napo. Even yet we have not exhausted the list of nations which adopt this custom,⁸⁵ but we will merely add that in the beginning of the last century it was also met with by the missionary Zucchelli among the negroes of Cassango.⁸⁶ Heedless travellers have not failed to revile or ridicule this practice as a senseless absurdity; profound judges on the other hand inform us that it is founded upon a misguided solicitude. Dobrizhoffer, who describes it among the Abipones, informs us that the fathers avoid draughts and fast strictly only because they consider that a material connection still exists between themselves and the new-born infant, so that their excesses or abstinence might affect the child. If the infant dies during the first few days, the women accuse the father of heartless frivolity.⁸⁷ In the Antilles, the father who is expecting offspring might not eat the flesh of the turtle or the manati, for in the first case deafness and deficiency of brain, in the second disfigurement by small round eyes, might be apprehended for the child.⁸⁸ Similarly, among the Indians of British Guayána, on the occasion of a bite of a serpent, the parents and brothers of the wounded person inflict fasts and privations upon themselves for several days.⁸⁹ Thus the inhabitants of the four quarters of the world have hit on the same ideas and superstitions, a coincidence which can be explained only in two ways; either these errors originated when all the varieties of our race still dwelt together in one narrow home, or they have been independently developed after the dispersion over the entire globe. If the latter be probable, then the mental faculties of all families of mankind are alike, even in their strangest twists and aberrations.

⁸⁵ Since the above was printed (Ausland, 1867, p. 1108), Dr. Ploss has published a treatise on the paternal child-bed with a greater profusion of testimony, in the 10th Jahresbericht des Leipziger Vereins für Erdkunde, pp. 33-48. Leipzig, 1871.

⁸⁶ Antonio Zucchelli, *Missione di Congo*, vii. 15, p. 118: Venice, 1712.

⁸⁷ *Geschichte der Abiponer*, vol. ii. p. 273.

⁸⁸ E. B. Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 372.

⁸⁹ C. F. Appun im *Ausland*, No. 31, p. 440.

III.—THE FIRST HOME OF THE HUMAN RACE.

WITH few exceptions all oceanic islands, that is, such as lie at a considerable distance from the nearest continent, have been found uninhabited when first visited by European navigators. That Barent should have discovered no inhabitants on Bears' Island and Spitzbergen in 1596, does not surprise us when we remember their inhospitable position, but it is strange that the same should have been the case in Iceland, for the opposite coast of East Greenland is inhabited by Eskimo as far as 75° north latitude. The earliest colonists of Iceland seem to have been Celtic Christians in the year 795; for there are legends which say that when the Normans first set foot on the "Ice Land," they found croziers, bells, and Irish books on an islet on the south coast, still called Priest's Island. In the Atlantic Ocean the coral-built group of the Bermudas, the volcanic Azores, the volcanic group of Madeira, the volcanic group of the Cape Verd Islands, the volcanic islands in the Gulf of Guinea,¹ the lonely volcanic islands of Fernando Noronha, Trinidad with the Martin Vaz-Klippen Islands, St. Helena, Ascension, Tristan d'Acunha, and even the numerous Falkland Islands, not to mention those in the Antarctic Ocean, were all uninhabited. The volcanic islands of the Marion, Croset, and Kerguelen groups, with those which lie southwards, and the two island volcanoes of St. Paul and Amsterdam, and even Mauritius and Bourbon, and the granitic island of Rodrigue, which is reckoned with them, were all void of human beings. Even New Zealand, extensive as it is, has been inhabited only in modern times, for according to the statements of the Maori, though these are unreliable, their forefathers landed on the northern island about 1400 A.D., while the volcanic group of the Chatham Islands, lying eastwards, was colonized by New Zealanders only during the last century, and the volcanic Auckland Islands to the south are still uncolonized.

In the whole ocean hitherto examined, the Canary Islands

¹ They were discovered by the Portuguese, 1470-1486, and were untenanted. Ghillany Martin Behaim.

alone were inhabited; here were found the Guanches, now extinct, who at the time of their discovery were no longer aware that a continent existed in their neighbourhood, for on being asked by the Spanish missionary how they had come to their archipelago, they gave the ingenuous answer, "God placed us on these islands, and then forsook and forgot us." Fragments of their language have, however, since indicated that they were scattered members of the Berber family. We know moreover that they were in the habit of making their dead into mummies, and also that they brought goats with them when they first settled in the islands.

Again, the islands in the Pacific Ocean to the west of South America were found uninhabited; among them Juan Fernandez, the scene of Alexander Selkirk's adventures, and Massafuera, S. Felix, and Ambrosia, likewise Sala y Gomez, the volcanic Galapagos Islands, chosen by the buccaneers for their hiding-places, Cocos Island, and the Revillagigedo group. In some cases even islands which were extensive, and situated near the mainland, remained uninhabited, such as Behring's Island, notorious for the shipwreck of its discoverer, whose name it bears.

Arguing from these historical facts, we may venture to state that the first human beings were inhabitants of a continent. The diffusion of the Malay tribes to which, besides the actual Malays of Sumatra and Malacca and the Javans, belong also the brown tribes with straight hair which, under the name of Polynesians, are distributed over all the tropical or subtropical islands of the South Sea, might be quoted as a single but only apparent exception. Since Wilhelm von Humboldt's researches on the Kawi language, we know that the dominant race in Madagascar also belongs to the Malay family, a fact which was previously disputed. This race of mankind has spread from the Comoro Islands, where the language is Malayan, to Easter Island, from $43^{\circ} 30'$ east long. to $109^{\circ} 17'$ west long., that is to say, over five-ninths of the circumference of the world. Nevertheless, it is not *prima facie* very credible that the original stock of the Malay family should have arisen on islands. The resemblance of their languages proves that before their dispersion the widely remote members of this family must have inhabited a common home. But this home must be sought only where the Malay nations are still most densely populous. The point from

which these hordes spread, lay therefore somewhere between Sumatra, Java, and the peninsula of Malacca. We may even go somewhat further and look for it on the South Asiatic continent, for in their physical characters the Malays are allied to the great Mongolian race. The extension of the Malay family more than half-way round the world, suffices as an example of how far the migratory instinct may scatter a human family which has once procured means for crossing the sea. But on continents also, the migrations of the earliest human families extended to the remotest districts. A single great language with various shades of dialect fills the whole of South Africa as far as the equator, so that Suaheli of the east coast is not entirely unintelligible even to the Africans on the Gaboon in equatorial West Africa. In language, we ourselves belong to the great circle of Aryan nations, which includes the Celts of Gaul and Britain, all Germans, the Italians, Greeks, and Albanians, all the Slavonians, the Armenians, the Ossets of the Caucasus, the Kurds, the people of ancient Persia, and the Brahminical Hindoos.

In America, though the case is not quite the same, a similar fact is observable. Setting aside the Eskimo and certain tribes of what was once Russian America, all the inhabitants of the New World, according to the unanimous testimony of all anthropologists, belong to a single stock, so that we might believe them to have sprung from a single parental pair. Although a confusion, such as exists in the districts of the Caucasus, prevails in the vocabulary of their languages, yet the construction of the sentences, or rather the formation of the words, is so peculiar and homogeneous that Spanish missionaries in South America have preferred to preach the Gospel sometimes in the Peruvian Quichua language, sometimes in the Brazilian Tupi or Guarani languages, because the Indians of those parts easily enter into the spirit of those languages, while Spanish and Portuguese are unintelligible to them.

It is true that a family likeness in language, or even a close analogy, is no infallible proof of a common bodily pedigree, for otherwise the nations to the east of the Elbe which formerly spoke Slavonian and now speak German, must always have been Germans; the English-speaking negroes of the United States must have been Anglo-Saxons, and the Spanish-speaking Indians of Central

or South America, blood relations of Calderon. Yet identity or family likeness in language unquestionably proves that all nations included in it must once have been united by a social tie. We may, therefore, conclude that before the separation of their language the whole of the Australians, the South Africans, the Aryan nations, and the Americans possessed a common home, from whence they spread by migration. But if the New World could be gradually peopled from any one starting-point, we can easily imagine that time alone was required for all continents to become peopled from a single point.

We have as yet merely shown that our race, starting from a common habitat, may gradually have ranged over all continents and peopled them. But what is possible may not be probable, and still less inevitable. Fortunately, geology and our knowledge of the distribution of animals enable us to set narrow limits to the district within which we may expect to find the original home of the human race. Geology teaches us that the layers of the earth's crust are ranged in chronological sequence, so that where abnormal disturbances have not occurred, the most recent lies at the top, the most ancient at the bottom. If we now descend from the highest layer, the forms of creation change; with imperceptible transitions they become more and more alien to those of the present time. That which is modern we find above, that which is primitive below, for the history of creations resembles the history of fashions. For we at once observe that, as a rule, the more highly integrated creatures are the newer, the less perfectly integrated, the older. But the zoological forms have not changed everywhere with equal celerity. They have been transformed most rapidly in the Old World, less quickly in North America; they have remained somewhat behindhand in South America, and are most primitive in Australia. Small and remote localities laid aside their organic forms more slowly, or in some cases preserved them altogether.

The fauna of Australia preserves the characters of the age in which forms such as the kangaroo were still usual, while at home we now find marsupials only as fossils of the tertiary period; with the exception of some few smaller species, they have entirely vanished from the face of the earth in the New World. Australia is destitute of all kinds of monkeys, beasts of prey, ungulates and

edentata. Of its 132 mammalian species, 102 are marsupials, and the remainder consists of rodents, bats, and strange monotremes. It is true man has made his way into this fauna, and with him—for like associates with like—a carnivorous animal, the dingo or wild dog of Australia. But that they set foot in this zoological province as strangers² is held by all who have profited by the historical lessons afforded by a study of the distribution of animals.

The same applies to South America, which contains a peculiar and completely distinct mammalian kingdom of which the edentata are considered the representatives. All the species, the majority of the genera, and even of the families, are different from those of the Old World. Our argument gains much weight from the observations made by Andreas Wagner, that the existing mammals of Australia and South America approximate much more nearly than do ours to the fossil forms of the tertiary period;³ so that in both these districts the characters have changed much more slowly. South America was however an island within a recent zoological period, before the isthmus of Panama united the two continents. This district therefore, which has remained so primitive, is not a province of which the mammalia are of such a character as to point to its being a possible birthplace of the most modern of all creatures.

It is more reasonable to suppose that the cradle of the human race was in North America. The animal and vegetable world in North America is to some extent similar and is closely analogous to that of Asia and Europe. The physiognomy of nature changes completely only in Central America, nearly, if not exactly, at the southern limit of the true pines, of which, as is well known, South America is destitute.

It is however precisely in the second highest order of mammalia that America has remained more primitive. The falsely so-called *Quadrumana* of America are so different from ours, that they constitute a separate family, and might in a zoological system be termed the apes of the New World, if they were geographically

² This is admitted even by Agassiz in the *Essay on Classification*, p. 60. London, 1849.

³ *Abhandlungen der mathem. physik. Classe der K. bayr. Akademie der Wissenschaften*, vol. iv. pp. 1, 18. Munich, 1846.

classified. The American family differs in dentition, in the lateral position of the nostrils; in the absence of ischial callosities and cheek-pouches; nor is any tailless monkey to be found in the whole of America. It is where the highest animals appear—the chimpanzee, the gorilla, and the orang—that we must also look for man.

All these inferences are independent of the fate of the Darwinian dogma; they stand or fall with the doctrine of a single centre of creation for the species of the animal and vegetable kingdom. Even this doctrine by itself meets with stubborn opposition because it is not yet capable of explaining all the facts. Nevertheless, the greatest difficulty, namely, the occurrence of fifty northern species of plants in Terra del Fuego, has been overcome by the acuteness and learning of a German botanist.⁴ In the chapter which treats of the primitive inhabitants of America, we shall endeavour to prove their derivation from Northern Asia. We will only observe in anticipation, that the more rude, and hence the more frugal and hardy, a people is, the more readily does it change its abode, so that, in their lowest stages of development, all families of people were capable of accomplishing the migrations which we have ascribed to them. The difficulties generally exist only in the imagination of the spoilt children of civilization.

In Central Australia, where European explorers were exhausted by starvation, hordes of black men roam about, free of care; and if we are startled by the idea that, thousands of years ago, Asiatic tribes are supposed to have crossed Behring's Straits to people America, we quite forget that even at the present day, a naked nation of fishermen still exists in Terra del Fuego, where the glaciers stretch down to the sea, and even into it.

We have already demonstrated that the first appearance of man must have been on a continent; we proved from migrations which have actually taken place, that the dispersion of our race from a single starting-point over the whole world might be only a question of time; we have ascertained from the geographical distribution of animals, that neither Australia nor South America, nor even North America, was a fitting position for the cradle of humanity; con-

⁴ Grisebach, *Vegetation der Erde*, vol. i. p. 96.

sequently, it is in the Old World that we must look for it. Then, again, we may confidently set aside the lowlands of Siberia, for at a time geologically recent it was still covered by the sea. This objection would not exist with regard to Europe; but if Europe had been the starting-point, we should assuredly have found so-called fossil men among us, just as two very highly organized tertiary apes have been discovered, one in Greece, the other in Switzerland.

If we give up Europe also, it is only in Southern Asia or in Africa that we have any prospect of finding the oldest vestiges of our race. Of these regions, British India has already undergone the most thorough geological research, and as many precursory types of the present mammals have already been found, the prospects of localizing our primordial parents in that district are diminished.

It is possible, however, that the first appearance of man may have taken place neither in Southern Asia nor in Africa, but in the Indian Ocean itself. There at one time existed a great continent to which belonged Madagascar and perhaps portions of Eastern Africa, the Maledives and Lacadives, and also the island of Ceylon, which was never attached to India, perhaps even the island of Celebes in the far East, which possesses a perplexing fauna with semi-African features. This continent, which would correspond with the Indian Ethiopia of Claudius Ptolemæus, has been named Lemuria by the English zoologist, Sclater, because it would include the entire range of the lemurs. Such a continent is required by anthropology, for we can then conceive that the inferior populations of Australia and India, the Papuans of the East Indian islands, and lastly, the negroes, would thus be enabled to reach their present abode by dry land. Such a region would be also climatically suitable, for it lies in the zone in which we now find the anthropomorphous apes.

The selection of this locality is, moreover, far more orthodox than it might at the first glance appear, for we here find ourselves in the neighbourhood of the four enigmatic rivers of the scriptural Eden—in the vicinity of the Nile, the Euphrates, the Tigris, and the Indus. By the gradual submergence of Lemuria, the expulsion from Paradise would also be inexorably accomplished.

To this may be added that ecclesiastical writers, such as Lactantius,⁵ the Venerable Bede,⁶ Hrabanus Maurus,⁷ Kosmos Indicopleustes,⁸ and also the anonymous geographer of Ravenna,⁹ placed the scriptural Paradise in South-eastern Asia, and some explicitly on a detached continent, and that the ingenious maps of the Middle Ages exhibit the first parental pair on a land surrounded by sea, lying beyond India. This explains how Columbus after the discovery of South America, taking it for an insular continent lying south-east of the mouth of the Ganges, wrote home to Spain, "There are here great indications suggesting the proximity of the earthly Paradise, for not only does it correspond in mathematical position with the opinions of the holy and learned theologians, but all other signs concur to make it probable."¹⁰

This suggestion is, however, a mere hypothesis which need not disquiet those who like to imagine Paradise in the land of the lotus blossom, or who turn to the papyrus-fringed shores of the newly discovered lakes of the Upper Nile, or perchance prefer to believe it still nearer to the eastern lands of the scriptures. The value of the hypothesis is, that it challenges a geological investigation of Madagascar, Ceylon, and the island of Rodrigue, as well as deep-sea soundings in the Indian Ocean, to ascertain whether vestiges exist of the higher points of the vanished Lemuria. All that we require is the vindication of a single starting-point for all human *races*, in opposition to the anthropological school of the Americans which has recently constituted above a hundred human *species*, not *races*, of men; as many species, that is, as it is possible to find natural types, and these it is imagined were at once sown broadcast by the Creator, in numbers as vast as swarms of bees, in the localities which they now inhabit. An hypothesis such as this does not explain why the islands were left fallow at this general seed-time, nor why the several quarters of the world admit of being characterized as provinces by means of their fauna and flora. Any explanation of the present by the past

⁵ Div. Instit. ii. 13.

⁷ De Universo, xii. 3.

⁹ Geogr. lib. i. cap. 6.

¹⁰ Navarréte, Coleccion de los viages y descubrimientos, vol. i. p. 259. Madrid, 1825.

⁶ De Mundi constit. p. 266.

⁸ Ed. Montfaucon, tom. ii. p. 188.

is thus abandoned, although it lies deeply rooted in human nature not to rest satisfied with observed facts until they have been reconciled with some law of necessity.

IV.—THE ANTIQUITY OF THE HUMAN RACE.

THOSE who pronounce in favour of the development of the different races from a single human species which, making its first appearance within a limited region, gradually spread over the whole earth, must admit that events such as these demand periods of vast duration, and on them falls the burden of proof that vestiges of our species may actually be traced up to remote pre-historic times. These objections would be removed by the discovery made by the Abbé Bourgeois, who extracted stone knives and axes from strata of unquestionably miocene date, in the neighbourhood of Tenay (Loir et Cher), which would testify that France was inhabited as early as the middle of the tertiary period. But at the Archæological Congress at Brussels, in 1872, the best judges of such articles decided against the artificial origin of these so-called human relics of the miocene period. On the other hand, the highest probability of a human origin must be attributed to the flint implements which were first discovered by Boucher de la Perthes, in 1847, at Menchecourt, in the valley of the Somme, between Abbeville and Amiens, intermingled in the chalky clay with remains of the mammoth, the woolly rhinoceros, an extinct species of horse, the European hippopotamus, and other animals of the diluvial period; a discovery which has attracted to the site the best geologists of the present time. Human remains have as yet been sought in vain, for the jaw-bone discovered near Moulin Quignon, is supposed to have been inserted for purposes of fraud. The absence of remains of human bones must not however excite too much distrust, for after the draining of the lake of Haarlem, which was once a gulf, scanty fragments of ships but no human bones were found, although vessels had been wrecked and naval engagements fought on it. According to Prestwich's ingenious conjecture, it is conceivable that in the glacial period, at the end of the tertiary age, the

inhabitants of Picardy, like the Eskimo of the present day, broke open the ice of the Somme and harpooned the fish with their missiles through these openings, which they kept free from ice. The stone flakes which in an unsuccessful cast fell into the bed of the river, and were then enveloped in the diluvial deposit, are those which now decorate museums and rejoice the hearts of archæologists. Among these treasures there really are some so regular in outline and so accurately pointed that there can be no question of their artificial origin. But it would be important to ascertain whether they have been selected from among hundreds or thousands of similar but ruder stones in the same neighbourhood. In countries where masses of flint are found on the surface, and where they are readily broken by a sharp blow, they frequently splinter into chips and flakes, from which a very fair collection of stone implements might be put together, for the trouble of picking them up. Among the stone implements which Boucher de la Perthes had placed in the museum of St Germain, Virchow remarked many objects quite familiar to him in his home in Pomerania as sports of nature.¹¹

Fortunately, there is a profusion of unimpeachable evidence which confirms the testimony of these flint implements of the Somme valley. As early as 1833-1840 deposits of human remains were discovered by Dr. Schmerling, in Belgian caves, mingled with bones of diluvial mammals, but they were for a long time disregarded in deference to Cuvier, who had denied that man had appeared on the scene before the animals of the present age. These discoveries were much misinterpreted, and it was assumed that the human bones had been transported by beasts of prey, or washed down into the caves by streams, and deposited among the diluvial remains. But since archæologists have been willing to recognize new truths, discoveries of similar bone-caves in other countries rapidly succeeded one another. Occasionally the remains of the diluvial denizens of the earth were extracted

¹¹ Comp. Virchow in the *Zeitschr. für Ethnologie*, p. 51 (1871), in reference to Pomerania. His statements could be supplemented by Wetzstein in regard to the southern parts of Syria where in the tract of 'Ardh e'-Samân, three days' journey in length, the ground is covered with splinters of flint stone.

from beneath a flooring of calcareous stalactite, and flint implements of certainly artificial origin from beneath a stratum containing bones of prehistoric animals. The examination of one of these caves at Brixham, by a geologist as trustworthy as Dr. Falconer, convinced the specialists of Great Britain as early as 1858, that man was a contemporary of the mammoth, the woolly rhinoceros, the cave-bear, the cave-hyæna, the cave-lion, and therefore of the mammalia of the geological period antecedent to our own.

With the animals just mentioned was associated the reindeer, which, as is well known, belongs not to the extinct, but only to the expelled species. Formerly it roamed over Western France, where its vestiges are now abundant in the valley of the Vézère. In the district of Périgord, in the department of Dordogne, through which the railway between Orleans and Agen passes, six caves have been found. They contain among their detritus remains of reindeer's antlers artistically worked, as well as stone implements. In one of these old hiding-places near Cro-Magnon, the skulls and skeletons of two men and two women were found beside the remains of the cave-tiger (*Felis spelea*), of a colossal bear, of the ure-ox, and also of animals belonging to the far north, such as the jisel (*Spermophilus erythrogeus*) and the ibex. These cave-men of France maintained themselves on the produce of the chase, the horse especially being pursued as game. As the bones of the animals exhibit no traces of fire, the meat must have been either eaten raw, or seethed in water-tight plaited baskets, as is still the custom of certain North Americans, who, having no earthen vessels, heat their water in wooden vessels by dropping in heated stones. Indeed, pebbles which suggest a custom of this sort are found among the ash heaps in the cave of Cro-Magnon.

The ancient inhabitants of the Dordogne already attempted to portray objects of the outer world, such as fish, reindeer, or men, in carvings on horn and the ivory of mammoth's teeth, with a distinctness and animation which compels recognition.¹² Among

¹² Sir John Lubbock, in his *Prehistoric Times*, ed. 2, 1869, has published the portrait of a mammoth scratched on bone, found in the cave of la Madeleine in Périgord. Critical observers, however, are of opinion that archæological imagination has filled in the outlines of this piece of animal portraiture. Our

the horn implements, mostly awls and arrow-heads with or without barbs, our attention is attracted by the occurrence of needles, with which, doubtless, the inhabitants of the caves sewed together the hides of animals.

A soft red ochre which occurs amongst the remains, enables us to infer that they painted their skin. Their love of finery is also betrayed by the discovery of necklaces of animals' teeth and shells. The latter, moreover, were derived from the far-distant shores of the Atlantic, and could, therefore, have come into their possession only by means of barter; the same must have been the case with the rock crystals, which are found, but which do not occur naturally, within a large radius of the deposits in which they have been found. Even the horns of the Saiga antelope, of which the nearest range must have been in Poland, were among the possessions of these old hunters, and serve as records that even at that time valued merchandize was distributed over great distances by means of commerce. Judging from the remains of bones, the hunters of the Dordogne were not, like the Belgian cave-dwellers, a small race of men, but of large size and powerful structure. The skulls were of a long or dolichocephalic form, and the bones of the face, notwithstanding a slight tendency to prognathism, surprise us by the beauty of their oval outlines. The capacity of the brain-case of a man (1590 cubic centimetres), and a woman (1450 cubic centimetres),¹³ would also indicate high mental endowments, if any such inference were reliable.

We may here notice the fragment of a skull found in August, 1856, in a cave in the Neanderthal, not far from Düsseldorf, and which was at first regarded, on account of its huge brow ridges and its flat brain-case, as a testimony to the rise of our race from the animal kingdom. It soon appeared, however, that its proportions were tolerably near those of average Europeans of these

text refers to a work which we believe to be still unfinished, of Edward Lartet and Henry Christy, *Reliquiae Aquitaniae*. London, 1865-69. An extract from this work, with some of the original woodcuts, was published by Alex. Ecker, in the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. iv. p. 109. Brunswick, 1870.

¹³ A. Ecker in the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. i. p. 116. The skull of the man could actually be measured, the capacity of the woman's could only be estimated, on account of injuries received.

days. In its present condition, this brain-case encloses a space of 63 cubic inches (zollen), which, according to an estimate made by Schaafhausen, would rise to 75 cubic inches if it had remained uninjured.¹⁴ Charles Darwin was thus able to describe the Neanderthal skull as "very well developed and capacious."¹⁵ European skulls, however, vary from 55 to 112 cubic inches. Virchow ultimately stated before the Anthropological Society of Berlin, April 27th, 1872, that this skull belonged to an old man afflicted with the rickets, that it was to be rejected as a racial type, and that its dimensions also were very moderate, and that in regard to the masticatory muscles it does not show signs of brute-like coarseness, as in Eskimo and Australians.¹⁶ The value of this discovery is thus reduced to very common-place dimensions.

Germany also possesses remains of cave-dwellers, such as those examined since the year 1871, in Hohlefels near Schelklingen, not far from Blaubeuren. The fauna of the valley of the Blau included not only mammoths and elephants, but also a majestic tiger (*Felis spelæa*) three extinct species of bears (*Ursus spelæus*, *U. priscus*, and *U. tarandi*), and the reindeer, the antlers of which were made into instruments. Fragments of earthenware vessels, which from their shallow form must have served for roasting and broiling,¹⁷ also occur among these relics of a past civilization.

All the discoveries hitherto made merely enable us to put back the antiquity of our race as far as the times of the extinct cave fauna. On the other hand, the existence of the reindeer in central France does not justify us in presupposing any important alterations of climate, for even those who hesitate to recognize the *Cervus tarandus* in Cæsar's description¹⁸ of the Rhine, must yet admit that the reindeer is not strictly confined to polar regions, for the caribu, its representative in America, was found in lat. 43°, that is, on the parallel of Toulon, at the time of the first colonization of the eastern coasts of the United States, but it was speedily

¹⁴ Fuhlrott, *Der fossile Mensch aus dem Neanderthale*, p. 69. Duisburg, 1865.

¹⁵ *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 146.

¹⁶ *Verhandlungen der Gesellschaft für Anthropologie*, pp. 157-161. 1872.

¹⁷ See Oscar Fraas, *Über die ausgrabungen im Hohlefels in the Würtemberg. naturw. Jahreshften*, § i. p. 25. 1872.

¹⁸ *De Bello Gall.* vi. 21 and 26.

scared away to the far north by the presence of Europeans. Bones of the sheep and goat have, moreover, been found with those of the reindeer, in a Belgian cave, so that the cave-men who dwelt there must have been peaceable shepherds.¹⁹ The disappearance from Europe of the cave fauna, consisting in part of noxious beasts of prey, in part of huge pachyderms, which latter are always represented locally by a scanty number of individuals only, might have been accomplished in a comparatively short time, as soon as our part of the world became more densely colonized, and the inhabitants combined more efficacious weapons with greater skill in hunting. The rapid disappearance of many species of animals within the last few centuries, such as the wingless auk in northern Europe, the sea-cow (manatee) in Behring's Straits, the dodo in the Mauritius, the Moa species in New Zealand, greatly modifies our notions of the time necessary for the disappearance of the diluvial species.

Fortunately, however, we possess tokens that the Suabian district was inhabited at a time when mighty glaciers filled up the valley of the Rhine and the Lake of Constance. Near the old Abbey of Schussenried, in some earthworks at the source of the Schuss—a small stream which falls into the Lake of Constance, in the neighbourhood of Langenargen—a lower stratum was uncovered in the summer of 1866, in which carved antlers of reindeer, bodkins with eyes, a smooth-scraped needle, fish-hooks, flints in the shape of lancets and saw-blades, lumps of red material for skin-painting, ashes, and remains of charcoal were found intermingled.²⁰ Even if we attach less weight to the fact that these relics of civilization were enclosed between two layers of glacier mud, their antiquity is marked by the fact that with the human implements were found bones of a species of polar fox, agreeing in structure with one which now inhabits the neighbourhood of Nain in Labrador as well as of a species of glutton (*Gulo borealis*), and of two species of moss, of which one (*Hypnum sarmentosum*) now exists only in Lapland, in Norway on the limits of perpetual snow, and on the highest Sudetic mountains and the Tyrol, and

¹⁹ O. Fraas im Archiv für Anthropologie, vol. v. p. 480. Brunswick, 1872.

²⁰ Ibid, vol. iii. pp. 38, 39, 42, 44.

the other (*Hypnum fluitans*, var. *tenuissima*) in marshy Alpine meadows and in Arctic America.²¹ These are facts which firmly convince every one versed in geology that man inhabited Suabia as early as the glacial period. The prevalence of glaciers in this district at an earlier period must not, however, be explained by the solar system having passed through colder regions of the heavens, less warmed by stellar light, nor yet by the precession of the equinoxes during a period of increased eccentricity of the earth's orbit, for in both cases the glacial period would have extended equally over every portion of the northern hemisphere, whereas its traces are very faint in the Caucasus, and totally wanting in the Altai.²² But the prevalence of glaciers in Switzerland and the neighbouring countries may be easily explained by a different distribution of land and water in Europe. Nevertheless, as changes in the outlines of continents require periods of extremely long duration, the presence of man in the glacial period of Suabia is quite sufficient to bespeak a high antiquity for the first appearance of our race.

Far more recent are the memorials which former inhabitants of the Baltic coast have piled up like embankments on the shores of Jutland and the Danish islands, of the shells of edible mussels; archæologists have bestowed on these the suitable name of kitchen-middens. Among this refuse of food were found stone implements, with roughly chipped or occasionally smooth surfaces, fragments of earthen vessels, the remains of dogs as domestic animals, and even a spindle, but no traces of extinct animals of the diluvial period. Hence, at the time of their accumulations, these eaters of shell-fish either did not yet practise, or were just beginning to exercise, the art of polishing flint. A better idea of the age of these shell heaps is suggested by the circumstance that Jutland and the Danish islands were at that time covered with pine forests. These fir-trees had disappeared by the time that the

²¹ O. Frass, Die neuesten Erfunde an der Schussenquelle, Wurtemb. naturwissensch. Jahreshfte, § i. pp. 7-24. 1867. In the Archiv für Anthropologie, vol. ii. p. 33, Fraas cites among the discoveries a third moss (*Hypnum aduncum*, var. *Greenlandica Hedw.*), now found only in the northern regions.

²² B. v. Cotta, Der Altai, p. 65. Leipzig, 1871.

inhabitants had supplied themselves with bronze implements, and oaks took their place. But, since the bronze period, the oak forests have gradually been supplanted by the beech, which now occupies that district almost exclusively. The kitchen-middens, however, contain the bones of the black cock, which feeds on the sprouts of the fir-tree, and presupposes the presence of conifers. Since the time of the mussel-eating inhabitants of these shores, this region has therefore twice changed its vegetation, a process which assuredly must each time have required thousands of years.²³ This is also confirmed by the occurrence of oyster-shells in the Danish kitchen-middens, for the oyster no longer thrives in the Baltic, on account of the small proportion of salt contained in its waters. Consequently, currents from the North Sea must then have reached the Danish islands by channels much wider than the Sound, as it now exists.

Among the most recent remains of prehistoric ages are the villages on the Alpine lakes, which were built over the water on platforms of piles as was Venice originally, and as is the case even now with the dwellings of the natives of the Gulf of Maracaibo with the town of Brunai in Borneo, and the huts of the Papuans on the northern coast of New Guinea.²⁴ The custom of building huts on platforms erected in the water, must have continued through long periods; for in the older lake dwellings there are stone blades polished, but not pierced or, in other words, prepared for the reception of a handle; in the more modern villages, on the contrary, the pointed stones are pierced; and in the most recent, bronze implements already appear amongst the stone. Although the greater number of lake dwellings were destroyed by fire, it is not necessary to suppose that this was always caused by hostile invasions, for we shall presently find

²³ Sir Charles Lyell, *Antiquity of Man*, pp. 9-17. London, 1863.

²⁴ The Gulf of Maracaibo was called the Gulf of Venice by its first discoverers, because an Indian lake village at the entrance had previously received the name of Venezuela (See Peschel, *Zeitalter der Entdeckungen*, p. 313). Even at the present day dwellings are built on piles in the middle of the Gulf of Maracaibo (Ramon Paez, *Wild Scenes in South America*, p. 392). On the Papuan lake dwellings, see Wallace, *Malay Archipelago*, vol. ii. p. 282; and on Brunai, see Spenser St. John, *Life in the Far East*, vol. i. p. 39. London, 1862.

racés of men who have been induced by Shamanistic superstition,²⁵ to set fire to their own abodes when they are about to migrate. There is nothing at present to hinder us from considering the lake dwellers of Switzerland to have been an Aryan people. Thus, the skull of a child about thirteen years of age, found near Meilen, and the skull of the bronze period discovered at Auvernier, both belong to the so-called Sion type, of which the Celtic Helvetian is the representative.²⁶ The Swiss lake dwellers practised husbandry and ate bread, planted fruit-trees, and dried apples. Cattle, sheep, and goats inhabited the lake buildings in company with their owners; provision must therefore have been made for their forage in the winter-time; even cats and dogs had already been domesticated as companions. The pig alone remained in a wild condition, at least at the time of the oldest settlements; the ure-ox, the bison, and the elk were still, though perhaps rarely, among the booty of the chase. Except these animals, which have been extirpated within historic times, the fauna has suffered no losses; and in the vegetable kingdom the change is limited to the disappearance of one species of conifer and two aquatic plants, which have disappeared from the plains.²⁷ These lake buildings are in some cases buried beneath layers of peat, in others removed inland from the shore by the silting up of the lakes; or the stone implements were buried beneath the detritus of torrents, as in the delta of the Tinière, near Villeneuve, on the Lake of Geneva. From the size and extent of these new formations, an attempt has been made to refer these relics to a period some five to seven thousand years ago. But all the ingenuity of investigators was baffled by the unfortunate circumstance that neither the growth of peat nor the deposition of mountain detritus proceeds with the same regularity as the sand in an hour-glass, but in such formations, periods of repose alternate with periods of activity. At present, therefore, no fact necessitates our regarding any of these remains of lake dwellings as older than the pyramids of the Nile, nor would it

²⁵ This is Peschel's term for all priestcraft.

²⁶ His u. Rüttimeyer, *Crania Helvetica*, pp. 36, 37.

²⁷ Rüttimeyer, *Die Fauna der Pfahlbauten in der Schweiz*, pp. 8, 228, and 229. Basle, 1861.

even be possible to disprove an assertion that the remnants of the stone age in Switzerland belong to a period between one and two thousand years before Christ.

The attempt to find a reliable date for the very ancient evidence we have of man's presence in Egypt has never met with complete success.

In 1851-54, no less than ninety-six shafts in four rows, at intervals of eight English miles, were sunk at right angles to the Nile, by an excellent engineer, Hekekyan Bey, under the superintendence of Leonard Horner,²⁸ an extremely cautious geologist. The greater number of these borings furnished remains of domestic animals, fragments of bricks, and pottery at various depths. These relics did not always afford a satisfactory date of their antiquity, for the strata which were pierced were often broken by layers of sand, due to the action of the desert wind. In the immediate vicinity of the statue of Rameses II. at Memphis, from beneath strata of pure Nilitic mud, over which the desert sand had not been wafted, a red baked potsherd was extracted from a depth of thirty-nine feet. Since the statue of Rameses II. was erected, that is, since about 1361 B.C., a Nilitic stratum of nine feet four inches has accumulated round it, without reckoning a stratum of sand eight inches in depth; the rate of alluvial formation in this place has therefore been three and a half inches in the century since 1361 B.C. Hence if this potsherd has been covered by Nile mud at the same rate, earthen vessels must have been baked on the Nile 11,646 years before the commencement of our era. Many groundless objections have been raised against this calculation. Some conjectured that in old times the Nile flowed beneath the statue of Rameses, others, forgetting that we were not dealing with a single fragment but merely with the one lying deepest among countless others, that this potsherd was extracted from an ancient well or tank. Again, it is urged that at any given point sediments of great depth may be accumulated in a short time by the influence of water, but it is entirely overlooked that this would have affected the whole district occupied by the four rows of shafts, so that as

²⁸ Leonard Horner in *Philosophical Transactions*, vol. cxlviii. pp. 74-75. London, 1859.

the base of the statue of Rameses stands 78' 3" above the sea level,²⁹ the potsherds were therefore found at a positive elevation of only 39' 3". Even the consideration suggested by Sir Charles Lyell that, according to Herodotus, the old Egyptians protected their temples and monuments from the inundations of the Nile by means of embankments,³⁰ does not seem unanswerable, for if these bulwarks were once broken down, the deposits on the depressed surface would increase all the more rapidly, and the stream might in a few years make amends for what, during thousands of years, it had been prevented from accomplishing. But it may be justly objected against the above calculation that the thickness of the Nile mud since 1361 B.C. cannot serve as a reliable standard, as the plains through which the river flows have by no means an even surface. Horner himself observes that when the Nile reaches the 24-ell mark at Pegel on the Island of Rhoda, it varies in depth from 20' to less than an inch, so great are the inequalities of the ground.³¹ Hence it follows that the mud strata must increase far more rapidly in the depressions than on the elevated spots, and that if the Egyptians, as may be conjectured, erected their stone Rameses on an eminence in close proximity to a depression, the later increment of Nile mud can have raised the surface but slowly. Few, in defiance of this, will venture to dispute that this potsherd from a depth of thirty-nine feet must be at least 4000 years older than the monument of Rameses the Great.

²⁹ Horner, *Phil. Trans.*, vol. cxliii. p. 56.

³⁰ Sir Charles Lyell, *Antiquity of Man*, p. 38.

³¹ Horner in *Philos. Trans.*, vol. cxlviii. p. 56.

THE PHYSICAL CHARACTERS OF THE RACES
• OF MANKIND. •

THE PHYSICAL CHARACTERS OF THE RACES OF MANKIND.

I.—THE PROPORTIONS OF THE SKULL.

It is universally admitted that domestic animals by careful selection transmit all parental peculiarities to their offspring. In the same manner a human tribe, scanty in number, which in old times separated itself from the rest of mankind by migration, remaining for thousands of years in a remote region of the world, was, as it were, constrained by circumstances to preserve the purity of its breed, thus necessarily developing the family features of the first emigrants into racial characteristics. But the purity of the acquired type was preserved only as long as the seclusion lasted. As the single tribes and families before and even after their adoption of agriculture were constantly in a state of migration, one variety mingling with the other, some of the distinctive characters were necessarily obliterated by intercrossing; for the infertility of crosses between human varieties cannot be proved. At most therefore we must hope to meet with even moderately well-defined races only in those cases in which, either by the remoteness of their abode, or the precepts of caste, a separation from other varieties has been maintained during long periods; everywhere else they will merge into one another. It may be shown that no one physical characteristic belongs exclusively to any single race, but that each may be found in a transitional

state in other races. Hence ethnological description must deal with many distinctive marks, and must not despise any, however much they may vary in degree. In seeking characteristics of the human frame, such as serve to mark difference of race, we instinctively look in the first place to the shape of the head, the seat of our highest functions. The industry and ingenuity of modern anatomists have therefore developed a new branch of science devoted to the bones of the skull. A death's head, as it is vulgarly called, is a skilfully arranged case, narrower and smaller in the head of a child, more capacious in adults. It must therefore expand until a certain age, and cease to grow only in mature years. The separate bones of the brain-case, where their edges come in contact, are usually joined only by sutures with serrated notches, so that no insuperable impediment opposes the continued growth. A premature consolidation of the cranial bones must, on the contrary, prevent the full development of the brain; hence, if an obliteration of the sutures is observed in youthful crania, these heads are abortive formations. Now, as science is bound to compare only normal phenomena, it follows that we must exclude the measurements of all skulls of which the sutures are prematurely effaced or, what amounts to the same, become anchylosed. One of the plates of the skull, *i.e.*, the frontal bone, consists originally of two halves, a right and a left, which in apes become completely anchylosed after birth, in children in the second year. In many cases, however, they never close, and as in that case the frontal suture, being a prolongation of the sagittal suture, bisects the coronal suture at right angles, the course of the sutures forms a cross, whence skulls in which the frontal suture is open are termed in German, *Kreuz-köpfe*. These also, as the representatives of a peculiar form to be compared only with each other, must be excluded from our list of measurements. The disjunction of the frontal suture in no way injures the normal functions of the brain; rather, as it admits of its growth forwards to a later age, the skulls with open frontal sutures combine greater width of brow with greater capacity, so that it has even been conjectured that the average efficiency of man's intellectual power would be raised if the permanent disjunction of this suture were to become the prevailing

character of the normal cranium. In connection with the frequency of cross-heads, Hermann Welcker has furnished us with the following statistics :—

Nationalities.	Skulls		Proportion of Cross-heads to ordinary Skulls.
	With an open Frontal Suture.	Without an open Frontal Suture.	
Germans of Halle ...	70	497	1 : 7'1
Inhabitants of Petersburg ...	70	1023	1 : 14'6
Other Caucasians ...	14	129	1 : 9'2
Mongols	7	96	1 : 13'7
Malays	5	87	1 : 17'4
Negroes	1	52	1 : 52
Americans	1	53	1 : 53

Other observers are of opinion that skulls belonging to the diluvial period more rarely exhibit this favourable character.¹ But if the forehead remains open, the sagittal suture generally closes later, and we are to a certain extent justified in supposing that an endeavour on the part of the brain to find room may be the cause of this phenomenon,² yet we ought not to forget that frontal bones with open sutures also occur occasionally in idiots.³ But, on the other hand, the full development of the brain may be impeded by the premature ankylosis of the bones if it proceeds in such a manner as to overcome the counter-pressure.⁴ In the less gifted races the anterior, in the more highly gifted the posterior sutures are said to be earliest obliterated.⁵ In the skulls of negroes, Pruner Bey thought he had perceived a premature closure of the frontal suture, followed by the ankylosis of the sagittal and of the middle portion of the coronal sutures, while the lambdoidal suture at the summit remained open the longest. Occasionally even the basiosphenoidal suture does not completely unite, while even in adults the incisive suture

Canestrini. See Darwin's *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 125.

Hermann Welcker, *Wachsthum und Bau des menschlichen Schädels*, pp. 97-102. Leipsic, 1862.

Virchow, *Entwicklung des Schädelgrundes*, p. 87. Berlin, 1857.

Virchow, *l.c.* p. 13.

Gratiolet. See Quatrefages, *Rapport*, p. 302.

may still be distinguished.⁶ But the value of such remarks can be established only by the statistical average of a large number of observations, and these can only be obtained by long-continued accumulation. For the present the only result is that skulls with prematurely or abnormally closed sutures must be excluded from the measurements and not compared with the others.

The sexual distinctions of crania are yet more perplexing. Welcker believed that in German skulls of which the sex was known, the female cranium was intermediate between the infantine and the male in all points susceptible of measurement. Our anatomists have therefore endeavoured to discover indications by which the sex of the skull may be determined. Craniological statistics have already shown that in highly civilized nations all secondary sexual distinctions are far more strongly developed than in those families of mankind which have remained in a state of barbarism. In the former the male brain-case is perceptibly more capacious than the female. On the other hand, it remains undecided whether the female cranium is narrower than the male. While Welcker found the cranium of women to be in nearly all races more dolichocephalous than those of men, Weisbach on the other hand obtained an average of 82.5 in Austrian women, and perceives a slight tendency to brachycephalism.⁷ On the other hand the inferior height of the cranium in the female sex has been pointed out by Alexander Ecker, who also attempts to recognize the female skull by the somewhat sudden transition from the flat crown to the vertical line of the forehead.⁸ Greater delicacy in the osseous prominences, diminished length of face combined with the greater size of the orbicular cavities, and inferior width of the lower jaw, are likewise supposed to distinguish the female cranium. Nevertheless, we are far from being able to determine with certainty the sex of an unknown skull. Several years ago, the English craniologist, Barnard Davis, wrote to A. Ecker that he had been compelled, by the presence of the received sexual characters to pronounce a certain Bengalese skull to

⁶ Pruner Bey, *Mémoire sur les Nègres*, pp. 328, 329. 1861

⁷ *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. iii. p. 61. Brunswick, 1868.

⁸ *Ibid.*, vol. i. p. 85. 1866.

be that of a man, and yet he knew positively that it belonged to a woman.⁹ The sex of skulls taken from old tombs cannot therefore be determined with certainty by their structure. Hence Virchow says, in his work on the ancient northern skulls at Copenhagen, "I do not in all cases feel competent to distinguish, definitely, between male and female crania, and I have therefore determined not to enter into an inquiry of this sort, that I may avoid arbitrary and doubtful divisions."¹⁰ His and Rüttemeyer in the same spirit observe, "We have not made a division of crania according to sex. Sexual distinctions based on mere appearance are too apt to lead to gratuitous assertions to be in any way trustworthy." Barnard Davis also states with respect to the catalogue of his craniological collection,¹¹ "The sex was determined by the appearance, and follows no infallible rules; so that mistakes may easily have occurred."¹² Strict science, however, still demands a classification of skulls according to sex, in which the classes shall be no more comparable with one another than are two completely different species. Future collectors should therefore make every exertion to ascertain the sex of each skull at the site of its discovery. If ancient skulls, of which the sex is undecided, are thrown together, it may occur that two types or intermediate forms representing not two nationalities, but merely the sexes of a single nationality, may be based on the measurements. There is, moreover, a danger that if we accept the average of the sum of both sexes as types of the race, the average differences will be much smaller in amount than if men alone were compared with men.

The proportions of the human skull have recently been determined even to the minutest details, so that the number of dimensions measured in a single skull has increased to 139.¹³ When we note this diligence and zeal, we may still hope that some acute observer may sooner or later succeed in detecting in some

⁹ Archiv für Anthropologie, vol. ii. p. 25. 1867.

¹⁰ Ibid. vol. iv. p. 61.

¹¹ Crania Helvetica, p. 8. Basle, 1864.

¹² Thesaurus Craniorum, p. 15. London, 1867.

¹³ See the three tables for twenty skulls of gipsies supplied by Isidor Kopernicki to the Archiv für Anthropologie, vol. v. p. 320.

apparently unimportant proportional relations a key to the solution of this difficulty. Perhaps it may yet be discovered by what increase of the individual bones the form of the head is determined,¹⁴ and for this reason the length of the individual sutures should be most carefully registered in all statistics. But the ethnology of our day must dispense with these preliminary labours to future knowledge, and must be content with the distinctions already established.

Unfortunately, there is no universal system of measurement. In England and in France they set to work differently, while in Germany scarcely two craniologists follow the same method. "The object of the ordinary as well as of the scientific observer," says Virchow,¹⁵ "is to detect a definite connection between the shape of the cranium, the conformation of the face, and the structure of the brain."¹⁶ Each will turn his attention to the measurement of those points in which he hopes to recognize this connection. But until such a connection is actually discovered we must content ourselves solely with measurements of the capacity. Retzius was the first who taught us to distinguish long and broad crania (dolichocephalic and brachycephalic) by comparison of diameters of length and breadth, although he did not distinguish accurately between the two forms. Even in obtaining the diameters of the skull, different methods are adopted, for the thickness of the cranial bones is very variable. If we apply a measure to the surface of a vertical section of a skull wall, we shall generally find the thickness of the bone plates to be from two to five millimetres. These variations do not affect the measurements as they would raise the longitudinal as much as the lateral diameters. But in other parts, and especially when we have to look for the longest axis of the skull, the frontal bone parts into a double (an external and an internal) osseous plate, and encloses cavities of considerable size. In the occiput, again, the internal and external layers are forced asunder by spongy capsules, and in the several cases the skull attains a thickness of 20 and 15 millimetres or more. Now, as these internal inflations of the bones

¹⁴ Virchow, *Entwicklung des Schädelgrundes*, p. 81. Berlin, 1857.

¹⁵ *Ibid.* p. 9.

¹⁶ *Ibid.* p. 81#

have assuredly no relation to the functions of the brain, and vary greatly in different members of the same family, and moreover increase with age, in determining the longitudinal diameter it does not seem right to place the points of the compass just over those bony enlargements. Barnard Davis therefore measures from the forehead (glabella) to the most prominent point of the occiput. Welcker, like him, places one point of the compasses on the forehead, but the other about an inch above the point of the occiput.

Both thus avoid the places where the bones of the brain-case are most enlarged. After all, perhaps the most accurate plan, although at first sight it appears the roughest, would be to take the greatest axis in whatever place it may be found, for the development of the frontal sinuses, unimportant as it may otherwise be, certainly conduces to lengthen the cranium, while the amount of this elongation can be found with the aid of compasses. But as every system of measurement is justifiable, and none has hitherto acquired universal acceptance, we must for the present follow those craniologists who have furnished the greatest number of measurements susceptible of mutual comparison; these are Barnard Davis and Hermann Welcker.¹⁷ If we prefer the results gained by the latter, we do so with a reservation. The breadth of the skull is now measured at no fixed anatomical point, but search is made for the point at which the skull is broadest. Welcker, on the contrary, measures the breadth in a plane which, passing through the occipital foramen, divides the cranium into an anterior and a posterior half. Now, as all crania which are not perfectly oval, or, in other words, the great majority of crania, widen behind this plane of section, Welcker's measurements make all skulls appear on an average two per cent. more elongated than they seem to the eye.

The longitudinal diameter is rated as 100, and the lateral diameter is expressed in a percentage of these units. This percentage itself is termed the index of breadth. Completely circular skulls, of which the index of breadth amounts to 100, and even more than 100, occur both in North America and among the Peruvians and the Chibcha of New Granada; they

owe their form, however, to an artificial pressure of the skull, and must, therefore, be excluded from all comparisons. Otherwise complete roundness is most nearly attained by a skull from Tartary, of which 97.7 is the index of breadth; with this Huxley contrasts a head from New Zealand, though it is perhaps of Australian origin, of 62.9 as the narrowest of all known skulls.¹⁸

EXTREME FORMS OF CRANIA ACCORDING TO HUXLEY.

(*Norma verticalis.*)



Fig. 1.—Skull of an Inhabitant of Tartary.

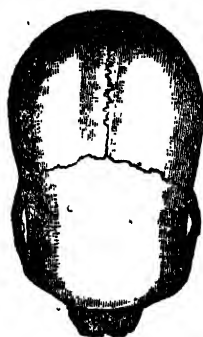


Fig 2.—Skull from New Zealand.

Nevertheless, Barnard Davis possesses a so-called Celtic skull which, with a longitudinal axis of 8.2 inches, a width of only 4.9, has an index of only 58.¹⁹ The indexes of breadth, therefore, fluctuate between 58 and 98, if we take the most extreme cases into consideration. But the average is only between 67 and about 85. In this scale of nineteen notes all the average proportional breadths of human skulls are included.

Welcker believes²⁰ that the index of breadth fluctuates from 74–78 in nations which in point of numbers include one-half of mankind, and these he terms “orthocephali;” they are better named

¹⁸ Huxley, On two Extreme Forms of the Human Skull. *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. i. p. 346. 1866.

¹⁹ *Thesaurus Craniorum*, p. 63.

²⁰ In his craniological communications to the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. i. p. 346.

by Broca "*mesocephali*." If the index sinks below 74, we speak of "*dolichocephali*," narrow or long skulls, and if it reaches 79 or more, of "*brachycephali*," broad or short skulls. Statistics have now proved that a medium form of skull prevails in the majority of inhabitants of a given region, so that the further the grades of deviation are removed from the medium form, the more rapidly does the number of skulls diminish by which these grades are represented. This is exactly what every one will expect who considers specific and racial characters as something variable, who recognizes in animated nature only individuals, and who assumes with Goethe that species exist only in the school-books of systematists. Even the average proportions of the skull vary within the limits of individual races. The dimensions which Welcker has found in the Malay nations, are especially surprising. We will first notice only the index of breadth, and setting aside the highly dolichocephalic skulls (68) of the inhabitants of the Carolinas, because as Micronesians they are not free from suspicion of mixed blood, we find the Maori of New Zealand, with an index of 73, still on the verge of dolichocephalism. Next in the scale of mesocephalism are the skulls of the Marquesas islanders (74), the Tahitians (75), the inhabitants of Chatham Island (76), the Kanakas of the Sandwich archipelago (77). On the large islands between Australia and Asia we find the Dyaks of Borneo with 75, the Balinese with 76, the Amboynese with 77, and skulls from Sumatra with 77, and from Mancassar with 78, given as their index. To these mesocephali must be added, as brachycephali, the Javans and Buginese with 79, the Menadorese with 80, and the Madurese with 82.

Of the nineteen gradations of breadth the skulls of the Malay family occupy no less than nine, from 73 to 82. It cannot be said in this case that the Malay skulls present mongrel forms, for surrounded as they are by dolichocephali, they cannot owe their brachycephalism to intercrossing. But if they had originally been brachycephalic this would have been preëminently displayed in the Dyaks, for they must be regarded as the purest representatives of the old Malay type. The results of measurement thus compel us to acknowledge that the relative proportions of the skull vary considerably within the same race. It is now believed

that all the Polynesians distributed themselves over the South Seas, from the Samoa or Navigators' group, in three directions. These migrations commenced at least 3000 years ago. The Samoans themselves have remained free from any foreign mixture, and the islands to which the emigrants repaired were totally uninhabited. Here, therefore, we have before us facts which could not have been better arranged for an anthropological experiment. Here we may carefully ascertain by measurement what alterations have taken place in cranial proportions in the course of 3000 years, as the results of emigration and isolation. It is true we have already founded some statements on Welcker's measurements; but the number of skulls at his disposal is not sufficient to establish reliable averages, and, moreover, he has no indexes from the two most important groups of islands. Samoan and Tongan skulls are the most essential, for they probably represent the original dimensions of the Polynesian type, and next, skulls from the Paumotu islands, or Low Archipelago. These latter coral islands were an extremely unfavourable abode, so that on its atolls the Polynesian race must have greatly deteriorated from the social elevation which it occupied at the time of the migration. The interest with which anthropologists look forward to consignments of skulls or cranial measurements from the Paumotas may therefore be conceived. Barnard Davis, who had a larger number of Polynesian skulls at his disposal, arrived at similar results, although he found smaller fluctuations. According to him, the Mabris, with an index of 75, are most inclined to dolichocephalism, while the Javans (82) appear still more brachycephalic than the Madurese (81).

Experiences in Germany have been eminently peculiar, but they confirm the statements we have already made in speaking of the condition of the Malay race. Retzius reckoned the Germans among the dolichocephali, although he subsequently ascertained that other proportions preponderated in Southern Germany. He formed his first opinion because it was chiefly the northern representatives of the Teutonic family that he examined. In Sweden the index of breadth averages 75·2, in the Dutch 75·3, and according to another Dutch table, in the English 76, in Danes and Icelanders 76·1. As mesocephalism commences with an index

of breadth of 74, and ceases at an index of 79, the Teutons of Northern Europe are rather dolichocephalic than brachycephalic.

German skulls, on the other hand, give the following figures : in Hanover 76·7, in the neighbourhood of Jena 76·9, in Holstein 77·2, at Bonn and Cologne 77·4, in Hesse 79·2, in Suabia 79·3,²¹ in Bavaria 79·8, Lower Franconia 80, in Breisgau 80·1. To explain this increasing index of breadth in Southern Germany, our first impulse might lead us to ascribe it to an intermixture with the Celts, but that the Celts have not a very strong tendency to brachycephalism ; the French, for example, are represented by no more than 79·5, and the Irish by only 73·4. In Scotland, where we ought to find a mixture of Teutons and Celts, the index stands only at 75·9.

If we must give up the Celts we must think of the Slavonians. With them we find very considerable indexes, such as 78·8 in the Servians, 79·1 in the people of Little Russia, 79·4 in the Poles, 80 in the Roumanians, 80·1 in Russians, 80·4 in the Ruthenians, 81 in the Slovaks, 82 in the Croats, and 82·1 in the Czechs, these latter being therefore the most brachycephalic of all the Slavonians. Now an intermixture with the Slavonians might well explain brachycephalism in Thuringia, but not in South-western Germany, and, above all, not among the Teutonic Swiss, where the index rises to 81·4.²² Moreover, the German Austrians, who are surrounded on all sides by Slavonians, ought to be more brachycephalic than the Germans. But the average index of the Germans is 78·7, and that of the German Austrians 78·8,²³ consequently, the difference is much smaller than the liability to error in the measurements. We thus arrive at the conclusion that the Teutonic skull is highly variable, and that in Germany it perceptibly tends towards brachycephalism as it passes from north to south, and especially to the south-west.

²¹ Schiller's skull had an index of 82.

²² Weisbach found the index of breadth to be 81·1 in German Austria, 83·6 in the Czechs. As he measures the skull at the widest part, the divergence of his figures from those of Welcker is fully explained. *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. ii. 293.

²³ His attributes to the skulls of the German Swiss (*Disentistypus*) an index of breadth of 86·5, of height of 81·8. His u. Rüttimeyer, *Crania Helvetica*, p. 11.

- If we are to make further progress in craniology, the indexes of European populations must first be ascertained in greater numbers. With respect to Italians, we are indebted to Luigi Calori of Bologna for work of this description. He designates skulls with indexes of breadth from 74 to 80 as orthocephali (for which, however, we will substitute mesocephali), those with higher figures as broad, and those below 74 as narrow skulls. He examined no less than 2442 Italian skulls, exclusive of female specimens, and found 1665 brachycephalic, with an average index of 84 among them. The other 777, on the contrary, gave an average of 77. In Italy, as in Germany, broad and narrow skulls are locally intermingled. Of 100 Bolognese skulls of both sexes, 79 were broad, 16 medium, and only 5 narrow. Of 852 heads from Emilia, 733 ranked as broad, 110 as medium, and 9 as narrow skulls. Again, among 254 heads from Venetia, Lombardy, and the Italian Tyrol, 230 exhibited the broad, 23 the medium, and only 1 the narrow form. On the Adriatic shores, south of Bologna, out of 377 skulls, 265 were broad, 105 medium, and 7 narrow. Crossing the Apennines, out of 213 Tuscan skulls, on the contrary, only 134 are brachy-, 59 meso-, and 20 dolichocephalic. In the former Papal States, out of 200 skulls, only 52 belong to the brachy-, 100 on the other hand to the meso-, and 48 to the dolichocephalic type. Finally, out of 356 Neapolitans, 131 were reckoned among the broad, 162 among the medium, and 63 among the narrow skulls. From this it is evident that the northern Italians belong to the highly brachycephalic nations, but that towards the south of the peninsula, the skulls become elongated, and the medium form finally predominates.²⁴ Here again a variation of the indexes is displayed, corresponding with changes of locality. Nothing else, however, could be expected, since all modern investigations impress upon us that all physical characters are liable to great fluctuations, that living beings in general are not developed in accordance with rigid primæval types, but undergo constant transformation. Above all, we cannot expect persistency of type in the human species, in which the greater number of races are capable of fertile crosses.

It is scarcely necessary to observe that the racial derivation of

²⁴ Journal of the Anthropological Institute, vol. i. p. 110. London, 1872.

any skull can never be inferred from its index of breadth. The narrowest Sclavonian skull, 72·8, might, from its index, be taken for a negro skull, for individual negro skulls go as far as 77·8, but negro skulls below 72 cannot be confounded with Sclavonian skulls. Among 237 German skulls, only one has an index as low as 69, falling nearly to the average of the negroes, 66, so that negro skulls below 69 can never be mistaken for German.

Statistical averages, when used with caution, have hitherto only confirmed what had already been made known by other means. All Egyptologists are agreed that the old type of the monuments has been preserved in the Fellaheen and Copts. The index of breadth, 71·4, agrees exactly with that of the Egyptian mummies. Even if Fallmerayer's extreme views are not accepted, the modern Greeks must yet be regarded as much mixed with Sclavonian blood, and the index shows us that the modern Hellenes with 77·1, have become considerably more brachycephalic than the ancient Greeks with 75. The same result was to be expected in Italy, where we find the ancient Romans recorded at 74.

As a caution that cranial characters alone are not to be relied upon, we will mention that Barnard Davis thought it necessary to divide the Eskimo into three races, according to the degree in which the pyramidal form of the skull was more or less highly developed. He designates the Greenlanders as the purest, the eastern Americans as the medium form, while the western Americans are completely divergent from the normal type. That the Eskimo of the arctic regions are of one and the same race is an inadmissible opinion, however frequently they may have been confounded by travellers, or whatever may be the evidence afforded by their language.²⁵ Their physical divergencies are self-evident. Now, a great expert in northern archæology has recently proved that the Eskimo did not settle in Greenland till after the middle of the fourteenth century,²⁶ and Barnard Davis might, moreover, have learnt from Captain Hall's descriptions

²⁵ *Thesaurus Craniorum*, p. 224.

²⁶ Konrad Maurer in der zweiten deutschen Nordpolarfahrt, i. 234. Leipzig, 1873.

that Eskimo mothers apply lateral pressure to the skulls of their newly born children, and draw over them a tight-fitting leather cap to produce the desired pyramidal form.²⁷

Cranial measurements are as yet deficient from the want of a sufficient number of observations, which can be only increased by a continued augmentation of our collection of racial skulls. In this respect the greatest dispatch is urgently recommended, now that so many and various races are intermingling before our eyes.

Of the same importance as the transverse diameter is the height of the skull. For the purpose of determining it, Welcker placed one point of his calipers on the anterior margin of the occipital foramen, the other on the apex of the head, at the intersection of the planes which divide the skull into a right and left, and at the same time into an anterior and posterior half.²⁸ Here also the result of the measurement is expressed in the hundredth parts of the longitudinal diameter, and it is termed the index of height. By means of an instructive arrangement of Welcker,²⁹ we perceive that on the average the height increases in inverse ratio to the breadth, so that narrow skulls are, generally speaking, high, and broad skulls flat; in other words, that in dolichocephali the index of height exceeds the index of breadth, and in brachycephali does not equal it, so that a smaller lateral extension is compensated by an increase in height. This ratio is however neither constant nor equal. The variation in the index of height is far smaller than that of breadth; it fluctuates between 70·2 and 82·4 for the index of height of 86·8 in the ancient Peruvians is suspected of artificial origin. Moreover, we find nations in which the index of height is far too small for that of breadth, such as the Hottentots, who, although dolichocephalic, only attain to an index of height of 70·2, whereas it ought to be at least three units higher.

²⁷ Life with the Esquimaux, p. 520. 1865.

²⁸ Alex. Ecker on the contrary measures first from the anterior and then from the posterior margins of the occipital foramen and the highest elevation of the occiput (*Crania Germaniae merid.* p. 3.) The mean between the two measurements would probably be the "height" most desirable for purposes of classification in the interest of ethnology.

²⁹ *Craniologische Mittheilungen*, p. 154.

On the other hand, the inhabitants of the island of Madura combine one of the greatest breadths of skull with the largest index of height, namely, 82·4, whereas we should expect one of about 75. Cases such as these furnish ethnology with excellent descriptive terms, enabling us to designate the Hottentots as flat narrow skulls (*platystenocephali*), the Malay inhabitants of Madura as high broad skulls (*hypsi-brachycephali*). The index of breadth represents the shape of the skull as it appears when the brain-case is inspected from above, with the eye perpendicular to the central point of the longitudinal axis (*Norma verticalis*). The index of height, on the other hand, represents the view of the skull as seen from the back (*Norma occipitalis*). With similar indexes the outlines may, it is true, be sometimes angular, sometimes curvilinear; the greatest widths may occur sometimes in the middle and sometimes further back. The comparison of the figures of these measurements is nevertheless the only process which science has hitherto had at its disposal, while the selection of types by the eye would lead to artificial and arbitrary definitions.

II.—THE HUMAN BRAIN.

WHEN we separate the parts of a dissected head we acknowledge that we hold in our hands nothing but the shell of an exploded cartridge, or the larval husk from which the winged imago has escaped. We also understand that all cranial forms possess only an artificial value, and tell us nothing respecting the several grades of mental power contained within a dolichocephalic or brachycephalic bony covering. Artificial malformations of the brain-case by pressure of the infantine head, such as took place in the nations of olden times, and such as still occur among countless inhabitants of America, and is even the custom of foolish mothers in the north of France,¹ although perhaps not completely harmless, have not perceptibly impeded the healthy functions of the artificially remoulded apparatus of thought.

The brain, the noblest of our organs, varies in point of weight,

¹ Ausland, 1866, p. 1095. *Delineations of Artificial Compressions of the Skull.*

from two or three to four pounds, while we find the brain of the elephant to be from 8-10 lbs., of the whale from 4-5 lbs., of a narwhal 18 feet in length 2 lbs. 15 oz., of a dolphin 7 feet long 2½ lbs. "Who could venture," observes a celebrated French physiologist, "to infer from the bulk of brain, the nature and power of a human being or even of an animal?" Who, we might add, can judge by the weight whether a church clock or a pocket chronometer will keep the most accurate time? Yet both are merely the work of our own hands. Neither does man take the highest place in the relative weight of brain as compared to the total weight of the body, for although the brain of the whale is only $\frac{1}{3300}$, that of the elephant $\frac{1}{800}$, of the dog $\frac{1}{280}$, while that of man is from $\frac{1}{37}$ to $\frac{1}{35}$ of the weight of the body, yet we are surpassed by the song-birds, among which the weight of the brain reaches $\frac{1}{27}$, by the titmouse and the sparrow, in which it reaches respectively $\frac{1}{12}$ and $\frac{1}{27}$, and by the American apes, in which it amounts to from $\frac{1}{28}$ to $\frac{1}{18}$ of the weight of the body.²

Hence if the rank of the brain is to correspond to man's high rank in creation, we must look for differences other than those of weight. The human cerebrum, which can alone be considered the seat and organ of intellectual power, consists of an internal white substance traversed by delicate fibres, which is regarded as the conducting apparatus and focus of nervous action; and secondly, of an external grey covering in which granules, spherical forms, and ganglia may be recognized, and which is held to be, if not the originator, at least the seat of the psychical functions. The more profusely convoluted is the surface, and the more furrowed it appears, the more does the outer covering or grey substance increase in superficies.

We also know that more or less extensive disease of this outer layer is capable of destroying the higher functions of the mind, especially of co-ordinate thought. It was therefore obviously permissible to recognize the abundance of convolutions as a sign of the superior rank of the brain, particularly as the elephant, the most intelligent of all animals, affords a good example of a

² Th. Bischoff in the *Naturwissenschaftlichen Vorträgen Münchener Gelehrten*, p. 139. Munich, 1858.

brain deeply furrowed by multiform convolutions. The primary distribution of the furrows, observes A. Ecker, seems to be generally symmetrical, and asymmetry is prevalent only in the the secondary furrows ; so, that greater symmetry in the furrows and convolutions may be regarded as the expression of arrested developement, especially as the brain of idiots displays this character.³ On the other hand, Rudolph Wagner points out that the brain of the dog, when compared with the complex system of convolutions of the unintelligent sheep, exhibits an extraordinary poverty, and that the brains of our great mathematicians, Gauss and Dirichlet, were without any peculiar folds,⁴ although among the most richly endowed of any that he has seen in point of depth and multiformity of the furrows, especially in the frontal regions.

Huxley was able to pour 55·3 cubic inches of water into the brain-case of a woman of sound mental powers, and 34½ cubic inches into the most capacious cranium of a gorilla;⁵ but it should first have been ascertained whether the brains of men and apes are so strictly analogous as to justify this comparison in point of size. Unfortunately, investigations respecting the embryonic brain of the ape are still very meagre. Von Bischoff has nevertheless announced his conviction that although the human brain possesses no important furrow and no important convolution which is not represented in the orang, yet the human brain by no means exhibits a mere advance, and the brain of the orang an arrest of growth, but that they each take a different course of evolution, developing in different directions, and at no time coin-

³ Archiv für Anthrop. vol. iii. p. 221.

⁴ Wagner, Wendungen der Hemisphären, pp. 6, 7, and 24.

⁵ He reckons 252·5 gr. of brain = to 1 cubic inch of water (Man's Place in Nature). Carl Vogt (Archiv für Anthropologie, vol. iii. 186) more precisely estimates the average capacities of the interior of the skulls of the higher apes—

	Males.	Females.
	Cubic centimetres.	
In the Orang and Pongo ...	448	378
„ Chimpanzee and Chego	417	370
„ Gorilla... ..	500	423

ciding with one another. This is, as yet, merely the conviction of a scholar highly esteemed by his compeers, but at the same time it corresponds with our expectations. It is a common experience that diseases still latent in the parents at the time of procreation, and only breaking out at a much later period, are nevertheless transmitted to their children, to make their appearance in them also only at a mature age. Hence, if even the causes of future disturbances are hereditary, specific, generic and ordinal differences must be still more so. It is therefore impossible to free one's self of the idea that even at the first awakening of life, the morphological end is preordained for the human germ as well as for that of the ape. Their development may be compared with two lines of rails which long run side by side on the same track, and finally separate right and left in different curves. Bischoff moreover admits that by reason of their great morphological proximity, it requires the closest examination to recognize differences between the brains of man and of the orang, the chimpanzee and the gorilla. Relying on Rolleston's measurements, Bischoff considers that the hemispheres of the human cerebrum are specially distinguished from those of the apes by their superior height. To ascribe little importance to differences in quantity, is to overlook the fact that in chemical compounds the quality of the combinations is dependent on the quantity—that by the addition of a single atom of oxygen, sulphurous acid is converted into sulphuric acid, that a numerical increase in frequency transforms dark into luminous vibrations, that is to say, changes the temperature which excites the visual nerves; and that even in numbers slight changes of quantity lead to differences of great importance.⁶ In the obscurity which still prevails as to the relations of the several portions

⁶ The relative difference in quantity between the numbers

0,99999999

I

1,00000000

is very slight; yet the first possesses the property of diminishing to infinity when persistently raised to higher powers, while by the same process the third increases to infinity, and the middle one remains constant at every power.

of the brain to the functions of the intellectual powers, the conjecture is still permissible that the higher psychical functions may be connected with an externally insignificant accretion of the brain.

Again, it is usually held that unimpaired intellectual faculties exist in man only when the weight of brain exceeds a minimum limit which varies according to sex and race. Quatrefages wanted to fix the weight of brain in Europeans at 1113 grams for males, and 977 grams for females.⁷ Carl Vogt assumes only 1000 grams in the first case, and 900 grams in the second;⁸ while H. von Luschka pronounced 1000 grams to be the minimum weight of a brain of unimpaired efficiency.⁹ Weighed in a fresh condition, he found the brain of a microcephalic woman only 30, and of a man even 20 Loth,¹⁰ or about 10 oz. With the exception of the elongated form of the brain-case, and a great projection of the jaws, there is nothing of an animal character in the skull of these unhappy beings, for Virchow has decisively contradicted Carl Vogt's assertion that the position of the occipital foramen is abnormal. The same observation applies to the conditions of the basisphenoid bone, which of course ought to be compared in adult microcephali and adult apes of a high order, not between adult microcephali and young apes.¹¹ Carl Vogt had ventured to compare the skulls of these abortive human beings with the skulls of apes. According to his tables the capacity of the brain-case amounted to 622 cubic centimetres in one idiot, to 460 in another; while that of a male gorilla reached 500 cubic centimetres.¹² Relying on these researches, he supposed himself to have perceived in these human malformations a reversion or, in the language of the Darwinian theory, an atavism, which, by the reappearance of ancestral characters of remote times, affords testimony of the animal

⁷ Rapport sur les progrès de l'Anthropologie, p. 324.

⁸ Vorlesungen über den Menschen, vol. i. p. 103.

⁹ Dritte Versammlung der Deutschen Gesellsch., p. 17.

¹⁰ At the time this was written 32 Loth = 1 German lb. = 1·1023 English lb., but by the new regulations there are but 30 Loth in the German lb.

¹¹ Menschen und Affenschädel, p. 31.

¹² Mémoires sur les Microcéphales, in the Mém. de l'Institut National Genevois, vol. ix. p. 54.

derivation of our forefathers. But at the third meeting of the German Anthropological Society, all the specialists remonstrated against this interpretation of the facts. With almost an identity of expression the microcephali were recognized as human creatures which, by reason of morbid arrest of development, were rendered incapable of development, and in no way as intermediate links filling the chasm which separates man from the creatures most resembling him in the animal world. That reproductive powers are wanting in idiots, is enough to prove that the ancestors of man never occupied a microcephalous grade—that no part of the world was in past ages peopled with Crétins.¹³

The human brain must therefore be compared only with other human brains. This is approximately accomplished by measuring the capacity of crania of various races of mankind. Water is not generally used, because it necessitates the closing of the numerous apertures in the bones. Lime or plaster of Paris can be used only after transverse sections have been made, that is to say, only in damaged skulls, and afford no really comparable results, as these materials have different specific weights; these substances have therefore been abandoned, even by those who previously recommended them.¹⁴ The brain capsule is now filled either with millet seed or small shot, and the contents are then poured into a metrical gauge. Sand is sometimes used, but with very unreliable results. Wyman, in the fourth volume of the *Anthropological Record*, states that the capacity of one skull, which was measured with sand eight times, appeared to vary between 1290 and 1350 cubic millimetres; when measured with shot the variation was only between 1200 and 1205. By these means we ascertain the capacity of the brain-capsule in different races. Lucae's measurements tend to show that the broadest negro skull does not reach the average of the Germans, nor the best Australian skull the average of the negro, and also that the individual fluctu-

¹³ Comp. the speeches of Von Luschka, Virchow, Ecker, Schaaffhausen, and Jäger, in the account of the third meeting of the German Anthropological Society, pp. 16-25; and also H. Schüle, in the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. v. p. 444-446. 1872.

¹⁴ Lucae, *Morphologie der Racenschädel*, § ii. p. 45. 1864.

ations increase with the rise of the numbers.¹⁵ Broca's results seem to confirm these. Assuming 100 as the average capacity of the Australian skull, he estimates that of the negro at 111·6, and of the Teuton at 124·8.¹⁶ The suspiciously high averages at which Barnard Davis arrived, based on the richest of all collections, do not seem so unfavourable to those human races which we regard as low.¹⁷ He found the capacity of the cranium to be in—

	Cubic Inches.	Cubic Centimetres.
Europeans	92·1	1835
Americans	89·0	1774
Asiatics	88·7	1768
Africans	86·2	1718
Australians	81·7	1628

In addition to these averages derived from numerous individual estimates, it is advisable to glance at the fluctuations. Thus Morton, among skulls of all races, found one minimum specimen of 63 cubic inches, and one maximum of 114 internal capacity.¹⁸ But Barnard Davis has in his possession an ancient Roman skull of only 62 cubic inches, and an Irish specimen of 121·6. Another Irish skull in the Bateman Museum even reaches 124·2 cubic inches.¹⁹ Even within the same family of nations the greatest differences may occur, for some Tuscan skulls are far behind the

¹⁵ Lucae, *Morphologie der Racenschädel*, § ii. p. 45. 1854. (These capacities were taken with millet seed).

Number of Skulls.	Minimum.	Maximum.	Average.
		Cubic Centimetres.	
13 German	1300	1725	1531·6
6 Chinese	1400	1575	1482·5
5 Negroes	1190	1505	1344
5 Australians	1115	1300	1186

¹⁶ Broca, cited by Quatrefages, *Rapport*, p. 306.

¹⁷ *Thesaurus Cranium*, p. 360.

¹⁸ Huxley, *Man's Place in Nature*, p. 77.

¹⁹ *Thesaurus Cranium*, pp. 65 and 360.

narrowest Australian specimens in point of internal capacity. In a Florentine servant maid, 23 years of age, Paolo Mantegazza found only 1046 cubic centimetres, but in an adult Florentine man 1727 cubic centimetres, and in a supposed Etruscan warrior even 1750 cubic centimetres.²⁰

If the smaller average capacity of the cranium is causally connected with arrested intellectual development, we might expect that the skulls of ancient Europeans would be of smaller size than those of their descendants: many facts point this way. Broca thinks that he has found an increasing capacity in the crania of modern Parisians (1482-1484 cubic centimetres) contrasted with those of the 12th century (1426 cubic centimetres).²¹ Skulls of ancient Greeks recently exhumed at Athens, especially those of a wealthy lady of the Macedonian period, Glykera by name, with only 1150 cubic centimetres, and of a man 1280 cubic centimetres, both favour this opinion.²² On the other hand, His and Rüttimeyer have given, as an average for 'their Disentis type, to which belong three-fourths of the modern Swiss, 1377 cubic centimetres; for the Hohberg type, nominally ancient Romans, 1437 cubic centimetres, and for the Sion head, which corresponds with the skulls of the lake dwellings, 1558 cubic centimetres ($\frac{\text{min. } 1450}{\text{max. } 1800}$). According to this computation the Swiss population must have lost considerably in cranial capacity;²³ but as this is hardly credible, the fact ought to serve as a warning against measurements of skulls taken from graves.

The investigation of these dimensions is obviously a means of inferring, at least approximatively, the size of the brain. On the weight of this organ we for a long time possessed only an introductory work by Rudolf Wagner. Unfortunately, the majority of the 964 skulls examined were derived from individuals of unsound mind, and ought therefore to have been excluded from

²⁰ Archivio per l'antropologia, vol. i. p. 53 et seq. Firenze, 1871.

²¹ Broca as cited by Carl Vogt, Vorlesungen über den Menschen, vol. i. pp. 105-108.

²² See Virchow's account in the Verhandlungen der Berliner anthropol. Gesellschaft, p. 174 et seq. 1811.

²³ Crania Helvetica, p. 44. Basle, 1864.

the comparison. Again, the estimates of weight were taken from various anatomists, who do not appear to have adopted the same method of procedure. It was also to be regretted that the bodily dimensions of the corpses examined were only occasionally stated. As a weight of 1861 grams was found in Cuvier, and in Lord Byron (though this is founded on equivocal statements) 1807 grams, a high weight seemed to be accompanied by high intellectual endowments. Yet among eminent scholars of Göttingen, such as Dirichlet (1520 gr.), the great Gauss (1492 gr.), the pathologist Fuchs (1499 gr.), the philologist Hermann (1386 gr.), and the mineralogist Haussmann (1225 gr.), the weights sank to the general average, and even far below it.²⁴ As the only permanent result of this first attempt, it may be noticed that Wagner found the average weight of the female brain to be lighter than that of the male. This fact was strictly corroborated by Weisbach as regards the German and Sclavonian populations of Austria. Calori, moreover, relying on a large number of estimates of weight, taken from Italian specimens, has found that the female brain is lighter by 150–200 grams. The capacity of the skull is likewise different in the two sexes according to the following statistics arranged by Weisbach.²⁵

CAPACITY OF THE FEMALE AS COMPARED WITH THE MALE
CRANIUM, THE LATTER = 1000.

				Observer.					Observer.
In Negroes	...	984	...	B. Davis.	In Marquesas	}	902	...	B. Davis.
Hindoos	...	944	...	"	Islanders				
Negroes	...	932	...	Tiedemann.*	Germans	...	897	..	Welcker.
Malays	...	923	...	"	Dutch	...	883	...	B. Davis.
Dutch	...	919	...	"	Germans	...	878	...	Weisbach.
Irish	...	912	...	B. Davis.	Javans	...	874	...	B. Davis.
Kanaks	..	906	...	"	Germans	...	864	...	Tiedemann
Sclavonians	903	...		Weisbach.	English	...	860	...	B. Davis.
					Germans	...	838	...	Huschke.

²⁴ Rudolf Wagner, *Die Wendungen der Hemisphären u. das Hirngewicht*, Göttingen, pp. 32, 33. 1860. In his published letter to Barnard Davis "on the skull of Dante," Welcker has, however, proved from the estimates given by Wagner and others, that the brains of 26 men of high intellectual rank collectively surpass the average weight of brain by 14 per cent. Dante's brain (1420 gr.) is nevertheless but little above the average of 1360 grams.

²⁵ *Der Deutsche Weiberschädel*. Archiv für Anthropologie, vol. iii. p. 63, 1868.

In these estimates it is specially significant that, as in other physical characters, the differences of sex appear more strongly in highly civilized nations.

Other surprising revelations were likewise obtained from the researches made by A. Weisbach, which, although they extended to only 429 brains of inhabitants of Austria, were exclusively restricted to persons of sound mind.²⁶ The total weight was always first ascertained, and then the several weights of the cerebrum, of the cerebellum, and the pons varolii. But the most instructive fact was that the brain attains its greatest weight between the 20th and 30th year of life, and then till the 80th year undergoes a diminution which increases to 10 per cent. This diminution extends simultaneously to all parts of the brain with the exceptions of the pons varolii, which increases till the 50th year. From this we see that brain weights are comparable only at the same time of life. These researches have also confirmed a previous conjecture, namely, that the specific gravity of brains is variable; for the more capacious crania of the Germans contained a smaller weight of brain than other and smaller skulls, namely—

Men.	Capacity of the Skull.	Weight of Brain.
	Cubic Centimetres.	Grams.
Germans	1501·66	1314·5
Magyars	1421·66	1322·8
Slavonians	1484·55	1325·2

Thus the capacity of the skull is of more importance in ethnology than the weight of the brain. We will further add that the minimum weight (986·5 gr.) of German male skulls was found in a person of 65 years of age; a minimum of 889·1, female skulls, in one of 83 years of age.

We owe another discovery to Calori of Bologna, who by numerous measurements had already performed valuable services in the cause of science. He gives the weight of the brain in

²⁶ Die Gewichts verhältnisse der Gehirne österreichischer Völker. Archiv für Anthropologie, vol. i. p. 190. 1866.

Italians of both sexes, but separates the cases according to the form of the skull.

No. of Cases.	Weight of Brain in Grams.	
	Total Weight.	Cerebrum.
In brachycephalic Skulls.		
201 Men	1305	1145
72 Women	1150	1004
In Skulls with an index of breadth below 80.		
104 Men	1282	1122
44 Women	1136	992

Here we not only again see that the female brain is the lighter, but it also appears to follow that in both sexes the brachycephali have heavier brains than the dolichocephali. The lightest brain in a brachycephalic man of 22 years weighed 1024 grams, in a dolichocephalic of 34 years of 1088 grams, while the minimum weights in broad and narrow-skulled women were respectively 909 and 918 grams.²⁷

III.—THE OSSEOUS FACIAL APPARATUS.

IN the perpendicular section of a skull, even the unpractised eye at once recognizes the region of the brain-capsule and the facial apparatus. In man, the latter occupies a relatively much smaller space, for it is not half so long, nor half so high, and is invariably narrower than the other. In apes, on the contrary, even in the highest, the size of the facial bones preponderates, and the animal expression of the head is chiefly due to the protrusion of the jaws.¹ A slight tendency to this formation of face in human races is termed prognathism. Peter Camper was the first who attempted to measure these structural proportions by means of the so-called facial angle. He drew a line from the external auditory passage to the nasal partition, and intersected it by a line from the front of the closed teeth to the most prominent part of the fore-

²⁷ Journal of the Anthropological Institute, vol. i. p. 117. London, 1872.

¹ Peter Camper über den natürlichen Unterschied der Gesichtszüge, vol. xv. pp. 17, 21, 22. Berlin, 1792.

head. The magnitude of the angle he took as a standard of a noble expression of countenance. Virchow has justly objected that this angle must decrease in old people by the development of the frontal sinuses, as well as by the retreat of the dental apophysis.² But it was yet more unfortunate that Camper should have selected the nasal partition and the auditory passages as points on which to lay a so-called horizontal plane of the skull. A plane of this description has been sought by craniologists almost as eagerly as the philosopher's stone by the alchemists. This plane was supposed to lie horizontally through the head when the latter is poised over its centre of gravity with the least assistance of the muscles. The direction of the zygomatic arch seemed to fall in this plane, and the position of the skull was arranged to correspond with it. But it was soon found that this plane takes quite a different course in skulls of different races; that the zygomatic arch cannot always be followed, and that the skull must be a little raised, sometimes in front, sometimes behind.³ In this system the investigator relied on his own artistic feeling, which may occasionally vary. As H. von Ihering has shown, it has happened that an anatomist who, venturing on this slippery path, had repeated his measurements on the same skulls, after an interval of three years, found differences which amounted to more than 50 per cent.⁴ Moreover, such angles can be determined only on outline drawings of skulls. Consequently, science has at last been enriched by the system of the so-called geometric, or, perhaps more correctly, orthographic projection of the skull. Lucae, its inventor, placed the skull in the requisite position upon a firm support. Upon the skull, and parallel to the support, rested a glass plate, on which a dioptric instrument with a cross thread was moved in such a manner, that its optic axis constantly touched the outlines of the skull. The intersection of the threads was followed on the glass plate by a pen which registered in ink the course pursued.⁵ In this way he obtained a picture of the skull

² Schädelgrund, p. 119.

³ Lucae, *Morphologie der Racenschädel* (1861), ¶ 1. p. 42, and (1864) § 2, p. 31.

⁴ *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. v. p. 396. 1872.

⁵ *Morphologie der Racenschädel*, § 1. pp. 10, 11.

as it would be seen from an infinite distance, somewhat as is the case with the moon seen from the earth ; these drawings are not merely free from all the defects of perspective vision, but they admit of measurements by the compasses.

Even less unanimity has been observed in the angular measurements of the facial apparatus than in the estimates of the size of the brain-capsule. Each anatomist went his own new way regardless of his predecessors, and very often applied the same appellations to angles which some other had sought at a different point. The results of the various kinds of measurement do not therefore admit of mutual comparison, and the painful spectacle of this dark mass of contradictions has drawn upon craniology a contumely perhaps not entirely undeserved, for the inducement to make increasingly factitious systems of measurement was often not so much the endeavour to provide ethnology with useful numerical formulæ as to find in the skulls of various races a corroboration of morphological theories.

In this state of things anthropology can but follow Welcker, the anatomist who has measured the greatest number of skulls ; his system, although, as he himself admits, imperfect and susceptible of further improvement, is fortunately the most satisfactory. Welcker searches for no horizontal plane, but merely determines the position of certain points in the facial apparatus, and does this regardless of the frontal bones.

The animal expression of the human countenance is due to the protrusion of the jawbones, and the degree is best determined by angular measurements. Virchow, even before Welcker, pronounced that prognathism, or the snout-like form of the face, is dependent on the shape of the base of the skull, although he did not conceive such a dependence as is shown by Welcker's measurements. The size of the angle at the sella turcica may be determined by a triangle, of which one side (fig. 3) is equal to the distance from the root of the nose to the sella turcica, the second to the distance from the sella to the anterior margin of the occipital foramen ; the third (*b n*) from the latter back to the root of the nose. This angle of the sella turcica exceeds a right angle even in man, but in animals it becomes considerably greater. In the child and the young ape its size, or the degree of

flexure of the basisphenoid plate differs but little, that is to say, it amounts to 141° in the first, and 155° in the second case; but with increasing age this flexure becomes more acute in the human being, reaching 134° , while in the ape it becomes more obtuse (174°). In this divergent tendency of growth Welcker recognizes a profound difference between man and beast.⁶ Yet, since this angle of the sella is neither visible nor measurable in a complete skull, it possesses a merely theoretical value for our purpose, arising from the fact that another angle of the face is correlatively dependent upon it. This angle is situated at the root of the nose, and is measurable in all skulls by the aid of a triangle, of which the

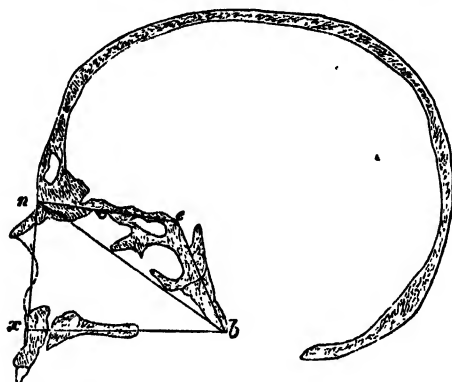


FIG. 3.—Section of the human skull in the direction of the sagittal suture. *n*, root of nose; *c*, sella turcica; *b*, anterior margin of the occipital foramen; *x*, point on the super-maxillary bone above the alveoli.

sides correspond with the distances from the root of the nose to the anterior margin of the occipital foramen (*b*), from this to the insertion of the alveoli (*x*), and finally from this back to the root of the nose. It is obviously the angle at the beginning of the alveoli which controls the expression of the face, and in proportion to its magnitude the countenance appears to us ennobled. Weisbach found this angle to average from 70° to 72° in Amboynese, Javans, Banjarese, Chinese, and Buginese, 73° in 50 German men, 75° in Northern Italians, 76° in 24 German women, 77° in 28

⁶ Bau und Wachstums des Schädels, pp. 80, 81.

Czechs.⁷ Welcker, however, prefers to determine the position of the jaw indirectly by means of the angle at the root of the nose ($b \ n \ x$), because this latter increases with the angle of the sella, whereas it is the reverse with the angle at the alveoli ($b \ x \ n$), which decreases while the others increase. The angle at the root of the nose varies from 60° to 72° in the skulls of different races. Welcker speaks of a skull in which this angle amounts to 68° or more as prognathous; of one in which it remains below 65° as opistognathous; of skulls of from 65° to not quite 68° as orthognathous, for which latter term we shall substitute mesognathous. An examination of skulls shows that prognathism prevails as a rule in narrow skulls, while medium and broad skulls are mostly mesognathous or occasionally opistognathous. This correlation is not however invariable, for, according to Welcker, Eskimo, Mexicans, Hottentots, and the Highland Scotch belong to the mesognathous dolichocephali, while conversely the Sumatrans and Bashkirs combine an index of breadth of 80° and 82° with prognathism of an angle of $69^\circ 5'$ and $67^\circ 6'$. It seems strange perhaps that in determining the direction of the jaws, the points of the compasses are placed above the alveoli and not at once upon the lower edge of the sockets, or even on the incisor teeth, as the protrusion of the facial apparatus is greatest at these points. But very many skulls are damaged just at these points, and it would therefore be necessary to reject them as useless. Again, it is still more important that the prognathism produced by the oblique position of the alveoli depends on non-essential directions of growth.

Virchow has shown that the prognathous type of face is inconsistent with the full development of the brain.⁸ This fact is most significant when we remember that this unpropitious position of the jaw is confined almost exclusively to nations in which civilization appears somewhat immature. Only here again it must be remembered that various forms occur side by side within the same nations. In England and France cases of prognathism are not unknown, and in Paris they are said to be tolerably common.⁹

⁷ Weisbach, *der deutsche Weiberschädel* in the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. iii: p. 75. 1868. His facial angle is nearly identical with Welcker's angle $b \ x \ n$.

⁸ Schädelgrund, p. 121.

⁹ Quatrefages, *Rapport*, p. 311.

The Chinese are, moreover, reckoned among the prognathous nations by many craniologists; and in Welcker's statistics we even find the Dutch with an angle of $67^{\circ} 8'$ at the root of the nose. With such great variability, the average numbers can only show the frequency of a certain form of facial apparatus, while the individual fluctuations serve as links to a higher or a lower type.

The expression of the human countenance is very greatly affected by the prominence of the zygomatic arch, although this characteristic is not constant, yet where it occurs in a preponderating number of cases, we must be content to use it in the description of nations. If a skull be so placed that the eye of the beholder strikes the centre of the major axis perpendicularly (*norma verticalis*), it can be determined with certainty whether the zygomatic arches project like two handles beyond the outlines of the skull (*phanerozygous*), or whether they remain concealed behind them (*cryptozygous* skulls); in the first case we are able to say that the cheek-bones are prominent. Much attention has recently been given to the form of the orbicular cavities in the osseous face, but these measurements have not hitherto enabled us to recognize any characteristics available for ethnology. The osseous frames appear to have no influence on the oblique position of the opening of the eye,¹⁰ which, although not quite constant as a characteristic of all nations of a Mongolian cast, must yet find place in description. The shape of the nose, again, was taken into account by the older ethnologists. The Papuan is recognizable by the Jewish type of his nose, the Mongols of Northern Asia by the flatness of this feature. In the inhabitants of Thibet the bridge of the nose is said to be so low that, seen in profile, it projects but little beyond the eye-ball, or even disappears behind it in some muscular individuals.¹¹

The lower jawbone was formerly neglected by craniologists, and has only recently been noticed. In proportion as it is pointed or flattened, the face acquires oval, angular, or square outlines. But if we look round among our daily companions, we see such a confusion of types, so many transitions from one to the other, that it

¹⁰ Von Schlagintweit, *Indien und Hochasien*, vol. ii. p. 51.

¹¹ *Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 48.

would require a vast number of measurements to enable us to say which of the divers forms is most prevalent. The mouth is another subject on which much stress has been laid in the description of races. The thick lips of the Central and Southern Africans are especially opposed to our idea of beauty. The thin lips of Europeans and their American descendants are, however, a character which brings them nearer to the apes. But even among the negroes themselves, this portion of the facial form varies considerably, and although a marked intumescence of the lips may be generally attributed to them, it implies nothing more than that the European form of mouth does not occur among them more frequently than does the negro form among ourselves. Among the Jews, who for thousands of years have intermarried among themselves, we find the two extremes side by side, the delicately chiseled mouth and the intumescent lips.

. IV.—THE PROPORTIONS OF THE PELVIS AND THE LIMBS.

IF we cast a glance from the head downwards, it is at once evident that there is a harmony of proportion between the skull and the female pelvis. But if the number of skulls of different races was too small to inspire implicit confidence, the stock of pelvises of various races does not equal the hundredth part of the skulls. Nevertheless, M. J. Weber has already ventured to distinguish an European or oval, an American or round, a Mongolian or square, a Negro or wedge-shaped pelvis. Joulin, on the other hand, maintained the identity of form of the Mongolian or, more accurately, the Javan or Papuan pelvis and that of the negro. Lastly, Pruner Bey believes that no race exists of which the woman cannot give birth to children of a European or any other father, that from the same womb proceed children with different forms of skull, although, according to observations on Javans and North Americans, parturition is easier when the child is of pure breed and not a hybrid.¹ Fritsch has recently imported to Europe a comparatively large number of pelvises of South African nations,

¹ Pruner Bey, *Etudes sur le Bassin*, p. 13. Paris, 1855.

but owing to the inconstancy of characters, he has not ventured to distinguish types. In the course of his studies he has, however, made a discovery calculated to cause serious reflection. In European skeletons, male and female are recognizable with tolerable certainty by the capaciousness and form of the pelvis. The pelvis is thus one of the secondary sexual characters. In the case of Bushmen, on the contrary, the female pelvis might be mistaken for the male, and the same holds good of Hottentots and Kaffirs.² Should this phenomenon be recognized in other parts of the world, we should be able to declare that the complete evolution of sexual differences is accomplished only under the protection of the higher civilizations.

We owe the most numerous measurements, although exclusively of female pelvises, to Carl Martin, who for a considerable time practised as a physician in Brazil, treating negresses as well as native women and hybrids. He compared the dimensions in the case of eight Papuans, two aboriginal Americans, eighteen Malays, four Bushmen, and fifteen negro women, with the averages of European collections. As far as a result may be deduced from this small stock of anatomical records, the pelvises may be divided into those with a circular inlet, as in the aboriginal Americans, Malays, and Papuans, and those with a transverse-oval inlet, as in African and European women. The inlet is called round when the conjugata is as large, or nearly as large, as the other diameter; and transverse-oval when it is exceeded more than 10 per cent. by the transverse and oblique diameters. It may also be said with more precision that, in European women, the pelvis combines the greatest capacity and width with an essentially transverse-oval inlet; and that the pelvis of the negress, although of similar shape, is smaller and narrower in other respects. The pelvises of Bushwomen, corresponding with their small bodily stature, are smaller than those of any other race, and have an inlet which is sometimes of an upright oval form. At page 1008 of the 31st number of the *Literar. Centralblatt*, it is stated that the side bones of the Bushman are relatively longer than the haunch bones, and are higher than in any other race, so that the pelvis

is of animal form in an extreme degree. The Malay pelvises are narrow, the inlet round, or not unfrequently uprightly oval. In size the pelvis of aboriginal American women closely approach the European form, but differ from it in their circular entrance. Lastly, the Papuan pelvis, although tolerably round, yet approaches the transverse-oval form.³

Turning to the dimensions of the body, we must not expect that they will afford us any invariable marks of distinction between the various human families. Most of the observations directed to this end were obtained during the late civil war in the United States. The measurements extended to 1,104,841 men. It first became evident from these large numbers that growth visibly diminished in the 20th year, yet continued slowly till the 24th in all those who were drafted into the military service in the North American States; indeed, growth in native Americans does not completely cease till the 30th year.⁴ It was also a curious fact that the inhabitants of the Western States, such as Kentucky and Tennessee, surpassed the natives of the East, and still more the Canadians, Scotch, Irish, English, and Germans in their bodily dimensions.⁵

	Average size.
Kentucky and Tennessee	176.62 Centim.
Ohio and Indiana	175.19
Michigan, Illinois, and Wisconsin	174.91
New England	173.53
New York, Pennsylvania, New Jersey ...	173.00

It is uncertain whether a fuller development of the body by hard work on virgin territories may be cited as the cause, or the fact that it is usually men of high stature and superior physical power who decide on emigration, while the more weakly prefer to stay at home; and that this form of segregation is reflected in this average of many individual cases. But as the native Americans surpass the Scotch, Irish, English, and German immigrants in bodily dimensions, there can be no doubt that the

³ Monatschrift für Geburtskunde, xxviii. i. p. 23-58.

⁴ Gould, Investigations in the Military and Anthropological Statistics of American Soldiers, p. 108. New York, 1869.

⁵ Gould, p. 125.

descendants of the European emigrants have perceptibly increased in stature in the United States within a short period. It is the more conceivable that this effect is caused by the change of locality, as the aboriginal inhabitants are likewise remarkable for their size, and in them also the arrest of growth takes place only in the thirtieth year; at least five hundred of the Iroquois who were measured, were on an average a trifle taller than the Americans of the United States in the same recruiting districts.⁶ That good and abundant food promotes bodily size is shown by the universally more portly figures of the Polynesian chiefs in the South Sea Islands.⁷ Similarly among the Kaffirs, six men of a chieftain's family yielded an average of 1830 mm. or 110 mm. more than is otherwise found among the Bantu negroes of Southern Africa. The strikingly low stature of the Bushmen on the southern edge of the Kalahari may likewise be attributed to bad nourishment, for Chapman found their stature greater in the north, where game is more plentiful; the Koi-Koin, or Hottentots, their kindred by consanguinity, perhaps surpass them in height merely because they are shepherds and not hunters like the Bushmen. Yet food and the nature of the abode can by no means account for all differences, otherwise the Kaffirs could not in their turn outstrip the Hottentots, though both gain their livelihood in like manner and in the same region. Gustav Fritsch⁸ determined the following averages:—

Men.						Bodily Dimensions.
55	Bantu Negroes	...	...	...	...	1718 Mm.
10	Koi-Koin	...	...	...	...	1604
6	Bushmen	...	...	...	...	1444

Difference of stature is therefore to a certain extent attributable to parentage, and so far bodily dimensions may be used as a distinctive mark in the description of nations. Yet we have no averages derived from a great number of statistics; while measurements even of the same race are extremely various. With regard

⁶ Gould, *Investigations*, pp. 151, 152.

⁷ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. I. p. 115.

⁸ *Eingeborne Sudafrika's*, pp. 17, 277, 397.

to the Maori of New Zealand, for instance, we find the following statements :⁹

Observers.	Height in Mm.
Thomson	1695·4
Scherzer and Schwarz	1757·6
Garnot and Lesson	1813
Wilkes	1904

Of these, Thomson's averages obtained from 147 measurements are probably most trustworthy.¹⁰ The average dimensions may also increase or diminish within the same race, owing to separation during thousands of years, migrations to great distances, and altered habits of life; for, notwithstanding the fluctuations of the figures, it is impossible to doubt that the Asiatic Malays belong to the small nations, while the Polynesian Malays are preëminent for their stature.¹¹

ASIATIC MALAYS.

Observers.	Height in Mm.
Crawford Javans	1549·4
Scherzer and Schwarz	1679
Keppel Dyaks... ..	1574·8
Müller Timorese	1586
Scherzer and Schwarz Madurese	1625
" " Sundanese	1646
" " Buginese	1653·9

POLYNESIAN MALAYS.

Wilkes Sandwich Islanders	1676·4
Gaimard " "	1755
Wilkes Marquesas Islanders	1689
Marchand " "	1786
Batare " "	1800
Garnot and Lesson Tahitians	1786
Wilkes " "	1803·3
La Pérouse... .. Navigator Islanders	1895
Wilkes " "	1930·4

In every family of mankind popular report speaks of certain persons of unusual size as giants. Statements respecting such

⁹ Weisbach, *Anthropol. Theil der Novara-Reise*, p. 217.

¹⁰ Gould, *Investigations*, p. 146.

¹¹ Weisbach.

extreme cases are however of no ethnological value.¹² It is more noteworthy that almost every circumnavigator of the world has contradicted the old anthropological fictions spread by Pigafetta the companion of Magalhães, as to the superhuman size of the Patagonians. It is true these South American families belong to the nations of high stature, as is shown by the following measurements :—

Observers.						Height of the Patagonians.
D'Orbigny	..	...	...	...	...	1730 Mm.
"	..	...	...	...	...	1780
D'Urville	...	...	...	...	...	1732
Wilson	...	...	...	...	...	1803'4

yet the Polynesians are in no way inferior to them in stature. The lofty volcanic islands of the South Sea and the two continents of America are in truth the regions in which the human race has locally attained the highest stature.¹³

The lowest stature in man may fall to surprisingly low figures in single cases, for dwarfs of 920 mm. (3 ft. 0'2211268 in.) and even 750 mm. (2 ft. 6'5280925 in.) are described as perfectly well formed.¹⁴

But here again ethnology can make use only of averages derived from large numbers. The Bushmen of South Africa have hitherto been considered the smallest of men ; their height having been stated by Barrow as 1300 mm., although Knox estimated them at 1372 mm., and the accurate Fritsch at 1444 mm.¹⁵ Du Chaillu found the same dwarfish proportions in the Obongos in Equatorial Africa, who resemble the Bushmen in other characters.¹⁶

¹² According to Gould (Investigations), in every million of men measured for military service there are :—

47 above 2007 Mm.	7 above 2083 Mm.
22 — 2032	6 — 2108
11 — 2057	2 — 2134

¹³ According to Gould (Investigations, p. 152), of 500 Iroquois, 159 men of 31 years and upwards reached a height of 68'6 inches.

¹⁴ Gould, p. 153.

¹⁵ Weisbach, p. 216. Fritsch, *Eingeborne Südafrika's*, p. 397.

¹⁶ Ashango Land, p. 319. The average stature of six women was 4ft. 8½ or 1420 mm.

Again, the Acka, seen by the traveller Schweinfurth in the region of the Gazelle Nile, are somewhat similar, although they attain the height of 1500 mm.¹⁷ It is a significant fact that the polar nations of both the Old and the New World must be added to this list of tropical families. The statements made by Pauw, giving 1300 mm. (4 ft. 3'182027 in.) as the average stature of the Eskimo, are, it is true, totally discredited by other measurements now before us, *i.e.*

HEIGHT OF THE ESKIMO.

Observer.	Locality in which the observation was made.	Mm.	Eng. feet. inches.
Beechey	Melville Island ...	1659	5ft. 5'23514061
"	Boothia Sound ...	1689	5ft. 4'41526431
"	Kotzebue Sound ...	1714	5ft. 7'38479248
Chappel	Savage Island ..	1670	5ft. 5'97644404

1380 mm. (4 ft. 6'18094862 in.) is also certainly less than the average of the Laplanders;¹⁸ still both these nations are universally reckoned by travellers among the diminutive races of mankind. At all events we may confidently assert that human families remarkable for their small size exist in every latitude.

Hitherto we have taken the size of the men only into consideration, but we have now to note that a lower stature is one of the secondary characters of the female sex. Among women the average size fluctuates within much narrower limits, namely, from 1395 mm. (4 ft. 6'77151047 in.) to 1662 mm. (5 ft. 5'32625298 in.)¹⁹ The measurements which have already been made also show that the difference of size in the two sexes almost disappears among the diminutive nations.²⁰ Thus Fritsch found 1448 mm. (4 ft. 8'57690392 in.) to be the average of five Bushwomen, or 4 mm. more than in the case of men, and this is corroborated by the statements of Weisbach. Accordingly, it is the male sex which is

¹⁷ Petermann's *Geograph. Mittheilungen*, pp. 139-150. 1871.

¹⁸ According to Tenon as cited by Gould (*Investigations*), p. 144, and Weisbach, p. 216.

¹⁹ Weisbach.

²⁰ Fritsch, *Eingeborne Südafrika's*, p. 398.

specially contemplated in speaking of tall or short nations.²¹ The average stature of the male sex we shall take to be from 1600 mm. (5 ft. 2.993264 in.) to 1700 mm. (5 ft. 6.930343 in.), the medium height of the female sex at 1525 mm. (5 ft. 0.04045475 in.) to 1575 mm. (5 ft. 1.96899425 in.), and according to this standard we shall separate mankind into the short, medium, and tall families.

Venturing to express some conjectures concerning the causes of variations in stature, we would point out that this mass of measurements of recruits made during the American war, show that large bodily dimensions are dependent on a prolonged period of growth. This we conceive to be shortened in the case of women by the earlier maturity of their sex. It is also probable that the full development of the body is impeded by precocious marriages, which, as we shall see, occur among the polar nations and the Bushmen.

Numerous measurements are alone capable of enlightening us as to what proportions the individual parts and members of the human frame attain in different districts. Quetelet thought that the human type in Belgium harmonized with the estimates derived from the works of Grecian sculptors.²² But it appears that the ancient artists did not blindly follow an invariable rule, just as in later times great masters, such as Leonardo da Vinci and Albrecht Dürer, did not agree in their notions of so-called symmetry. A Belgian painter, moreover, is wont to study drawing so constantly from the great masterpieces of antiquity that their proportions become at last impressed upon him as strictly imperative. He will often hire or reject a female model for his studies from nature according as to whether she approaches or departs from the desired ideal. Hence, if in ten of the female models employed by the sculptors or painters of Brussels, the average proportions of individual parts of the body approximated very closely to the like

²¹ Beechey as cited by Weisbach gives the following measurements of Eskimo:—

	Men.	Women.
Melville Island	1659 mm.	1536.6 mm.
Savage Island	1679	1549.3
Boothia Sound	1689	1571.3

²² Anthropométrie, p. 86. Brussels, 1870.

averages in antique statues, Quetelet ought not to have inferred an identity in the Belgian and ancient Greek types, but rather to have admired the quick eyes of the Belgian artists, which were able with unerring glance to eliminate from among the candidates for this profession such as differed too much from the recognized ideal. The height of the head, which with many artists constitutes the standard of measurement, varies, as we will here note, with the dimensions of the body. Taking the perpendicular height of the skull as the unit, the stature, according to Welcker's estimate, is in new-born infants as 5 : 6, in boys of eight years of age 8 : 4, in short men it is as 11 : 9, in men of average stature 12 : 1, in tall men 13 : 2, so that tall people have, relatively, the smallest heads.²³

The proportions of the human limbs cannot be expressed unless the height of the body be taken as the standard. During the voyage of the frigate *Novara*, Von Scherzer and Schwarz extended their measurements of living men to the minutest details. The length of lower and upper limbs must always appear of the greatest importance. The part of the leg below the thigh is usually so related to the thigh that greater shortness of the former is compensated by increased length of the latter. This lower part of the leg is always longer than the thigh. If the latter be estimated at 1000, we find that in a native of Stewart's Island the lower leg reaches 1238, and in New Zealanders may, in exceptional cases, sink below 1000, even to 965. But it appears that the native of Stewart's Island, if we reckon the height of the body at 1000, has a very short thigh of 198 mm. (7·81341642 in.), the New Zealander a very long one of 229 mm.²⁴ (9·02491101 in.) The length of the leg also varies considerably. In the Chinese it may be only the 0·444th part of the height of the body, and in Bushmen it may be the 0·515th.

But the proportions of the upper limbs are much more important, as their comparative shortness forms a character which separates man from the animals which most resemble him. Carl Vogt has expressed this relation by stating that the orang, in an erect posture, is able to touch its ankles, the gorilla the middle of the

²³ Bau und Wachsthum des Schädels, p. 31.

²⁴ Weisbach, Reise der Fregatte *Novara*, part ii. p. 255. Anthropologie.

tibia, the chimpanzee the knee, with the tips of their fingers; whereas man can scarcely reach as far as the middle of the thigh.²⁵ In the recruits for the American war, special attention was paid to this particular proportion of the human frame, and measurements were made of the interval between the middle finger in a stiff military attitude, and the upper edge of the knee-cap. In white men, American and European, the average amounted to 5"036,²⁶ in the negroes of the Free States 3"298, or somewhat more than in the negroes of the Slave States (2"832); while in the latter, the variations were so great that, in individual cases, the tips of the fingers actually rested on the edge of the knee-cap.

DISTANCE FROM THE FINGER-TIPS TO THE UPPER EDGE OF
THE KNEE-CAP.

No. of Measurements.	Medium.	Minimum.	Maximum.
2020 Pure-bred Negroes 	2" 88	— 0" 5	7" 6
863 Hybrids 	4" 13	+ 0" 2	7" 2

It is also a curious fact that habits of life are capable of affecting these variations, for in the case of 1146 sailors the average of this distance was somewhat greater than in landmen.

DISTANCE FROM THE FINGER-TIPS TO THE UPPER EDGE OF
THE KNEE-CAP.

	New England.	New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania.	England.	Ireland.
Soldiers ...	4" 93	- 4" 92	4" 90	5" 08
Sailors ...	5" 57	6" 06	5" 55	6" 07
Difference ...	" 64	1" 14	" 65	" 99

Thus the sailors' arms were shorter and their legs longer than those of the recruits who offered themselves for service in the

²⁵ Vorlesungen über den Menschen, vol. i. p. 193.

²⁶ Gould, Investigations, p. 279.

field. According to the average of the different States, the length of the arm varied in American whites and Europeans from 0·429 of the height of the body (Michigan, Wisconsin, Illinois), to 0·441 (Scandinavia).²⁷ Pure-bred negroes of the Slave States (0·452) displayed a relatively greater length of arm than the negroes of the Free States (0·447), a proportion occurring also in mulattoes (0·445 and 0·460). The value of averages taken from large numbers is again palpable, for we here perceive far slighter fluctuations than other racial measurements would have led us to expect. According to Weisbach,²⁸ we find the arms of the Germans reckoned at 0·469 of the length of the body, that of the Slavonians at 0·467, of the Roumanians at 0·452, in a native of Stewart's Island at 0·511, and in a Sulu Malay, measured by Wilkes, at 0·409. With such an amount of individual fluctuation, no characteristics, reliable in the delineation of races, can be deduced from existing statements, until we multiply our measurements of the different human families at least a hundred-fold.

Finally, the relative length of the fore-arm, as compared with the upper-arm, was statistically ascertained by measurements of the body taken during the voyage of the frigate Novara round the world. In the case of the orang, the result was a proportion of 877:1000. Precisely the same ratio was found in the Madurese. In the Roumanians the fore-arm even reaches a relative length of 883, and in the Slavonians of at least 868. The proportions of Australians, Sundanese, and negroes also are nearly those of the orang; those of German men differ most from these (835); while the proportions sink as low as 822 in German women.²⁹ Once more we must deplore the scanty supply of measurements; yet from those which we already have we find that the proportions of the human limbs vary considerably in the nations of the same race, and again individually in the nations themselves; that even habits of life may influence growth, so that difference of dimensions in the structure of the limbs must be declared inconstant.

²⁷ Gould, *Investigations*, pp. 298, 299.

²⁸ Weisbach, p. 251.

²⁹ *Ibid*, pp. 242, 243.

V.—THE SKIN AND HAIR OF MANKIND.

THE old geographers believed duskiness of skin to increase in proportion to the nearness of the equator, and that the latitude of a people's abode may be inferred from their colour.¹ No experience within the territory then known contradicted this dogma. In the North dwelt fair, in Southern Europe and the north of Africa light-brown nations, on the Upper Nile negroes, and in India dusky people. More correct views were attained only when the Spaniards encountered people of a swarthy tint in every latitude of the New World, some lighter, some darker, according to the locality, but in no way corresponding to their equatorial position. Among the Abipones of Paraguay the hair was so fair, especially among the women, that in European costume they might have been mistaken for European women, while the Puelchas and Aucas, whose territory lay ten degrees of latitude further from the equator, were of a much darker hue.² It was even noticed that exactly in the most northerly parts of the Old World, the brown Laplanders, Voguls, and Ostiaks lived nearer the pole than the fair-haired nations.

Microscopic research as yet only teaches us that the human skin consists of two layers, of which the external one is designated the outer skin (epidermis), the inner one, the true skin (cutis). The outer skin again consists of two parts, namely, the upper transparent cuticle (stratum corneum), and the lower stratum mucosum or Malpighian tissue (rete Malpighi). The true skin (cutis) and the outer layer of the cuticle are recognized as homogeneous in all families of mankind, and it is only in the Malpighian tissue, enclosed between them, that the cells containing the finely granulated colouring matter are seen. According as these pigment cells are limited to the lower surface of the Malpighian tissue, or are more and more massed together, in rare cases are extending upwards into the cuticle, so does the darkness

¹ Pliny, vi. 22.

² Dobrizhoffer, *Geschichte der Abiponer*, vol. ii. p. 18. Vienna, 1783.

of the complexion proportionately increase. Certain parts of the body are coloured in all human races, such as the nipple, which, moreover, becomes darker during pregnancy.³ Freckles, moles, and claret-marks are also exactly analogous to the skin of the negro.⁴

The negro child is not born black, but of a colour almost like that of European children. Pruner Bey describes the colour as reddish tinged with nut brown, and adds that the full colouring makes its appearance in the first year in the Soudan, but in Lower Egypt only in the third year.⁵ Camper also saw a negro child which was reddish at birth, but became coloured first on the margin of the nails, on the third day in the sexual parts, and during the fifth and sixth days over the whole body.⁶ The eyes of negro infants are blue at first, their hair chestnut, and crimped only at the ends.⁷ Among the Pimos, or Pimas, in the north-west of Mexico, as well as among the Australians, infants are fair or dirty yellow at birth, but after a few days resemble their parents in the darkness of their skin.⁸ The Prince of Neuwied was informed that the Botocudo children are born yellow, but soon turn brown,⁹ although he inconsistently extols the fairness of the adults. The children of mulattoes and mulatto women are said to come into the world with black patches, especially in the region of the reproductive organs. On the colour of the skin depends the odour of the effluvia. Especially obnoxious are the strongly ammoniacal, rancid, goat-like exhalations of the negro,¹⁰ which,

³ Blumenbach mentions a young woman who, during pregnancy, became as black as a negress. A similar case of melanism was observed by Dr. Guyétant. Quatrefages, *Unité de l'espèce humaine*, p. 65. Paris, 1861.

⁴ Flourens as cited by Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. i. p. 113.

⁵ Pruner Bey, *Mémoire sur les Nègres*, p. 327.

⁶ Waitz, vol. i. p. 114. ⁷ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. ii. p. 318.

⁸ Waitz, *Anthropologie*. In Latham (*Varieties*), on the other hand, we find it asserted that at Hawaii (Sandwich Islands) the Polynesian children are born completely black. vol. iv. p. 202, vol. vi. p. 713.

⁹ *Reise nach Brasilien*. The Jesuit Lafitau says very decidedly that the children of the North American Redskins "are born white like our own" (*Mœurs des Sauvages américains*, vol. i. p. 104. Paris, 1724).

¹⁰ Bacmeister, *Reise nach Brasilien*, vol. i. p. 433. Berlin, 1853. It is said that the skins of Arabians returning from Africa emit a noxious smell, which is only lost in course of time; and in corpulent South Europeans, in a feverish condition, an almost negro-like exhalation is said to be developed.

wafted over the ocean by currents of air, used to give notice of the distant approach of a slave-ship. We, too, are recognizable by the gases we emit, or the dog would not be able to follow the track of his master. The nations of the New World are distinguished from the Europeans by their odour, while the Creoles¹¹ even have expressions for the slight effluvia of the Americans (*catinca*), and for the exceptionally strong and repulsive smell of the Araucanians (*soreno*).¹²

It is only in the absence of other and more constant distinctive marks of the various human families that we venture to employ the colour of the skin for such a purpose, for the degree of darkness, and even the tone, varies in every race, and often even in the members of a single horde. Even in Europe, we meet with people of fair or dark complexion. The former is more common in the north, the latter in the south. There are many fair Italians, Spaniards, and Portuguese; while, on the other hand, dark complexions are not rare in England. The Celts of Gaul are described by the old geographers of the imperial age as a fair race of men; so that, as the epithet is no longer applicable to the French of the present day, we may conclude that characters of this sort may alter in comparatively short periods. Among the Wakilema of Eastern Africa, German travellers noticed a light negro colour with a tinge of blue in some individuals, but others surpassing mulattoes in fairness, although there were no grounds for suspecting an intermixture.

It is undeniable that latitude does affect the colouring of the skin in some degree, though in a manner as yet unascertained. We find the deepest shade of black only in the neighbourhood of the equator, in Africa, India, and New Guinea. The natives in the vicinity of Moreton Bay, in Australia, were as dark as any negro, while ten degrees southwards copper colour became more common.¹² Among the members of the Mediterranean race, the Abyssinians are very dark; among the Indo-European, the gipsies and Brahminical Hindoos are the darkest of all. In the latter, an admixture with the aboriginal inhabitants might be conjectured;

¹¹ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. i. pp. 114, 118.

¹² *Ibid*, vol. i. p. 52.

yet Graul was able to distinguish a man of high caste, *i.e.*, an Indian of Aryan origin from the Tamuls, by the almost European fairness of his skin.¹³ That it is not the rays of the sun which produce the darkening of the complexion is evident from the fact that, in coloured men, the covered portions of the body are equally dark. But if a higher temperature were the cause, we should find darker skins in all lowland than in elevated regions. This hypothesis is indeed somewhat confirmed by a comparison between the inhabitants of Bengal and the hill people of the Himalayas, who are much fairer, and the same is observable in the inhabitants of the mountain plains of Enarea and Kaffa in Abyssinia. Other observers in the very same regions have, however, found the inhabitants of the valleys the fairest.¹⁴ Munzinger adds that the sultry shore of the Red Sea is occupied by fair people, and the mountain districts by dark people.¹⁵ Still more conclusive is the fact that, of all the aborigines of America, in whom no suspicion of admixture is possible, the Aymara, who occupy plateaux of the same altitude as the summits of the Bernese Oberland, are most remarkable for their black-brown colour, which is deepest precisely in the coldest tracts.¹⁶ Other observers imagined the skin to be darkest in places where a hot temperature is combined with an atmosphere highly saturated with moisture. Livingstone thinks damp heat is the cause of the deep colouring in South Africa.¹⁷ The dark Aymara in the dry, cold land of Peru and Bolivia, bear witness against this conjecture, while the Yuracara, whose very name indicates a pale countenance, occupy the eastern slopes of the South American Cordilleras, which are constantly dripping with moisture.¹⁸

Still we must always bear in mind that a European who lives long in the East Indies is obliged to adapt himself to an alteration in his customary physiological functions. The difference in colour between arterial and venous blood is strikingly diminished in

¹³ *Reise nach Ostindien*, vol. iv. pp. 151, 152. Leipzig, 1855.

¹⁴ Quatrefages, *Rapport*, p. 155.

¹⁵ *Ausland*, p. 954. 1869.

¹⁶ Von Tschudi, *Reisen durch Südamerika*, vol. v. p. 212.

¹⁷ *Missionary Journeys in South Africa*, vol. i. p. 378.

¹⁸ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. ii. 347.

Europeans in tropical countries, because, owing to a feebler process of combustion, the absorption of oxygen is smaller.¹⁹ On the other hand, the biliary secretions become more active in hot countries. So that by overwork of an organ destined for comparative repose, namely, of the liver, in a native of high latitudes, of the lungs, in a native of the tropics, the former frequently falls a victim to bilious fevers in the hot climate so uncongenial to him, while the latter when transferred to cold regions frequently perishes of consumption.²⁰ A European who has survived the change, loses his rosy complexion under the tropics. It is even recorded that an English gentleman, Macnaughton by name, who long lived the life of a native in the jungle of Southern India acquired, even on the clothed portions of his body, a skin as brown as that of a Brahmin.²¹ A negro boy, brought from Bagirmi to Germany by Gerhard Rohlfs, changed his colour after a residence of two years, from "deep black to light brown."²² If an increased secretion of bile influences the accumulation of pigment cells in the mucous layer of the lower skin, the darkness of the Lapps and Finns may be ascribed to their uncleanness, the impure air of their dwellings, and their unwholesome food, since these also affect the biliary secretions.²³

It had long been known that negro races enjoy complete health in Equatorial Africa, while Europeans are quickly carried off by coast fevers. In America the yellow fever spares the negroes and even the mulattoes. Now, if there were a causal connection between the darkness of the skin and immunity from local diseases, it would be evident that on the first colonization of fever districts those individuals who were already brown or who became swarthy, would readily overcome the perils of the situation, while those who were paler would be earlier swept away, and in consequence of this elimination a darkening of the skin might gradually become

¹⁹ J. R. Mayer, *Die Mechanik der Wärme*, p. 97. Stuttgart, 1867.

²⁰ Bastian in *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*, part i. 1869.

²¹ Pruner Bey, *Questions relatives à l'Anthropologie*, p. 5. Paris, 1864.

²² *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*, p. 255. 1871. Other instances of negroes becoming lighter are given by Waitz on the authority of Blumenbach. *Anthrop.* i. 60.

²³ Richard Owen, *Anatomy of Vertebrates*, vol. iii. p. 615.

hereditary.²⁴ This is a mere conjecture as yet incapable of proof, but possessing the single advantage of being the only attempt at an explanation. It must be added, however, that Dr. Nachtigal reports that the black natives of the Soudan succumbed to the marsh fever after the inundations in Kuka as rapidly as the foreign immigrants.²⁵

Among the preëminently hereditary physical characteristics of man is his covering of hair. It is true the colour of the hair is variable, even in individuals, since it arises from a pigment, the disappearance of which produces the whiteness of old age. Red hair occurs in almost all parts of the world, except America. Dumont d'Urville²⁶ says he saw it even among Australians. It is not uncommon among Finnish tribes, nor among the Berbers of Northern Africa. In Morocco there are even some of the latter with light eyes and fair hair,²⁷ while even Scylax knew of the Gyzantis in the Lesser Syrtis as fair Libyans.²⁸ According to Manetho, the Egyptian queen Nitokris, who belonged to the sixth dynasty, was distinguished for her fair complexion, rosy cheeks, and light hair.²⁹ Fair hair is also traceable in mummies of the Guanches, the extinct inhabitants of the Canary Islands, who were a branch of the Berbers.³⁰ Even among the Monbuttoos, on the Uellé, Schweinfurth saw many fair negroes of a grayish tinge.³¹ Of the Federal soldiers in the American civil war, 5 per cent. of the Spaniards and Portuguese, and 51 per cent. of the Scandinavians, had red, or some sort of light hair.³² These shades of hair occasionally appear among Armenians, Semitic Syrians, and Jews, and in hybrids of European and native Peruvians about Moyobamba.³³ Hence, although we must not entirely overlook

²⁴ From an address by Dr. Wells before the Royal Society in 1813. Darwin, *Origin of Species*, p. 3; and *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 214.

²⁵ *Zeitschrift für Erdkunde*, vol. vi. p. 335. Berlin, 1871.

²⁶ *Voyage de l'Astrolabe*, p. 404.

²⁷ G. Rohlf's *Erster Aufenthalt in Marokko*, p. 60. Bremen, 1873.

²⁸ Scylax *Periplus*, cap. 110. *Geogr. Graeci Minores*, ed Müller, i. p. 88.

²⁹ Lauth, *Aegyptische Reisebriefe*, p. 1335. *Allgem. Zeitung*, 1873.

³⁰ Peschel, *Zeitalter der Entdeckungen*, p. 54.

³¹ *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*, vol. v. p. 15. Berlin, 1873.

³² Gould, *Investigations in Military and Anthropological Statistics*, p. 193.

³³ Raymondi's *Geografía del Peru* in the *Globus*, vol. xxi. p. 300.

the colour of the hair, in describing nations, it is certainly a very inconstant character. The form of the hair is of far greater importance. Neighbouring nations may sometimes be easily separated from one another by this character, although it is impossible to draw an invariable line. The aborigines of America, without exception, have stiff, coarse hair; the Papuan is distinguished by his crown of hair from the Australian, whose hair, although frizzly, does not unite in tufts. The character of the hair, and especially that of the hair of the head, may be described as smooth or straight, as curly or gracefully waved, as frizzly, or finally as tufted. The causes of the crimping and twisting are manifold; one is, the size of the diameter, for the finer the hair, the more readily is it affected by the causes of crimping; since the human hair is never as soft as sheep's wool, no genuine wool like that of animals is found on man. But for our purpose, the form of the transverse section is of greater importance; this is sometimes circular, sometimes elliptically compressed, so that hair may vary from the form of a cylinder to that of a doubly convex band. Although considerable variations occur in individual representatives of a race, yet Pruner Bey hoped to make use of the averages of size, as a serviceable means for the classification of human races. If the greater diameter of the section is taken at 100, the flatter the hair, the lower will be the number expressing the short diameter. The most perfectly cylindrical form, with a short diameter of 95, occurs in the South Americans, while the mummies of the Aymara in Peru have an average diameter of 89. The Mongols, in whom the compression fluctuates between 81 and 91, approach nearest to the inhabitants of the New World in this point. In the Papuans of New Guinea, the smaller diameter of the hair is shorter than in any other people, varying from 26 to 56 in extreme cases, with a mean of 34. This is another point of difference between the Australians, who have an index of 67 and 75, and the Papuans. It is also significant that the Hottentots nearly agree with the Papuans, for in them the smaller diameter is as low as from 55 to 50.³⁴ Yet sharp distinctions cannot be drawn by this means, but

³⁴ Pruner Bey, *De la Chevelure*, p. 15. Paris, 1863. Goette on the other hand found only a small diameter among the Afandy.

we learn that with greater flatness of the hair, especially if combined with greater fineness, the tendency to become curly and frizzly is considerably increased.

It is necessary to distinguish between frizzly hair and the fascicular agglomeration of many hairs into separate ropes, which have not been inaptly compared to the matted locks about the ears of a thorough-bred poodle. Both Dr. Maklucho Maclay and Dr. A. B. Meyer say that the hair of the Papuans is as evenly distributed on the scalp as in the case of Europeans; the latter adds that it is only when the hair is not combed that it becomes matted into tufts. This tuft-like combination is aided by an external cement, that is to say, by the secretion of grease and tallow.³⁵ By their tufted locks it is possible actually to distinguish the separate branches of the Papuan race from Malay and Australian tribes. This character is far less trustworthy in South Africa. There the tufted growth of hair is most distinctly marked in the Hottentots, in the Bushmen who resemble them in bodily structure, and in some scattered tribes in the interior of Africa, extending to the neighbourhood of the equator.³⁶ The agglomeration of the hair into separate tufts was supposed to be visible in heads recently shorn, which, to quote a prosaic but accurate remark of Barrow's, look and feel like a worn-out blacking-brush. The coarseness of this hair, however, prevents its comparison with sheep's wool. Unfortunately, neither is this character quite peculiar to one family of nations, for according to Gustav Fritsch, the hair of the South African Bantu negroes is matted, though in a slighter degree, into small tufts.³⁶ This growth of hair occurs not only in the Amaxosa Kaffirs,³⁷ in whom there is probably some admixture of blood, as they have adopted some of the clicking sounds of the Hottentot language, but is also often plainly perceptible, and is indeed never entirely absent, in the Betschuans who live more in the interior. Hence, owing to its gradual transitions, this character affords no means of sharply separating nations into classes. Frizzly hair, which marks African negroes and Australians, is distinguishable

³⁵ Goette, *Das Haar des Buschweibes*, p. 34. Tübingen, 1867.

³⁶ Fritsch, *Die Eingebornen Südafrika's*, pp. 15, 16, 275, 276.

³⁷ Fritsch, *Atlas*, plates xi.-xx.

from the matted form by the absence of tufts, and from the curly hair by its shortness, its strong spiral twist, and a longitudinal division which separates the hair into two flat bands.³⁸ Without this last character, if the hair be coarser and more cylindrical, we get a slighter curvature of the masses of hair such as we see in the curls of Europeans and Semites. Finally the coarsest and roundest hair is a persistent character of the American Indians and their kindred in Northern and Eastern Asia. Where a mixture has taken place between the frizzly-haired Africans and the coarse and straight-haired American Indians, the hair preserves its crispness but increases in length and rigidity. In these Cafusos, as such hybrids are called in Brazil, a profusion of hair standing up from the head is developed, which gives them a deceptive resemblance to the Papuans.³⁹ The hair of the latter probably surpasses that of all other nations, in point of thickness of growth. In length of hair on the head, the hunting tribes of North America are unrivalled.⁴⁰ That of the men of the Blackfeet, and of the Sioux or Dacotas, reaches nearly to the heels, and in one Crowhead it actually attained a length of 10 ft. 7 in.⁴¹

The hairy covering of other parts of the body is more or less abundant, but is sometimes wanting in both sexes. The covering most rarely disappears about the parts of generation. Its scantiness or entire absence in North Asiatic Mongols, in American and Malay families, as well as in Hottentots and Bushmen, afford some of the most persistent and best authenticated racial characters, only it must be added that the natural baldness of the body is artificially exaggerated by the careful extraction of single hairs. The beard is either wanting or is extremely limited in all nations with stiff coarse hair, namely, in American Indians, Northern and Eastern Asiatics, as well as in Malays. It is scantily developed in Hottentots; it appears more abundantly and more frequently in negroes of Central and Southern Africa. In all those races,

³⁸ Goette.

³⁹ On the origin of the name Cafuz, see Martius, *Ethnographie*, vol. i. p. 150. In Guayana they are called Cabocles, or Capucres. Appun in the Ausland, 1872, p. 967.

⁴⁰ Pruner Bey, *Chevelure*, p. 4.

⁴¹ Catlin. *North American Indians*, vol. i. p. 49.

whiskers are not to be found, or only as a rarity. The Australians may easily be distinguished from their Malay and Polynesian neighbours by their scanty beards, while a profusion of beard distinguishes the Papuans. A luxuriant growth of hair on the body is one of the distinctive marks of the Semitic as well as of the Indo-European families. In Southern Europeans, especially in Portuguese and Spaniards, this character is most strongly developed. Beyond all the nations in the world the Ainos, the inhabitants of Jezo, Saghalien, and the Kuriles have had the reputation, since the visit of La Pérouse, of possessing an almost animal-like covering of hair on the upper part of the body.⁴² Recent observers have considerably modified this exaggeration, and it appears that the Ainos could not even be compared with European sailors. Wilhelm Heine found the beards of the Ainos only five or six inches long, the chest and neck were bald, and only in a single individual were seen a few tufts of hair on the above-named parts.⁴³ Nevertheless, even this moderate degree of hairiness in the neighbourhood of such beardless people as the Japanese and Chinese, is perplexing when we try to place the Ainos in our division of races, for we are obliged to reckon the appearance of hair on the body among the most persistent distinctive marks of human races. Although among 2129 mulattoes and negroes of the 25th Army Corps who, at the time of the American civil war, were observed by physicians while bathing, only 9 proved to be quite hairless, while 21 on the other hand exhibited the highest degree, and two-thirds were on the average as hairy as white soldiers,⁴⁴ we must not infer that the exchange

⁴² La Pérouse (*Voyage autour du Monde*, vol. iii. p. 125. Paris, 1798) contents himself with asserting that among the inhabitants of Saghalien in the Bay of Crillon, an amount of beard and hair on the arms and neck, such as is rare in Europeans, is with them the rule.

⁴³ W. Heine, *China, Japan, and Ochotzk*. H. O. Brandt, German Consul in Japan, expressed himself in accordance with the statements of W. Heine at the sittings of the Anthropological Society of Berlin, held December 10th, 1871. (Compare their *Verhandlungen*, p. 27. Berlin, 1872.) In the Narrative of the Expedition under Comm. M. C. Parry (Washington, 1856), vol. i. p. 454, by Francis L. Hawks, mention is made only of the strong growth of beard and great hairiness of the legs in the Ainos in the vicinity of Hakodadi.

⁴⁴ Gould, *Investigations*, pp. 568, 569.

of an African home for the New World has occasioned the growth of the hair of the body. This is perhaps the place in which to refute the mistaken idea that negroes belong to the smooth-skinned nations. Their beard, it is true, is not so fully developed as in the Mediterranean nations, but it is more abundant than in the Koi-Koin (Hottentots), and incomparably more so than in the Mongoloid families of the Old and New World. Even whiskers are not entirely absent, as some people have maintained, and in some tribes the chests of the men are always overgrown with hair, and in others occasionally.⁴⁵

In summing up, we must needs confess that neither the shape of the skull nor any other portion of the skeleton has afforded distinguishing marks of the human races; that the colour of the skin likewise displays only various gradations of darkness, and that the hair alone comes to the aid of our systematic attempts, and even this not always, and never with sufficient decisiveness. Who, then, can presume to talk of the immutability of racial types? To base a classification of the human race on the character of the hair only, as Haeckel has done, was a hazardous venture, and could but end as all other artificial systems have ended. In the separation of the Koi-Koin from the Bantu negroes, this system has led to errors, and the combination of Australians, as a so-called straight-haired people, with the Mongols is due to ignorance of facts.

⁴⁵ Comp. the Barolong negro in Fritsch's Atlas (Eingeborne Südafrika's), and the description of the Kissama negro given by Hamilton in the Journal of the Anthropol. Institute, vol. i. p. 187. London, 1872.

LINGÜISTIC CHARACTERS.

LINGUISTIC CHARACTERS.

I.—THE EVOLUTIONARY HISTORY OF HUMAN LANGUAGE.

IF speech be but the means of communicating emotions or intentions to other beings, even invertebrate animals possess faculties of the same nature. We see insects, such as ants, which live in so-called communities, carrying out elaborately preconcerted war-like undertakings and attacks. A beetle which, in rolling the ball of dung enclosing its egg, has allowed it to slip into a hole, from which it is unable to extricate it, flies away, to return in a short time with a number of assistants sufficient to push the ball up the sides of the declivity by co-operation of labour. These creatures must, therefore, unquestionably possess some means of communicating with each other concerning this combination. It requires no long observation of our song-birds to distinguish the different tones by which they warn their young of danger, or call them to feed, or by which they attract each other to pair. These animals, therefore, have at their control a certain number of signals, which are quite adequate to procure for them some few of the wants of their life, and these signals, as far as we can at present guess, have been acquired and inherited in the same manner as were their instincts. The need of communication is almost more various and urgent in the dog than in any other animal. We fully understand his bark, whether it signifies pleasure, dissatisfaction, a warning of danger, a definite wish, or a declaration of hostility. The dog does not use his voice only, but snarls and gnashes his teeth. With some justice the bark of the dog has been described

as an animal's first attempt to speak.¹ But this talent was acquired by intercourse with talkative man, for European dogs, deposited on solitary islands, lost the habit of barking, and produced a dumb posterity, which reacquired the use of the vocal apparatus only after renewed association with mankind.

Human speech, however, is distinguished from the sounds of intelligence used by animals, not only by a greater range of communications, but also by the power of proclaiming not only perceptions, but cognitions which lie beyond the mental faculties of animals. If the bark of the dog be the first attempt at speech, we may add that the attempt is as yet a failure. The animal has not even got so far as to appropriate a call to any particular person. As soon as the child is so far matured as consciously to call its father or mother, its first attempt to speak has been completely successful. An animal can never communicate such simple cognitions as are implied in the words light, warm, sweet, hard, sharp, blue, red.

As history and experience daily teach us that languages alter, and at the same time increase in compass; that their formation, therefore, never stands still, and that these transformations and additions are certainly derived from ourselves, it ought never to have been disputed that man was the creator of his own language. Yet an endeavour has been made to ascribe the first beginning to a supernatural process. But if human speech be regarded as the only difference which, as it were, at once divides us from our fellow-beings in the animal world, our mental faculties are degraded, and this chasm is narrowed by those who maintain that man did not evolve his noblest distinction by his own resources. If this denial is due to morbid bigotry, we need but call to mind that the Scriptures themselves emphatically describe speech as man's own creation (Gen. ii. 19, 20).

Whoever wishes to obtain a clear conception of the first beginnings of human language, must first take warning that all comparisons of existing vocabularies mislead him. If we only trace back for a few centuries the names of towns and countries, we shall see how, in the course of time, they have been

¹ C. Geiger, *Ursprung der Sprache*, p. 190.

deceptively metamorphosed beyond recognition. A. Bacmeister tells us that Wildenschwerdt was originally Wilhelmswerd; Waldsee (Württemberg) is corrupted from Walchsee, Oehringen from Oringau, Welzheim from Walinzin, Holzbach from Heroldsbach. Only 300 years ago Martin Luther could still write that "Gott thue nichts als schlechtes, und das Evangelium sei eine kindische Lehre"—*God does nothing but what is bad, and the Gospel is a childish doctrine.*² But at that time schlecht (bad) meant something schlichtes (smooth, honest, upright), as in the idiom "recht und schlecht" (upright and downright), and kindisch (childish) something kindliches (child-like). It is with no malicious significance that in the south of Germany every male child is termed a *Bube*, while in the north this expression now signifies only a reprobate; just as in English the word *knave*, corresponding to *Knabe* (boy), has acquired an unfavourable interpretation. We thus learn the important lesson that the meaning by no means adheres firmly to a phonetic combination, but that even in allied languages it is imperceptibly withdrawn, and even transferred to other phonetic groups.

The fact that the idea is thus independent of its phonetic expression, refutes the assertion so often made, that we think only in inwardly spoken language. On the contrary, thought without the aid of language accompanies nearly all our every-day acts. The musician also constructs his creations with a rhythmical succession of sounds; the painter selects colour to express his thoughts or his frame of mind, the sculptor selects the human form, the architect lines and surfaces, the geometrician limitations of space, the mathematician expressions of quantity. Were language, on the contrary, the strict and necessary phonetic embodiment of thought, thought would everywhere be expressed in the sounds.

We must, therefore, regard the connection of a certain meaning with certain phonetic combinations as something merely transitory. Philologists who have traced back the development of the Indo-European languages as far as records make it possible, were ultimately able to collect a number of roots which we must con-

² L. Geiger, pp. 64, 72.

sider as the oldest philological material obtainable.³ Yet we have no positive evidence that these roots were the primordial elements; we may rather assume that they also had undergone phonetic transformation before they reached us. Some nations, it is true, have the power of preserving phonetic combinations longer and more accurately, while others deal less steadily with the apparatus for the expression of ideas; still it may be asserted generally, that the stability of a language increases with the number of speakers, and at the same time with the more perfect organization of society. The extraordinary number of languages in North America is closely connected with the restless habits of the wandering hunting tribes. Where, on the contrary, well-organized societies existed, as in ancient Peru, the predominant Ketshua language prevailed over more than twenty degrees of latitude.

It has been explained by earlier writers that the belief in an existence after death accelerated the metamorphosis of language. The names of the departed were not mentioned for fear of summoning the ghost of the person mentioned. Many nations do not even dare to utter the real name of their deity, and something of the sort is enjoined in the third Sinaitic commandment. When the black small-pox broke out among the Dyaks of Borneo, every one fled in terror to the solitudes of the forest. No one ventured to call the disease by its name, but it was spoken of as the "jungle leaves," or "Datu" (chieftain), or people simply said, "is *he* gone?"⁴ But as, amongst most half-developed nations, proper names are compounded of words in daily use, new expressions must be invented to replace them.

When King Pomare died at Tahiti, the word *po* (night) vanished from the language. The same custom is, or was, observed by the Papuans of New Guinea, the Australians, and Tasmanians, the Masai of Eastern Africa, the Samoyeds, and the Fuegians. The influence of this habit on the metamorphosis of language must not, however, to be over-estimated, for when a new generation has

³ Steinthal, *Psychologie und Sprachwissenschaft*, vol. i. pp. 54, 361. Berlin, 1871. Whitney, *Language and the Study of Language*, pp. 413-420. London, 1867.

⁴ Spenser St. John, *Far East*, vol. i. pp. 61, 62. London, 1862.

grown up which does not know or fear the deceased,⁵ it may revert to the old word ; or where the prohibition only extends to one horde, and the forbidden word survives in another, it may be reintroduced by intermarriages. Nor must it be supposed that new syllables are invented, but merely that new words are concocted out of the existing ingredients of the language. Among the Abipones on the western shore of the river Paraguay, in South America, the old women are entrusted with the business of creating the new appellations. On account of deaths which had occurred, they changed the name of the tiger (jaguar) three times in seven years, and finally into *laprيرهترة*, the "speckled" or "variegated."⁶

Language is exposed to far greater risk of metamorphosis among tribes which roam over thinly populated hunting-grounds in small bands, or sometimes in single families. The requirements of daily life constrain every member of a large society to speak distinctly that he may be understood by all. Ill-trained children often invent syllables which for a time are tolerated in the household, and would become permanently established if they were not rejected in general intercourse as unknown coin. But these bad habits of children find a parallel in the customs of men among the Brazilian hunters, whose single tribes, on account of the rapid development of dialects, not only become incomprehensible to their kindred of the same language, but each obstinately adheres to his peculiar pronunciation. Martius, the traveller, complained that among his escort, although they belonged to the same horde, each clung to small dialectic differences of accent and inflection. His companions understood him as he understood his companions.⁷ For this reason the syllables naturally change with great rapidity.

It is easy to conceive the gradual growth of languages, when once the great leap was accomplished, by which the communication of an idea, or even of a want, was expressed by the

⁵ Pallas (*Voyage dans l'Empire de Russie*) expressly says that the Samoyeds at first most scrupulously avoid the name of a deceased person, but afterwards give it to a grandson or great grandson, to recall the memory of the departed.

⁶ Dobrizhoffer, *Geschichte der Abiponer*, vol. ii. pp. 235, 361.

⁷ Ausland, p. 891. 1869. Verbally communicated by the traveller.

speaker by any particular sound and understood by a fellow-creature. This first step, however, is still enveloped in profound obscurity, for the connection of a particular idea with a sound of the human voice depends on a compact between the speaker and the hearer;⁸ but it is hard to see how this compact or agreement as to the first word could be concluded when there were as yet no means of communication. According to the oldest conjecture, the process was one of phonetic representation, for by the selection of imitative sounds the attention of the listener was directed to some object of sensory perception. As all languages are rich in sonorous forms which, as it were, give a musical representation of that which they are intended to express, the first commencement was supposed to have been onomatopœic experiment. In consequence of the rapidity of phonetic changes, it was very easy for the opponents of this opinion to refute the hypothesis by observing that the older forms of the present imitative words bear no traces of phonetic representations.

We may easily be deceived by the German word *rollen* (roll), particularly if we think of rolling thunder, into a belief that it is an attempt to represent the noise. Nevertheless L. Geiger easily traced this verb, through the French *rouler*, the Latin *rotulari*, to *rota* (wheel), in which the sonorous imitation is totally absent. Yet this ingenious analyzer of languages overlooked the important circumstance that, in its transfer to the German language, a word must have arisen out of *rouler* sounding something like *ruhlen*. The fact that *rollen* (roll) was formed out of *ruhlen*, betrays an endeavour to give the word onomatopœic force, and at the same time to make it more intelligible by an alteration of sound. But as geologists infer that the changes of form such as are now taking place on and in our planet, took place from the first in like manner, we may presume, from the still undiminished love of phonetic representation, that the same propensity must have operated also in the first beginnings of linguistic evolution. Max Müller has tried to discredit this explanation with the contemptuous epithet of "bow-wow theory," because at the first creation of language the cow would be called moo and the dog bow-wow, in imitation of their

⁸ Ursprung der Sprache, p. 27.

lowing and barking. But he himself endeavours to explain the process by the aid of mysticism. Each material body, such as glass or a bell, he says, has its own peculiar resonance, and thus thought has, as it were, constrained the vocal apparatus to produce appropriate vibrations. In allusion to the sound of the bell, Max Müller's explanation has therefore been ridiculed by others as the "ding-dong theory."

In recent times the tendency has been in favour of the older view. A. Pott, the philologist, collected the various local expressions for thunder from every part of the world, and found that the majority of nations endeavour to render the sensation of this noisy phenomenon by an echo in the expression.⁹ Tylor has shown that families of mankind in distant regions of the world employ the same syllables for noisy movements in other instances. The explosion of gases under high pressure, everything that is violently blown, is designated by Malay, Australians, Africans, Asiatics, and Europeans with sounds very nearly approaching *po* or *puff*. Again, the name for ox, *βοῦς*, *bos*, *bou*, *bo*, recurs among Hottentots and Chinese.¹⁰ Neither must it be overlooked that our children in their first attempts to speak are apt to imitate with their vocal organs any sound they hear, and designate animals almost exclusively by the sounds which they emit. The circle of perceptions that may be expressed by the phonetic representation is however limited to events connected with the production of sounds, for no such representation is possible of that which is perceived by sight or the sense of touch.

The first beginnings of speech were supposed to be enriched by the spontaneous action of our vocal organs on occasions of strong internal excitement. The cry of joy and of horror still exists even in civilized nations. At birth we bring a cry with us into the world, for the infant's first sign of life consists in an exercise of its vocal organs. The cry is intelligible to us all without either instruction or practice; nay, during the first months of life, crying fully suffices for the announcement of the various requirements.

⁹ Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie und Sprachwissenschaft, vol. ii. p. 359. Berlin, 1865.

¹⁰ Primitive Culture, vol. i. p. 209.

Without the existence of any intention to speak, crying is understood, and for a time, even for a long time, children employ crying as a means of making themselves intelligible, and very soon learn to do so consciously and intentionally. At the time of the origin of language, the screams of adults may for a long time have represented speech in like manner, especially as shrill sounds are still preserved as exclamations. Only it must be remembered that our *ah* and *oh* cannot be referred to the age of the first origin of language, for exclamations such as these, in all appearance spontaneously wrung from the agonized feelings, have frequently been unmasked and shown to be abbreviated words or even idioms. The English *wounds* originated from *by God's wounds*, and *alas* from *oh me lasso*.¹¹ The negro of Western Africa exclaims in terror or surprise, *Mâmâ, māmâ*, and the Indian of New California, *Anâ*. Both signify mother, so that, like children, they call the guardian of their youth to their assistance.¹² The only important fact is that these phonetic outbursts cannot even yet be dispensed with in any civilized language. The language of animals is entirely composed of similar explosive sounds emitted by the vocal organs, and to suppose that man in every age expressed his inward emotions—pain, joy, fear, surprise, aversion—by signals such as these, needs reflection only and not proof.¹³

Accentuation is as an important auxiliary. Our *yes* and our *no* admit of a series of pronunciation by which the inquirer or petitioner may plainly hear whether the acquiescence or assent be willing or reluctant, the denial vacillating or decided, and generally in what frame of mind the utterances are made. The meaning of the German word *pfui*, when quietly pronounced, might remain completely unknown to any one not acquainted with German, but if uttered with the full emphasis of abhorrence, even a Fuegian would be able to guess that this syllable expressed the reverse of assent. Accentuation, which is intuitive and not acquired, and on the other hand not intentional but spontaneous, might materially assist mutual comprehension in the earliest stage of the con-

¹¹ Whitney, *Language and the Study of Language*, p. 277.

¹² Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 202.

¹³ Steinthal (*Psychologie und Sprachwissenschaft*, p. 376. Berlin, 1871), regards interjections as reflex sounds.

struction of language. It is assuredly not accidental that it is precisely the formless monosyllabic languages which still employ accentuation as an important auxiliary in the discrimination of like-sounding roots.

Pantomimic action and gesticulation did for the eye what accentuation did for the ear. So-called savages, without instruction, unconsciously, or at least only half consciously, exercise the art which, by laborious practice before the looking-glass, our actors are obliged to acquire afresh. The Bushmen, observes Lichtenstein, communicate with each other more by gesticulation than by speech.¹⁴ There are, however, a number of bodily movements of this description of which the sense is by no means identically interpreted by all families of mankind. It is even questioned whether, in every part of the world, clenching the fist is to be recognized as a threat, or stamping the foot as an explosion of anger. Among the Bantu negroes a popular public orator is rewarded with hisses.

Many gestures have acquired their meaning only by mutual agreement. The Turks and others assent by a shake of the head, and reply in the negative with a nod. In ancient Greece a petitioner was repelled by throwing back the head (*ἀνακνέειν*); in Southern Italy the back of the hand is laid upon the chest and the fingers are waved at the person addressed, as a summons to approach.¹⁵ And yet in every human being there is a latent power of making himself intelligible by signs. All navigators who have set foot upon a strange shore have communicated with the inhabitants by this means, and have succeeded in obtaining water or food. All over the world mankind has adopted the same pantomimic representation for the expression of their thoughts. The deaf and dumb were the inventors of their own language, which leads us to the beautiful thesis that even without vocal organs mankind would have attained the means of rendering themselves intelligible. The greater number of their signs, especially such as consist in drawing outlines in the air, are intelligible

¹⁴ *Reisen im südlichen Afrika*, vol. ii. p. 82. Berlin, 1811.

¹⁵ Kleinpaul, *Zur Theorie der Gebärdensprache*. *Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie*, vol. ii. p. 362. Berlin, 1869.

without further explanation, so that we may say that the deaf and dumb make use of the very same gesticulations which were customary in the pantomimic intercourse of the Indians from Hudson's Bay to the Gulf of Mexico. Thus by means of his usual signs a deaf and dumb Englishman was able to make himself understood by some Laplanders at a show. Finally, it is said (though the statement is subject to grave doubts) that the unfortunate Laura Bridgeman, a blind deaf-mute, cut off from all external instruction, used the ordinary pantomimic movements.¹⁶

Thus at the period of the first development of speech, there were a number of expedients for the communication of thought, while at the same time, as man is of all creatures the most sociably disposed, necessity urged him in some way or other to make himself intelligible to his neighbour. Yet it is still difficult to explain the first attempt at speech. A purpose of communicating an idea to another person by means of the vocal organs must not be assumed, for that would imply a consciousness on the part of the speaker that a sound would serve to communicate an idea. Even if the first speaker had connected a particular sound with a particular idea, yet as any sound may be connected with any idea, he had no prospect of being understood.¹⁷ Any elucidation of this obscure process would be inconceivable, had not each of us been at one time obliged to work himself up from a speechless condition. In speech, each child is obliged to repeat the experiments of mankind, only that in his course of development a great number of intermediate stages are passed over by the aid of instructors. The awakening of the power to comprehend speech, and the creation of speech, may therefore be observed anew in every child. L. Geiger rashly asserts that no new words can be invented. Young America ought to have taught him the contrary. The party name *Locofoco*, the name of a secret society *Klукlux*, the sectarian name *Mormon*, are arbitrary inventions. *Schurlemurle*, as a beverage of mixed wines is named in Würzburg, and picnic, can scarcely be derived from older expressions. Any one who has watched children must be astonished

¹⁶ Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, pp. 21, 44, 69, 86.

¹⁷ Steinthal, *Psychologie und Sprachwissenschaft*, pp. 84, 370. Berlin, 1871.

at the doubt whether articulate sounds can be combined into new groups.¹⁸ In South Africa the inhabitants of barren districts quit their settlements for a time, leaving the children under the care of a few aged people. The young ones forthwith begin to make a language of their own; the more lively are followed by the less developed, so that in the course of a single generation the nature of a language may be altered in this manner. Two words which are echoed in every language were created by children, and are created anew by every child, namely, the sounds *papa* and *mama*. The elementary sound *ma* or *pa* is by no means an attempt to speak, but merely an exercise of the vocal organs proceeding from an inward physical impulse without purpose or consciousness, in no way better or higher than the twit-twit of our chaffinches. But as long as man has wandered on this earth, parental love in blissful delusion has misunderstood the child as if a call had been intended, as if the child were yearning for its father or its mother. That these first exercises of the vocal organs determined the sound of the future word, whereas the interpretation of the parents determined the meaning, is shown by the fact that, in a certain number of languages, the sound *ba* stands for father, and *ma* for mother, while in an equal number the converse is the case.¹⁹ Other childish words for mother are *aithai* (Gothic) and *atta* (Sanskrit), the latter applying also to the elder sister. *Atta* exists also in Latin and in Greek, and also in Gothic, as an endearment for father, whence comes also the term *adde* for grandfather in German dialects. The lisping child has to pass²⁰ through various stages in the comprehension of language; for it must first learn by experience that when it cries *ba* or *ma* the parents approach or that pleasure is given to those present; the sound is then for the first time purposely uttered by the child, and it is not till much later, and not without the aid of the parents, that one sound is used as a call for the father and the other for the mother. Months and even years pass by before it dawns upon the perception that *mama* and *papa* are not proper names, but

¹⁸ Max Müller, *Science of Language*, vol. ii. p. 54.

¹⁹ A list of names for father and mother in every part of the world is to be found in d'Orbigny, *l'Homme américain*, p. 79.

²⁰ Bacmeister in the *Allgem. Zeitung*. 1871.

that with all children they are the designations of their nurses and guardians. Only at a later age does the child further discover that these names are given to its progenitors, and their full and true purport is understood even by adults only when they have experienced the joys and anxieties of parenthood. The course of development in tender years is thus approximately, if not completely, similar to the first attempts to speak made by our race.

The richness of a language is always determined by the need for communication; and we must suppose this to have been very small in the earliest evolutionary stages of our race. The English boast of a vocabulary of 100,000 words, but their field-labourers are said to be satisfied with 400. A clergyman in a Friesland island states that he could reckon no more in the case of a workman of his parish. As Kleinpaul²¹ informs us, a man of average education has from 3000 to 4000 different words at his disposal, a great orator 10,000, while in the institutions of the deaf and dumb, at Berlin, no less than 5000 signs are employed. That the number of expressions increases with the need for expression is shown by the numerical terms, which among barbarous nations seldom extend beyond 20. Alexander von Humboldt was the first to trace the origin of numerical groups of 5, 10, and 20 units to the number of the parts on the hands and feet, so that with six-fingered hands we should have arrived at the duodecimal system.²² Exceptions exist, however, especially in the Australian family, which make use of only two numerical terms; thus for 1 is said *netat*; for 2 *naes*; for 3 *naes-netat*; for 4 *naes-naes*; for 5 *naes-naes-netat*; for 6 *naes-naes-naes*.²³ Other Australian dialects have an independent expression for three, and in one linguistic region of those parts, the numerical terms reach as far as 15 or 20.²⁴ Orton maintains that the Zapparos on the Napo river in Ecuador can count only up to three, but express higher numbers by raising the fingers;²⁵ and the Prince of Wied²⁶

²¹ *Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie und Sprachwissenschaft*, vol. vi. p. 354. Berlin, 1869.

²² *Life of A. von Humboldt*, edited by Carl Bruhn, vol. iii. p. 9.

²³ Latham, *Opuscula*, p. 228. ²⁴ Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 220.

²⁵ James Orton, *The Andes and the Amazon*, p. 170. 1870.

²⁶ *Reise nach Brasilien*, vol. ii. p. 41. Frankfurt, 1825.

declares the same of the Botocudos. Closer research might, however, reveal more favourable facts respecting most of the nations mentioned, for it also has been disputed that numerical terms above three exist among the Abipones. In reality, however, they say, instead of four, "ostriches' toes;" for five they use two expressions, for ten they say "fingers of two hands," for twenty, "fingers and toes on hands and feet."²⁷ We ourselves have no expression for ten thousand such as exists in Greek, nor for a hundred thousand (lak), or for ten millions (kror), such as exist in Hindostanee, the richest language of the world in expressions for high numbers, reaching as far as 51 figures, owing to the fact that these terms were employed in many ways by the Sankhjâ philosophers and the Buddhists in their numerical juggleries. The word million was unknown to the nations of the classical age, while the term milliard has come into circulation only in this century.

A comparison of languages of scantily developed races shows that the perception of specific differences arose much earlier than the recognition of generic characters. Savage hunting tribes have names for the beaver, wolf, and bear, but none for animal.²⁸ The Tasmanian languages are wanting in expressions for tree, fish, and bird; but there is no lack of appellations for the individual species.²⁹ The same may be said of the North American Indians, for in the Chocta language, while there are names for the white, red, and black oak, there is none for the genus oak. When we take nourishment, whether it be soup, bread, meat, vegetables, or porridge, we always use the word eat, but the Hurons vary the expression according to the nature of the food.³⁰ The Eskimo again, have particular expressions for fishing, depending on the implements employed.³¹ The

²⁷ Dobrizhoffer, *Geschichte der Abiponer*, vol. ii. p. 202.

²⁸ Greek has also no word for animal in so far as *ζῷον* includes man, for which reason the song, "*Mensch und Thiere schliefen feste*" (men and animals were sleeping fast), cannot be translated into Greek. Steinthal, *Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie*, vol. vi. p. 480. 1869.

²⁹ Lubbock, *Prehistoric Times*, p. 466.

³⁰ Charlevoix, *Nouvelle France*, vol. iii. p. 197. Paris, 1744.

³¹ Latham, *Varieties of Man*, p. 376.

Malays distinguish between red, blue, green, and white, but they have no word for colour. The Tasmanians have no adjectives, so that they say "stone-like" instead of hard; "moon-like" instead of round; "long-legged" instead of high.

Languages are variously provided with sounds. The Arabs are destitute of the clicking sounds of the Hottentots, and we are deficient in many Arabic consonants, but the greatest paucity is found in the South Seas. The Polynesians have only ten consonants at their disposal, f, k, l, m, n, ng, p, s, t, v, and even these exist in full purity and completeness only at Fakaaso and Vaitupu,³² while the inhabitants of the Tupuai group to the south of Tahiti have preserved only eight, m, n, ng, p, r, t, v, and one with a marked guttural sound.³³ A like paucity of sounds has arisen in the Sandwich Islands by deterioration, and is not primitive and simple, for other Polynesian languages, which have remained richer in consonants, have preserved the more archaic forms. If with this be connected the fact, that the enunciation of the Bushman language, especially owing to its clicking sounds, imposes the greatest exertions on the vocal organs, we might be induced to conclude that in the primordial attempts at speech a greater stock of sounds was brought into use.³⁴ Still there are scholars who maintain the opposite,³⁵ so that a universally valid rule must not as yet be laid down.

II.—THE STRUCTURE OF HUMAN LANGUAGE.

THE foreign languages, whether ancient or modern, which we Europeans study during our school years, all possess a greater or less number of grammatical forms, by the help of which a definite function in the sentence is allotted to the radical sounds. This

³² See Gabelentz, *Die melanesischen Sprachen* in the transactions of the phil. Gesellschaft der Wissenschaft, p. 253. Leipzig, 1861.

³³ Hale, *Ethnography*, p. 142.

³⁴ W. H. J. Bleek, *Ueber den Ursprung der Sprache*, p. 53. Weimar, 1868.

³⁵ Whitney, *Language and the Study of Language*, p. 467: "The tendency of phonetic change is always towards the increase of the alphabet."

gives rise to the delusion that every language must admit of the formation of substantive, pronoun, verb, preposition, and conjunction by means of appended syllables or sounds. The novice meets with his first surprise in the Semitic languages which, although not deficient in forms, employ unwonted means of effecting their definitions of meaning. An examination of the African and Northern Asiatic languages discloses the yet more surprising fact, that in these not only the gender but the verb disappears. But we fall into incredulous perplexity on learning that languages exist which have not risen even to the formation of words, especially when it is added, that a highly civilized people with a language of this description have composed works exhibiting profound knowledge of the world, and stories of artistic polish and great subtlety. Yet there is the best evidence to show that all languages have proceeded from such rude beginnings.

All monosyllabic languages are destitute of those phonetic or syllabic suffixes which elsewhere mark noun, adjective, or verb, and still more of those which distinguish the subject of a transaction from its object; for as yet there are no words at all, but only roots. We would however at once warn the uninitiated not to mistake the monosyllabic sounds of German and English with the radicals of true monosyllabic languages. We can certainly construct long sentences with monosyllabic words, as for instance, *Der Mann ging auf die Jagd, und schoss ein Reh*, etc. (The man went out to hunt and shot a deer), but in this example *gin-g* and *Jag-d* are only apparently monosyllables, and *schoss* accidentally so. English, to a far greater extent than German, has declined towards a rigidly monosyllabic condition by dint of phonetic decay and abrasion, though it has preserved the clear distinction of the grammatical categories¹ and only in a few cases, such as *butter*, *oil*, *pepper*, *cudgel*, the hearer or reader has to guess from the context whether the substantive or the verb is intended.²

The Chinese language dispenses with all grammatical distinctions of meaning. It is destitute of all inflections, of all distinctions between substantive and verb, and of verbal structure

¹ Whitney, *Language and the Study of Language*, p. 264.

² Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 80.

of any description. The syllable *sin* may signify honour, honourable, to be honourable, to act honourably, and even to trust. What it means in any given case is decided by its position in the sentence and the context.³ By the contact of root with root the meaning is defined, and thus the sense is conveyed to the hearer as by verbal structure. In English also synonyms are sometimes multiplied for the sake of clearness, as in *path-way*, or classificatory suffixes are appended as in *maple-tree*.⁴ In German, too, we say Hai-fish, Tannenbaum, Elenthier, (dog-fish, fir-tree, moose-deer). These examples are, however, only remotely analogous, for, strictly speaking, combinations of words ought not to be compared with the grouping of roots. In Latin no special arrangement of words is prescribed in the structure of a sentence, and the position of the parts of speech is left to the artistic feeling of the speaker; Chinese, on the contrary, follows the strictest precepts in regard to syntax. Roots which are to serve for a closer definition (attributes), whether as adjective or genitives, must precede the subject or verb which they are to define. Supplements (objects) must follow that which is to be supplemented (the verb.) The grouping of two roots is naturally, in countless cases, liable to ambiguity. If *tschung* (faith) and *kyün* (prince) are combined, a European might be in doubt whether the good faith of the prince or the loyalty of the subject be intended. But in all such cases custom has long ago firmly fixed the sense in which alone such a group is valid; as the Chinese recognizes only the duty of subjects, this group signifies loyalty. The Chinese groups of roots often consist of several parts. For difference of opinion the Chinese say, I east, thou west, *ni tung, wo si*; and for conversing, thou asking, I answering, *ni wen, wo ta*. Weight is called light-heavy, *khing tschung*, and distance far-near, *ywan kin*. In German we have a similar form of word in hell-dunkel (light-dark, i.e., twilight); pianoforte; in Spanish, we find calofrio (warm-cold) for fever, and

³ Steinthal, *Charakteristik der hauptsächlichsten Typen des Sprachbaues*, p. 117. Berlin, 1860. Where other authorities are not cited, the present chapter has been borrowed from this invaluable book.

⁴ Whitney, *Study of Language*, p. 335.

altibajo (high-low) for depression.⁵ As they have no word for virtue, the Chinese say loyalty, respect for parents, temperance, justice, *tschun*, *hyau*, *tsye*, *i*, thus enumerating what they regard as the highest duties of a Chinaman. In all such combinations of roots the sequence is invariably prescribed. Neither can any one speaking by means of roots, as do the Chinese, say simply read or eat, but he must say read book, or eat rice.

Even in Chinese there are feeble beginnings of a formation of words. All roots indeed preserve their independence, yet there are some by the addition of which other roots are raised to the value of substantives. Of this sort is *thau*, head, so that according to its position *tschi* may signify show or finger, but *tschi-thau* always means finger. Again, the root *tsz*, signifying son, is applied as a diminutive, so that from *tau*, sword, *tau-tsz*, sword-son, is formed, signifying knife. In the enumeration of objects a descriptive designation is always added, much as we say in German, ein Laib Brot (a loaf of bread), ein Blatt Papier (a sheet of paper), ein Bund Heu (a truss of hay), eine Elle Leinwand (a yard of linen). A Chinaman, enumerating idols, learned men, or officials, affixes the predicates, honours, dignities, jewels, to the number mentioned.⁶ The sex of animals is indicated by the addition of two roots, which in this connection confer the sense of man or of mother. The plural is formed in Chinese by the addition of roots signifying many or all.

The rules of syntax are thus sufficient to give perfect clearness to a language consisting entirely of monosyllabic roots. The Chinese may therefore claim to have supplied every requisite for the interchange of thought by these simple means. Nevertheless, of all languages of the world, Chinese is in the lowest stage of development. It burdens the memory with the recollection of an immense number of combinations of radicals on which custom

⁵ Tober, Psych. Bedeutung der Wortzusammensetzungen, in Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie, vol. v. p. 209. 1868.

⁶ The Mexicans and Malays always append to the number the word *stone*, the Javans *grain*, the Niasmalays *fruit*. In these languages therefore it is not customary to say three chickens, four children, five swords, but three stones chickens, four grains children, five fruits swords. Tylor, Early History of Mankind, p. 208.

alone has bestowed an unalterable signification, and thereby needlessly enhances the difficulty of acquiring the language. We are therefore at a loss to comprehend how a man of such sagacity as Steinthal could reckon it among his inflected languages, for he himself admits that, "If morphological structure be alone considered, the order would necessarily be different. Chinese in particular, which now occupies such a high position, would then be transferred to the lowest."⁷ Steinthal would think little of a zoologist if he were to rank the highly endowed ant among the vertebrata because it is psychologically superior to the lancelet. Yet his classification is of this sort. Among the Siamese and Burmese, the southern neighbours of the Chinese, we also find purely monosyllabic languages. Yet they already surpass the Chinese in the number of roots which are applied to the definition of meaning. Their rules of syntax prescribe that in Siamese the auxiliary root precedes, while in Burmese it follows the principal root.⁸ By the addition of these roots, substantives and verbs, active as well as passive, are differentiated. We may presume that if these two languages are left to develop undisturbed, the formation of words will be effected in one preëminently by means of prefixes, in the other by means of suffixes.

In the Malay languages, geographically connected with the Burmese and Siamese, the syllables which define the sense are sometimes placed before, and sometimes, though less frequently, after the principal root. A great chasm separates them from the types hitherto described, for they contain polysyllabic roots. But no part of speech is as yet strictly differentiated, so that the same root or group of roots is capable of executing the functions of a substantive, an adjective, a word expressive of action, or even of a preposition. There are no syllables by the addition of which gender, case, number, tense, mood, and person can be expressed. Pronouns only, demonstrative particles, and a few prepositions, already perform their special grammatical duties. Personal pronouns alone are susceptible of a sort of plural definition by combination with numerical expressions; this gives rise to a dual and a plural, both of which forms may also be used either inclusively

⁷ Typen des Sprachbaues, p. 328.

⁸ Steinthal, p. 145.

or exclusively, as the person or persons addressed are or are not to be involved. Genuine verbs are totally wanting; they are replaced by substantives expressing an action, much as if we were to render the idea, "I walk to the east," by the words, "my walk to the east." Thus in the Dyak language the prefix *ba* means, to be affected by something. From *tiroh*, sleep, arises *batiroh*, to sleep; from *kahovut*, cover, *bakahovut*, covered; hence *iä batiroh bakahavut*, literally, he with sleep with cover, represents the idea, he sleeps covered.

A characteristic of these languages is the frequent use of such repetitions and reduplication as, in older stages of development, occurred also in highly advanced languages. In Latin a vestige of such word formations has been preserved in *quisquis*, and similar traces of past ages in *dedit* and *peperit*. The Malay languages moreover distinguish simple repetitions, in which the accent remains unaltered, from reduplication, in which the anterior word loses the accent. By repetition they express multiplication, augmentation, or duration; by reduplication enfeeblement or instability is implied, so that *tëndätëndä* signifies often, *tëndä* *tëndä*, on the contrary, to stop from time to time.⁹ This poverty in expedients for the definition of meaning does not, however, exclude a wealth of expressions. In Malay there are no less than twenty sounds expressive of the idea of striking, according to whether it be, with thin or thick wood, gently, downwards, upwards, horizontally, with the hand, the palm, the fist, a club, a sharp edge, a flat surface, with one thing against another, with a hammer, or driven in like a nail.

Scattered over the north of Asia and Europe in five large groups, the Tungús, Mongolian, Turkish, Samoyed, and Finnish, we find a linguistic structure strictly limited to the addition of suffixes. The grammatical functions of each word in the sentence are pretty sharply defined by means of these appendages. The suffix *sit* signifies a person occupied with the subject of the preceding root. From *ati*, wares, the Yakut constructs *ati-sit*, merchant; from *ayi*, creation, *ayi-sit*, creator. An action is signified by the addition of *ir*, and therefore, from *tial*, wind,

⁹ Steinthal, Sprachtypen. Whitney, Study of Language, p. 319.

arises *tialir*, to blow. This grouping of roots is unlimited, and, to recall an example often employed, the Osmanli is able to express in a single word the idea of *incapable of being induced to love one another*, by the group *sev-isch-dir-il-eme*. Inflected languages also admit, however, of an extraordinary accumulation of defining particles; for instance, the following series occurs in English, true, tru-th, truth-ful, truthful-ness, un-truthfulness. The simplicity of the system of adding suffixes, the prospect of expressing a complex idea in a single group of syllables, may at first appear seductive, yet such languages have never succeeded in forming a verb, but rest contented with naming the subject of the action (*nomina verbi*), which almost answers to such expressions of ours as the living (*nomen presentis*), the deceased (*nomen perfecti*), the imprisoned, the sender.¹⁰ In Turkish the construction is—

dog-mak, to beat

dog-ur, a beater

dog-ur-um, a beating I = I beat

dog-ur-lar, beating they = they beat.¹¹

The languages spoken by the Ural-Altaic nations illustrate the process of verbal construction. The structure of their language is confined to the agglutination of syllables. Something similar still occurs even in languages in which fusions are otherwise habitual. If two syllables are joined without alteration, and without losing their independent meaning, they are but loosely agglutinated. If we divide such words as note-worthy, care-less, trace-able, into their two halves, the substantive and the defining suffix can each exist alone. The Ural-Altaic languages, in common with all merely agglutinative languages, are confined to constructions such as these. But where these roots were long employed chiefly as definitions of meaning, and were no longer used independently, but solely as auxiliaries, their original and independent signification was presently forgotten and a higher degree of integration of linguistic structure was already attained. This case is represented in English by formations such as *virtu-*

¹⁰ Steinthal, *Sprachtypen*, p. 193.

¹¹ Whitney, *Study of Language*, p. 319.

ous, bare-ly, in-distinct. The suffixes *ous* and *ly*, and the affix *in*, can no longer stand independently in our language, but have forfeited their liberty, since their original form and their old signification have been removed beyond ken. A third case is conceivable; namely, that, in consequence of agglutination, the defining root has effected a phonetic modification in the principal root, and both combinations are fused in such a manner that neither can any longer exist independently, as in such formations as *scholar*.

A germ of phonetic modification is already latent in the Ural-Altaic languages, though it is only due to a desire for euphony (Vocalharmonic). The eight vowels of these languages are divided into heavy and light, hard and soft, and by the custom of the language the same or some other particular vowel must be contained in the succeeding suffix-root. Thus in the Yakut language, the plural suffix-root consists of the syllable *l—r*, but which vowel is to be inserted between *l* and *r* is determined by the vowel of the principal root, so that the formula is *aχa-lar*, the fathers, *oχo-lor*, the children, *äsä-lär*, the bears. This musical attempt may in the course of time effect the complete fusion of the suffix with the principal root. The fact is significant that in another linguistic province, namely, among the Dravida group or non-Aryan inhabitants of Southern India, we likewise find laws of euphony, but acting in the reverse direction. There the vowel of the defining syllable is dominant, and compels the vowel of the principal root into harmony with itself. The words *katti*, knife, and *puli*, tiger, are transformed by the suffix *lu*, indicating the plural, not into *katti-lu* and *puli-lu*, but into *kattulu*, the knives, and *pululu*, the tigers.¹² Whereas the Ural-Altaic languages always place the defining roots after the principal root, and are, therefore, reckoned as suffixing languages, we find in the whole of South Africa, as far as the equator, with the sole exception of the languages of the Hottentots and Bushmen, closely allied languages, which all place the defining syllable before the principal root, but yet do not exclude the use of suffixes. Southwards from Delagoa Bay, on the east coast, we find rivers bearing the names of Um-komanzi,

¹² F. Müller, *Reise der Fregatte Novara*. Language, p. 81.

Um-zuti, Um-kusi, Um-volosi, Um-hlutane, Um-lazi, Um-gababa, Um-kamazi, Um-tenta, and so on.¹³ It might, therefore, be inferred that the prefix *um* signifies water, as does the suffix *ach* in German names, such as Bacharach, Aichach, Stockach, Lörrach, Elzach. Yet there are South African names for mountains and places, which are preceded by the syllable *um*. Names of tribes are formed by the prefix *ma*, Ma-tabele, Ma-sai, Ma-kua, Ma-ravi, Ma-kololo, or by the double prefix *a-ma*, as Ama-χosa, Ama-pondo, Ama-tonga, Ama-zulu, for which we might substitute the people of the chief Xosa, Pondo, Tonga, Zulu. Perhaps, at a period not very remote, there was a chief of the name of Suto, the eponym of the Ba-suto; each individual was called a Ma-suto, their territory Le-suto, and their language Se-suto. This example indicates the definitions implied by the prefixes *Ba*, *Ma*, *Le*, and *Se*. Where these series of prefixes have been maintained in their full integrity we find sixteen, or perhaps eighteen, of which the greater number indicate either the plural or the singular exclusively. Only two of these syllables unequivocally distinguish natural differences, namely, *Mu* and *Ba*, of which both represent persons, one in the singular, the other in the plural; possibly *Mu* formerly signified person, *Ba* people.¹⁴ Each substantive and each expression of activity (we can hardly say verb), is provided with an antecedent syllable, so that a prefix thus becomes an ingredient of the word, as inseparable as is the suffix in the older branches of the Aryan family of languages.¹⁵ We may confidently assert that the prefixes were once independent words, but their significations are now unknown to the existing generation, and in this case the linguistic integration has advanced so far that certain phonetic combinations are applied exclusively to grammatical purposes. The employment of prefixes requires, among other things, that the same syllable should be affixed to the adjective as to the substantive. Were Latin a

¹³ Bacmeister in the *Ausland*, p. 577. 1871.

¹⁴ W. H. Bleek, *Comparative Grammar of South African Languages*, p. 95. 1869.

¹⁵ Whitney, *Study of Language*, p. 345. 1867. In the Suto languages they say *ba-ntu* (men), *ba-otle* (all), *ba-molemo* (good), *ba-lefatse* (the world), *ba-ratoa* (the beloved), which means, in the world, all good men are beloved (Casalis, *Les Basoutos*, p. 339. Paris, 1859).

prefixing language, instead of *vin-um bon-um*, it would run *um-vin um-bon*. In Zulu *tyi* signifies stone, and *bi* ugly, *i* is the indefinite article, and *li* the indispensable representative prefix. Thus arises *i-li-tyii-li-bi*, an ugly stone. Even the genitive is expressed by the prefix of the nominative, and in Zulu the woman's dish is called *i-si-tya s-o-m-fazi*, and the food of the woman *u-ku-dhla kw-o-m-fazi*. *S-o-m-fazi* and *kw-o-m-fazi* are the genitives of *u-m-fazi*, woman, and harmonize with the prefix of the substantive.¹⁶ South African languages, however, employ suffixes also in the construction of highly compound words.¹⁷

We find a different linguistic structure among the American nations, with the exception of the Eskimo. Wilhelm von Humboldt has termed their system "incorporative," because the structure of the sentence may be entirely supplanted by the structure of the word. The aborigines of America are able to build up a complex idea into a single word. In the Cherokee language *wi-ni-taw-ti-ge-gi-na-li-skaw-lung-ta-naw-ne-le-ti-se-sti* is equivalent to "they will by this time have come to an end of their declarations (of favour) to you and me."¹⁸ Even in those American languages which allow only a moderate use of "incorporation," the object is always placed between the subject and the verb. Moreover, some syllables of the inserted words are suppressed, and the phonetic combination, thus mutilated, remains intelligible only in its context. In the Delaware language, from *opik*, white, and *assuun*, stone, is formed *opposuun*, or white stone, by which silver is meant.¹⁹ Although it is not an invariable law that among highly civilized nations we find also highly developed languages, for we have just observed the contrary among the Chinese, while conversely from the Hottentot language we shall presently learn that a highly developed language does not always imply a correspondingly high civilization, yet a highly developed

¹⁶ Bleek in the *Journal of the Anthropol. Institute*, vol. i. p. 71. London, 1872.

¹⁷ From *bona*, to see, arises *isi-bono*, the object seen, *isi-boniso*, vision, *bon-akala*, to appear, *isi-bonakala*, appearance, *isi-bonakaliso*, revelation. F. Müller, *Reise der Fregatte Novara*, vol. iii. p. 112.

¹⁸ Whitney, *Study of Language*, p. 349.

¹⁹ Schoolcraft, cited by Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 273.

language leads us to expect to find a more matured social constitution in its territory. In America, the most highly civilized people, the ancient Mexicans, spoke the most developed language, Nahuatl. The name alone, by its termination *tl*, indicates an advance. The Ural-Altaic languages were still quite incapable of any true word-construction when substantives were already recognizable by the termination *tl* in ancient Mexican. In composition, the word *teo-tl*, God, loses the appended consonants, as in *teo-calli*, God's house or temple, and in *teo-tlaltolli*, God's word. These examples also show that not all Nahuatl substantives have the suffix *tl*. Ancient Mexican, in common with all American languages, is incorporative, inserting the object between the subject and the verb, so that from *schotschi-tl*, flower, and *ni-temoa*, I seek, is formed *ni-schotschi-temoa*, I seek flowers; but another arrangement of the sentence is also used, in which only the pronoun *it* (*k*), or somebody (*te*), or something (*tla*), is intercalated between subject and verb, while the object is placed last. From *ni*, I, *k*, it, *miktia*, to kill, *se*, one, *totolin*, chicken; the Nahuatl forms *ni-k-miktia se totolin*, I it kill a chicken. The excessive tendency to incorporation is thus again checked. Plurals which occur only in the case of living things (in which category the stars are included), are expressed by the addition of the suffixes *mê* and *tin*, as *itschka-tl*, sheep, *itschka-mê*, sheep (in the plural), or *ta-tli*, father, *ta-tin*, fathers. Nor is there any lack of ingenuity in the formation of words; from *ome*, two, and *yolli*, heart, arises *omeyolloa*, to doubt; from *nakastli*, ear, and *tsatsi*, to scream, *nakatsatsa-tl*, in whose ear one must scream—a deaf person.²⁰

In the prefix languages of the South African negroes *um-tu* signifies a man, *um-fazi*, a woman, *um-ti*, a tree. The same prefix, therefore, serves for objects which ought to be viewed as masculine, feminine, and neuter. When the substantive is once distinguished from the verb by perceptible phonetic terminations, the gender of the substantive can also be distinguished. We have hitherto been dealing only with languages which do not distinguish grammatical genders, but we shall now turn to those which express

²⁰ Steinthal, *Charakteristik*, p. 203.

differences of sex.²¹ The important influence which this improvement in language has had on the formation of myths can only be explained further on; at present we will merely remark that the requirements of a grammatical gender induced a keener observation of external objects. Traces of a distinction of gender, at least in the pronoun for the third person, may be found in Tarawa,²² the language spoken on the Gilbert or Kingsmill Islands; others in South America among the Abipones,²³ the Arowaks, and the Maypures,²⁴ and in Khasi, the language of the Khasians of Assam.²⁵ In Africa the languages of the Hottentots, the Hausa negroes, and the ancient Egyptians, are remarkable for their twofold grammatical gender. The distinction of the sexes is the most important advance in the linguistic structure of the latter highly civilized people. In other respects the roots in ancient Egyptian are mainly monosyllabic, and many of them may be used as substantive, verb, and adjective, as in Chinese. The same syllable denotes to write, a writing, and a writer, while another may mean to live, alive, or life. Some roots, however, serve exclusively as substantive or verb. A prefixed article, which is, however, only loosely attached, marks the substantive, but there is as yet no declension, prefixed prepositions acting as substitutes. In the formation of the verb, pronouns are loosely attached to the radical, but tense and mood are expressed by prefixing auxiliary words. But as these pronominal suffixes may also be appended to substantives, and in that case indicate possession, the separation of the verb from the substantive is not yet fully effected. *Ran-i* may be translated, I name, or my name; while literally it signifies my naming.²⁶ In many of its verbal constructions this language is as

²¹ In the Algonkin language also a distinction is made between animate and inanimate objects, but among the former are reckoned the sun, the moon, the stars, thunder and lightning, sacrificial stones, eagles' feathers, tobacco, pipes, drums, and wampums. Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 274.

²² Horatio Hale, *United States Exploration Expedition, Ethnography*. Philadelphia, p. 441. 1846.

²³ Dobrizhoffer, *Geschichte der Abiponer*, vol. ii. p. 200-206.

²⁴ Bleek, *Journal of the Anthropological Institute*, vol. i. p. 93.

²⁵ Bleek, p. 67.

²⁶ Whitney, *Study of Language*, p. 342.

ill-developed as, and sometimes more ambiguous than Chinese, which ensures perspicuity by its strict rules of syntax. But it stands higher than Chinese, inasmuch as the defining suffixes have entirely lost their independence as well as their original form and import, having for the most part been reduced to a few consonants by dint of contraction and curtailment, so that they now serve only for grammatical purposes.²⁷

There is a wide chasm between the best developed of the lower languages and those of the Semitic and Aryan families. In these the defining element is mostly firmly welded together with the principal root. The root is completely lost in the substantive and the verb, and a real inflection and a real transformation have arisen, though they are effected in totally different ways by Aryans and Semites. The Semitic languages of Western Asia are recognizable by the circumstance that their radicals always exhibit three consonants, although the third is often scantily or abortively represented. Vowels affecting the definition are interposed before, between, or after these consonants. As Steinthal happily expresses it, the consonant is the substance of the thought while the vowel invests it with its shape. The former might be compared to the block of marble, the latter to the sculptor. This may be illustrated by an example frequently employed. For everything that refers to the shedding of human blood Arabic applies the triple group of consonants, *q-t-l*. Thence are formed:—

qatala	...	...	...	...	<i>he kills</i>
qutila	...	...	...	...	<i>he was killed</i>
qutilu	...	...	...	...	<i>they were killed</i>
uqtul	...	...	...	...	<i>to kill</i>
qatil	...	...	...	...	<i>killing</i>
iqtal	...	...	...	...	<i>to cause killing</i>
quatl	...	...	...	...	<i>murder</i>
qitl	...	...	...	...	<i>enemy</i>
qutl	...	...	...	...	<i>murderous</i>

In the verb the middle vowel bestows a transitive or intransitive signification; by the vowel of the first syllable of the radical the active (*a*) is distinguished from the passive (*u*), and the vowel of the last consonant denotes the mood, *u* expressing the

²⁷ Whitney, *Study of Language*, p. 342.

indicative, *a* the subjunctive, while in the imperative, which conveys a demand, the vowel totally disappears. The other transformations of the verb are effected by prefixes and suffixes, which also have a phonetic influence on the vowels of the syllables to which they are prefixed or appended. Terminal syllables distinguish singular and plural as well as the three cases, nominative, genitive, and accusative.

We may well wonder at the manner in which, in the construction of the Semitic languages, the human intellect has been able to bestow a symbolical meaning on the sounds produced by the organs of speech, and, as it were, inspire this apparatus for the interchange of ideas. The evolutionary history of this process is as yet entirely obscure, for there are not even any conjectures as to the earlier stages which have been surmounted in the formation of language.

An equal or, as many think, a higher rank is occupied by the Indo-Germanic or Aryan languages akin to Sanscrit. Their superiority over the Semitic group may be primarily founded on their recognition of three instead of two genders, or rather of sexual and sexless objects. But this superiority has been again partially lost in the course of time. With few exceptions modern English still distinguishes gender only in men and animals. In the German language also, as Steinthal remarks, the good times are past in which *zweene* was still said for two men, *zwo* for two women, *zwei* for two children, or for a man and woman. Armenian ignores all distinction of gender.²⁸ It is more significant that Aryan languages alone possess a verb *to be*, which is wanting even in Semitic languages, so that the latter cannot express the idea of the graciousness of God by the words, God is gracious, but are obliged to say, God the gracious, or God, he the gracious, so that in such languages it would be impossible to maintain "*cogito, ergo sum.*"

The evolutionary history of this group of languages is much more easily seen than in those of the Semitic family. All inquiries tend to show that in the dark times of past ages our forefathers effected their interchange of ideas by means of a comparatively

²⁸ Mordtmann, *Allgem. Zeitung*, p. 6374. 1871.

small number of monosyllabic roots, and that their language was then in the same stage as is now Chinese. Yet the separation of the pronominal roots took place so early that many observers regard it as primordial.²⁹ Jacob Grimm's idea, that the stock of the root *tu* is reducible to the conception of being great, of growing, so that *du* properly signifies magnitude, and in a manner represents the titles of modern days, such as your grace, is supported by Kleinpaul with the observation that from civility the Chinese abases himself and, instead of *I have*, uses the expressions *servant has*, *slave has*, *blockhead has*.³⁰ The formation of words originally took place by the agglutination of the defining root at the end, while prefixes were only very sparingly employed, and this chiefly in negatives with *un*, as in *ungrateful*, or *a* as in *atheism*; also by antecedent prepositions, such as *forecast*, *outspread*, *overthrow*,³¹ finally, by the prefixed *a* or *ä* of the so-called augment in the primitive past tense. German has many prefixes of which the original meaning has become unintelligible, such as *beschreiben* (to describe), *ergründen* (to fathom), *zerfleischen* (to lacerate), *verkaufen* (to sell), etc. The original meaning of these auxiliary words has long been forgotten, and they are therefore serviceable only as defining syllables, or before the principal root. But in modern times a deterioration of morphological structure has taken place, especially in Germanic languages. When the inflectional terminations had been worn down beyond recognition, linguistic structure, as a compensation for significant affixes and reduplications, seized on a medium for the definition of meaning which had previously been only casual and incidental, namely, the metamorphosis of vowels. The conversion of *a o u* into *ä ö ü* was employed in the formation of the plural and the subjunctive (*vater*, *väter*; *mutter*, *mütter*; *konnte*, *könnte*; *trüge*, *trüge*). By modifications (as in English *woman*, *women*), various functions were fulfilled, especially in marking the time, in expressions referring to actions—*hebe*, *hob*, *Abhub* (*lift*, *lifted*, *leavings*); *gebe*, *gab*, *gibst* (*give*, *gave*, *givest*); *graben*, *Grube* (*dig*, *ditch*). The

²⁹ Whitney, *Study of Language*, p. 261.

³⁰ *Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie*, p. 363. 1869.

³¹ Whitney, *Study of Language*, pp. 256, 257.

German language thus acquired the use of a metamorphosis of vowels very like that in the Semitic; possibly the Semitic languages owe their symbolical use of vowels to the same cause.

III.—LANGUAGE AS A MEANS OF ETHNOLOGICAL CLASSIFICATION.

IN order to separate the manifold phenomena of the human race and to arrange them in groups, we require persistent and distinctive characters. Hence, if languages are constantly modified, so that not only the meaning of certain phonetic combinations is altered within a suspiciously short period, but even the structure of the languages may be changed, we can scarcely hope to employ language as a means of classification. We know that before the Roman dominion the inhabitants of France spoke a Celtic language, and exchanged it later for a new Latin tongue. The inhabitants of Germany eastwards of the Elbe belonged, some two thousand years ago, to the Sclavonian family. On the other hand, the inhabitants of Iceland and Norway spoke the same language eight hundred years ago. In Iceland it has been preserved almost without alteration, whereas in Norway it has been developed into Danish. Even if, in this case, we supposed that these metamorphoses took place within a group of languages which were primordially related, and that the transition was thus exceptionally easy, we must remember that English is spoken by the descendants of Africans, who were brought as slaves to the United States, and that Spanish is spoken by many of the aborigines of America. Were we therefore to classify nations according to language only, we should be obliged to place negroes in the same division with English, and pure-bred Indians with the descendants of Roumanian Europeans.

Hence, before we infer any sort of relationship from identity or similarity of language, we must ascertain as an historical fact that the identity of language has not been produced by the requirements of social intercourse. Even where we need not suspect this, language must be regarded as a distinctive mark only of the second order. Community of language in tribes and races

merely proves that, in some past age, the various members of the same linguistic group inhabited a common home, and maintained a close intercourse with one another. This, however, is all that we require; for as all races of mankind generate fertile hybrids with one another, residence in a common home is sufficient to produce a new mongrel race, even from stray portions of the human family physically unlike. But here again the consideration arises, that a common home may be inhabited by two physically distinct races united by a predominant language, and yet little or no admixture of blood may have taken place. We see these cases realized in the United States and, in India, where admixture of blood only rarely occurs between white and coloured people, or between Aryans of high and natives of low caste. This consideration should be kept in view, though these instances are solitary. The aversion of the English and Germans to intermarriage with negroes is not shared to the same extent by Semites and Hamites, nor, among Europeans, by Spaniards, Portuguese, and French. This feeling of caste only restrains nations of very high culture from an admixture of blood with nations of a very low order. In the newer races of mankind nothing of the sort is to be apprehended. Moreover, as structure of language requires long periods for its development, during which the families with a common language maintain the closest intercourse of ideas, common descent or continued affinity may be inferred in the case of nations connected by a community of verbal structure and parts of speech. No one who has studied the subject any longer doubts that the so-called Indo-Europeans, the Semites, the Bantu nations of South Africa, all derive the rudiments of their languages from intercourse in a common home, where they used a common vocabulary. Yet no comparison of the bodily characters of Icelanders, of Hindoos of high caste, of the natives of Madagascar and Easter Island, would have suggested to us that they were all descendants of ancestors inhabiting a common home and intermarrying. But having observed every rule of critical caution, none but those who have formed exaggerated ideas of the persistency of physical characters will neglect language as a means of classification, or make light of the results of the philological researches of the present day. But where a comparison

of languages gives results inconsistent with the racial characters, we necessarily suspect an admixture of blood. Hence, we have no hesitation in reckoning the inhabitants of Kashgar among the Turkish hybrid nations, for by their facial type they would otherwise be classed among the Indo-Germans. We must assume that the conquering Turkish-speaking race mingled to such a degree with the subjugated Tadshiks of Iranian stock, that their original bodily characters were entirely obliterated.

Linguistic relations, founded on a community of defining auxiliary syllables, are recognized without dispute by all philologists. Those cases in which the similarity depends only on conformity of structure, are more suspicious and more liable to objection. But even in these relationship is admitted, at least with regard to the aborigines of America. Their common use of the "incorporative" system has induced all philologists to regard them as members of a single family of mankind, and to separate them from the Eskimo, who form their words by means of suffixes, especially as there are no distinct bodily characteristics which would suggest a real separation in the former. The association of the Ural-Altaic nations, in which the community of the various groups depends only on the type of linguistic structure, and its restriction to the suffix as its morphological element, is far more doubtful. Yet even in this instance we may assume a derivation from a common home, because the special character of their rules of euphony at least is peculiar to them; and we may conjecture that if the records of their language reached back some thousands instead of hundreds of years, as is the case, a closer kinship might probably be discovered, and, lastly, because their bodily structure favours this association. On the other hand, it seems inadmissible to elevate the Ural-Altaic groups into a Turanian family, and to assimilate with them the Dravida languages of the aboriginal Indians because they likewise observe laws of euphony in the formation of words. Since these laws differ from those of the Ural-Altaic languages, and also because their physical characters render it imperative, we shall treat these South Indian people as a separate branch of the human family.

THE INDUSTRIAL, SOCIAL, AND RELIGIOUS
•
STAGES OF DEVELOPMENT.

THE INDUSTRIAL, SOCIAL, AND RELIGIOUS STAGES OF DEVELOPMENT.

I.—THE PRIMITIVE CONDITION OF THE HUMAN RACE.

AT the time when Europeans were astounded at the condition of the so-called savage nations, as shown by the trans-oceanic discoveries of ancient and modern times, many imaginative people supposed the human species, on its first appearance, to have been endowed with the highest perfections, bodily, intellectual, and moral, and ascribed the absence of these advantages in the coloured inhabitants of forests and islands to a culpable degradation from that golden condition. In refutation of these now harmless errors, it is sufficient to refer to the change of opinion undergone by such a student of the subject as Herr von Martius. At the meeting of German naturalists at Freiburg, in 1838, he still asserted that, "Every day that I spent among the Indians of Brazil increased my conviction that at one time they had been quite different, and that in the course of obscure centuries, manifold catastrophes had overtaken them and reduced them to the peculiarly deteriorated and stationary condition in which I found them." Before thirty years had elapsed, we hear from his lips the following words respecting the same people: "As yet no evidence is before us that the barbarous state of these regions at that period was secondary, that it was preceded by one of higher civilization, that this resort of ephemeral, unstable hordes was ever occupied by a civilized people."¹ Nor do those other views

survive which, at the end of the last century, were entertained by travellers who, like George Forster, filled with dreams worthy of Rousseau, envied the people of the South Seas as a fortunate race in a state of nature, and not yet deprived of the ideal condition of man by the follies of civilized life. Only the night before the savages killed him, Lamanon, the companion of La Pérouse, maintained, in conversation with his comrades, that savages were far better than civilized people.² The physical beauty so frequently extolled in the unrestrained children of nature is generally wanting in the photographic portraits which now reach us in such abundance. Even where it actually exists, unmarred by the disfigurements inflicted by misguided taste, cleanliness, the best attention to the human body, is often lacking. The hair is in disorder and the teeth uncleaned. We expect to find certain vices only in highly cultured but deteriorated nations, as among the Greeks and in imperial Rome, yet any one who is but slightly versed in the older Spanish records of American tribes, is well aware that the latter knew of refinements of vice which never occurred either to the Romans when Tiberius dwelt at Capri, or to the Byzantines when Theodora, afterwards the consort of the Emperor Justinian, roamed about with strolling players.³ We may add, that nearly all these people were acquainted with poisons which destroy the human embryo, and that they were used with wanton recklessness.⁴ This dark side of the life of uncivilized nations has induced barbarous and inhuman settlers in trans-oceanic regions to assume a right to cultivate as their own the inheritance of the aborigines, and to extol the murder of races as a triumph of civilization.

² Schaafhausen, *Archiv für Anthropologie*. In the same spirit Helfer wrote in his journal before he was murdered by the Andamans, "These are the much dreaded savages! They are timid children of nature, happy as long as no harm is done to them." Joh. Wilh. Helfer's *Reisen in Vorderasien und Indien*. Leipzig, 1873.

³ Vespucci, *Quattuor Navigations*, passim. Of this in the case of the Aleutés see Erman, *Zeitsch. für Ethnologie* (1871), of the Chuktschi see Wrangel, *Reise in Siberien*, of the Itelmes see Steller, *Kamschatka*.

⁴ A list of the nations in which this vice is tolerated was recently given in the *Archiv für Anthropologie*. Brunswick, 1872.

Other writers, led away by Darwinian dogmas, fancied they had discovered populations which had, as it were, remained in a former animal condition for the instruction of our times. Thus, in the words of a History of Creation, in the taste now prevalent, "in Southern Asia and the east of Africa, men live in hordes, mostly climbing trees and eating fruit, unacquainted with fire, and using no weapons but stones and clubs after the manner of the higher apes." It can be shown that these statements are derived from the writings of a learned scholar of Bonn, on the condition of savage nations,⁵ the facts of which are based either on the depositions of an African slave of the Doko tribe, a dwarfish people in the South of Shoa,⁶ or on the assertions of Bengalese planters⁷ or perhaps on the observation of a sporting adventurer, that a mother and daughter, and at another time a man and woman, were found in India in a semi-animal condition.⁸ On the other hand, not only have neither nations nor even hordes in an ape-like condition ever been encountered by any trustworthy traveller of modern times, but even those races which in the first superficial descriptions were ranked far below our own grade of civilization, have on nearer acquaintance been placed much nearer the civilized nations. No portion of the human race has yet been discovered which does not possess a more or less rich vocabulary, rules of language, artificially pointed weapons and various implements, as well as the art of kindling fire.

Sir John Lubbock asserts in his book on Prehistoric Times, that certain inhabitants of the Pacific Islands have no acquaintance with fire. We are sorry to find this asserted also of the aborigines of Van Diemen's Land, for Sir John need only have opened the record of Abel Tasman⁹ to ascertain that even the first discoverer saw columns of smoke rising in the interior of the island. With as little justice Lubbock asserts that the inhabitants of Fakaifo were unacquainted with fire. This island belongs to the Union

⁵ Archiv für Anthropologie.

⁶ Krapf, Reisen in Ostafrika.

⁷ G. Pouchet, The Plurality of the Human Race. 1864.

⁸ Ausland. 1860.

⁹ Burney, Discoveries. The Tasmanians moreover possessed a tradition respecting the derivation of fire. See Tylor, Early History of Mankind, p. 301. See also Lubbock, Prehistoric Times, p. 453.

group, and is situated in the north of the Samoan Archipelago, the inhabitants of which have been named navigators on account of their nautical skill and extensive voyages, so that they would long ago have conveyed fire and the art of kindling it to their neighbours at Fakaafu, if these had been without it. For any one else it would have been warning enough, that in the dialect of Fakaafu the word for fire occurs which, according to the various dialects of the Malay language, is pronounced *api*, *afi*, *ahi*.¹⁰ Sir John Lubbock, on the contrary, evades this by the supposition that, as in the allied Maori language, the word may stand only for light and heat. As the only foundation for his assertion he appeals to the famous American navigator Wilkes, who noticed the absence of cinders in every part of Fakaafu, and therefore conjectured that the aborigines consumed their food in a raw condition. The great work of his companion, Horatio Hale, on the languages of the South Seas, appeared only a year after the publication of Wilkes's discoveries. This excellent anthropologist testified not only that a word for fire existed on this island, but, in order to refute Wilkes's mistake, he expressly remarks that, on the evening before their embarkation, he and his companions saw a column of smoke rising from Fakaafu.¹¹ We may therefore confidently maintain the proposition that no human family unacquainted with fire has yet been found.¹²

Fire is an instructive and powerful auxiliary of man. It is a means that has no substitute for producing those modifications of matter, without which our most important articles of food would be unfit for consumption. With the aid of fire, trunks of trees were first, and are still, hollowed out into canoes. Fire alone scares away the fierce beasts of prey of the forest and desert—the African lion, the Asiatic tiger, the American jaguar. By fire

¹⁰ According to the vocabulary in Mariner's Tonga Islands, *tolo-afi* signifies to rub fire, and *tolongu* the grooved wood in which it is rubbed.

¹¹ United States Exploring Expedition; Ethnography. Philadelphia, 1846.

¹² The death of the author prevents an appeal to him to alter this passage, in which he certainly misrepresents Sir John Lubbock, who sums up his remarks on this subject with the words: "The fact, if established, would be most important; but it cannot be said to be satisfactorily proved that there is at present, or has been within historical times, any race of men entirely ignorant of fire." See Prehistoric Times, pp. 453, 454. London, 1865.

primitive man hardened his rude weapons and the points of his wooden spears. In the absence of trained dogs, prairie fires serve to drive the game into the hands of the hunting tribes of Australia and South Africa. Traces of charred wood and ashes are found in the caves of Périgord,¹³ and with yet greater significance in the source of the Schussen, among implements of reindeer's horn, which belong to the glacial period of Northern Europe.¹⁴

If we now consider from what source man originally obtained fire, the first thought will probably be that he received it as a gift from on high by means of a flash of lightning, which set fire to a tree. But before man could render himself master of fire as a useful auxiliary, he must first have had a knowledge of all the purposes to which man alone is able to adapt it. The conservation of fire must therefore have been preceded by familiar handling of it. If we may draw an inference from the observations of those who have watched nations in a semi-natural condition, we may add that primitive man would have fled in terror from the spectacle of the blazing tree whenever a kindling flash darted from the threatening cloud. The most probable conjecture is, therefore, that it was in the vicinity of volcanic lava streams that man first and permanently became acquainted with the benefits of fire.¹⁵ Alexander von Humboldt reports that twenty years after the eruption of Jorullo, shavings could still be kindled in the fissures of the Hornitos, or dwarf-craters.¹⁶ Thus throughout the life of a whole generation this lava mass offered continual opportunities of obtaining fire. At the bottom of many craters, as in the volcanoes of Hawai, and in the so-called Hell of Masaye, the glowing lava has seethed for ages without intermission. Again, in some few districts there are numbers of so-called mud-volcanoes, or vents, emitting inflammable gas, namely, carburetted hydrogen. We refer to phenomena of this description in the United States, in China and Italy, but especially to the perpetual fires of the peninsula of Absheron near Baku, on the Caspian Sea, which day and night, summer and winter, throw up blasts of flaming gas from fifteen to twenty feet in

¹³ See above, p. 36.

¹⁴ *Ibid.* p. 39.

¹⁵ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 53.

¹⁶ Kosmos.

height,¹⁷ to which pious Parsees make pilgrimages from Gujerat and Moulton in order to behold the presence of their fire-god.

A period must, however, have occurred in prehistoric times when the flaming stream of gas was extinguished, the lava stream grew cold, and man must have contemplated the artificial production of fire. The realization of this problem, a great event in the history of our civilization, was subsequently accounted for by the myth of Prometheus, who stole fire from the king of gods. As this legend still endures as a national possession among the Ossets, or Irons, in the Caucasus, and the language of this hill tribe is of the Indo-Germanic family, it must have existed before the later dispersion of the Aryan races; but as in the glacial period fire was artificially produced at the source of the Schussen, far from any volcanic phenomena, we must not look to this myth for the traces of an historical event. On this point we may even appeal to Æschylus who, in the now lost conclusion of his trilogy, makes Prometheus say that he has lain 'in fetters for thirty thousand years,'¹⁸ so that he also refers the theft of fire to a period far beyond the limits of man's memory.

The most primitive method of kindling fire has been retained by the Polynesians. A stick is rubbed obliquely up and down the groove of a stationary piece of wood until it begins to glow. Chamisso found fire-implements of this sort on the Sandwich Islands, and in the Radak group of Micronesia,¹⁹ and they are common to the other Polynesians in Tahiti, New Zealand, the Samoan and Tongan groups,²⁰ and even in New Caledonia.²¹ Less muscular exertion was required by the fire-drills. The earliest contrivance of this kind is described by the Spaniards as in use in the Antilles and the shores of South America. Two pieces of wood were tied together, between which was jammed a pointed stick, which was revolved until fire was kindled.²² It was soon discovered, however, that a single piece of wood was

¹⁷ Naumann, *Geognosie*, vol. i.

¹⁸ Westphal, *Prolegomenen zu Aeschylus Tragödien*. Leipzig, 1869.

¹⁹ O. von Kotzebue's *Entdeckungsreisen*, vol. iii. Weimar, 1821.

²⁰ Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 303.

²¹ Knoblauch in the *Ausland*. 1806.

²² Oviedo, *Historia general de las Indias*, lib. vi.

sufficient for a framework, if a cavity was previously made for the reception of the fire-drill. This apparatus, one of the oldest inventions of our race, reappears in all parts of the world. We recognize it in well-known sculptures of the ancient Mexicans,²³ it is still used by the Indians of Guayana,²⁴ and by the Botocudos of Brazil,²⁵ while in South Africa it is used by the Bushmen,²⁶ Kaffirs, and Hottentots,²⁷ by the Veddahs in Ceylon,²⁸ and by the aborigines of Australia.²⁹ It must not be supposed that success in kindling fire is easy. The labour is so fatiguing that among the Botocudos at Belmont, several individuals were in the habit of relieving each other in the work of turning the drill.³⁰

Theophilus Hahn records the same of the Kaffirs,³¹ although they live in extremely dry regions. Hermann von Schlagintweit, in his excursions in the Himalayas, first noticed a fire apparatus of this sort among the Lepcha, which was peculiar in that the framework was made of hard, and the drill of soft wood. He also adds that the labour is very fatiguing, and that as the air is highly saturated with moisture, success is very uncertain.³²

When we realize the fact that the difficulty of kindling fire by friction is so great that even in such a dry region as South Africa, several persons take part in the fatiguing labour, the artificial production of fire presupposes a mutual understanding between the participators, from which fact we may draw the forcible and incontrovertible inference that language must have preceded the artificial preparation of fire; hence that the Sualians of the glacial period already mentioned must have been in possession of such a language, and that the psychical chasm separating man from animals even then existed. Yet the greatest interest attaches itself to the question whether the artificial production of fire was

²³ Recently again figured by O. Caspari, *Die Urgeschichte der Menschheit*. Leipzig, 1873.

²⁴ C. F. Appun in the *Ausland*. 1872.

²⁵ J. J. von Tschudi, *Reisen durch Südamerika*. Leipzig, 1860.

²⁶ Fritsch, *Eingeborne Südafrika's*.

²⁷ Kolben's *Vorgeb. d. G. Hoffnung*.

²⁸ Emerson Tennent, *Ceylon*, vol. ii. ²⁹ A. Lortsch in the *Ausland*, 1866.

³⁰ The Prince of Wied, *Reise nach Brasilien*, vol. ii. p. 18.

³¹ *Globus*. Sept. 1871.

³² *Reisen in Indien und Hochasien*.

an invention, or only a discovery. Was some powerful thinker of primitive ages led to argue that as heat was generated by friction, fire might be obtained by a very great increase in degree of frictional heat? In that case the truth had dawned upon his mind that luminous heat is distinguished from latent heat only in its amount, and in the effect on the optic nerves, and his attempt to kindle a fire by friction would have received Nature's assent to an inquiry correctly propounded. In acuteness of intellect, such a Prometheus of the glacial period would have been in no way behind a Copernicus or a Kepler, a Champollion or a Grotefend, a Kirchhoff or a Faraday; we could be certain that the highest grade of intellectual power, manifesting itself now and again in individuals, is no greater in our day than it was in classical or biblical antiquity, and in those times no greater than in the glacial period. When we reflect thus we must remember that mediæval scholastics believed a diminution to have taken place of the powers of the human comprehension, so that even in the sphere of the exact sciences the mighty intellects of Greeks and Romans were regarded as unattainable prototypes. At the present time the Chinese, whose mental development has recently been very inactive, are persuaded that the intellectual powers of their thinkers of past ages far exceeded the present standard. The hypothesis of an increase or a diminution of human powers of comprehension varies, therefore, with the self-appreciation, or the absence of self-appreciation, of individual periods, so that at the present time, when, owing to the highly integrated state of society, every intellectual luminary, methodically fostered, is far more readily enabled to diffuse his splendour, we are inclined to assume that human sagacity is now in its meridian.

But mindful of the golden rule, that inferences must be made only from the known to the unknown, we confess that the first stages of civilization of our species are still far too obscure to invalidate the conjecture that a fortunate accident revealed the possibility of generating fire by means of friction. Yet we cannot suppose with Adalbert Kuhn, that a dry tendril, whirled round by a storm in the hollow of a branch, was ignited. We even doubt the physical possibility of the assertion of the Voguls of the Ural mountains, that a broken tree rubbing against a neigh-

bouring stem until it ignites, can cause a conflagration of the forest. As the same mode of producing fire and the same kindling apparatus have been found among all nations of both hemispheres, the accidental discovery must have resulted from an attempt to drill a hole: we meet with pierced implements—though only of horn—even among the relics of the inhabitants of Europe of the glacial period. Yet as one individual must have become exhausted before fire was kindled, and as the heat would be expended during each interruption, the fact that the drilling was continued without a pause still remains without explanation. But the list of possibilities cannot be exhausted, so that we cannot yet hope to understand the sequence of events in ages so remote.

The old frictional apparatus, uncertain in its result, and requiring for its management two workmen at the least, attained its highest development when it was discovered that the drill might be set in motion by a string caused to wind itself on and off. This invention spread over North America to the Sioux, or Dahcotas,³³ as well as to the Iroquois.³⁴ The Aleutians still more ingeniously sunk the point of the drill into the tinder, and held the upper end fast in their teeth by a mouthpiece made of bone. Chamisso saw tinder set on fire in a few seconds when the string was pulled quickly.³⁵ All oriental nations made use of the same apparatus in ancient times. Even Pliny speaks of rubbing fire as of a well-known fact.³⁶ According to Adalbert Kuhn, the Brahminical Hindoos, by means of a string winding itself on and off, used to make a stick, called *Pramantha*, rotate between two pieces of wood, named *Arani*. This philologist leaves us to decide whether the name of Prometheus is to be derived from *Pramātha*, theft, or from the drill *Pramantha*, and at the same time reminds us that the Thuriens formerly worshipped a Zeus Promantheus. However this may be, the ancient Greeks produced fire in the same manner as the Indians of the time of the Vedas.³⁷ Their *pyreia* or fire implements consisted of two parts, a base, named

³³ Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 343.

³⁴ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. iii.

³⁵ O. von Kotzebue's *Reisen*. Weimar, 1841.

³⁶ *Hist. nat. lib. ii. cap. 3, humani ignes . . . attrita inter se ligna.*

³⁷ A. Kuhn, *Die Herabkunft des Feuers*. Berlin, 1859.

eschara, of soft wood, ivy by preference, and the *trypanon*, answering to the drill, made of laurel wood.³⁸ This mode of kindling fire was retained till quite recently in Germany, for popular superstition attributed miraculous power to a fire generated by this ancient method. The English word *wildfire* also refers to the kindling of fire by the friction of wood. In Germany a cylinder of oak was revolved by a rope in the space between two oaken beams, in order to generate the so-called Nothfeuer (need-fire), which was supposed to avert epidemics. At Edessa, in Hanover, even in the year 1828, such a need-fire was kindled on the outbreak of the quinsy among the pigs, and the murrain among the cows.³⁹ In other nations of the Indo-Germanic family, it was necessary that every fire with claims to sanctity should be kindled by friction. If the fire in the Temple of Vesta at Rome was allowed to die out by the neglect of a priestess, a new flame was kindled, not by flint and steel, though this had long been in use, but by friction on a consecrated board.⁴⁰ At the beginning of each of their short centuries, fire was rekindled by friction by the ancient Mexicans; in the same spirit the Suaheli extinguished their fire on the first day of the year, and kindled a new one with the fire-drill.⁴¹ In Europe the striking of sparks from hard stones, with or without steel, is of post-Homeric antiquity; Pliny preserves for us the name of a supposed inventor.⁴²

As no people has yet been discovered in a fireless condition, the term savage is inapplicable, and has arisen from an erroneous view. Nor should we speak of the children of nature; we must at least term them half-civilized nations, for the natural condition of mankind is too distant for our observation, or even for our conception. Let us rather picture to ourselves some one who had never seen a rose, coming by chance upon a rose-bush in full bearing; side by side with the ripening fruit, he would see withered

³⁸ Theophrastus, *Hist. plantarum*. v. 9.

³⁹ Kuhn, *Herabkunft des Feuers*.

⁴⁰ Hermann Göll, *Die Geheimnisse der Vesta*. Augland, 1870.

⁴¹ Steere in the *Journal of the Anthropol. Institute*, vol. i.

⁴² The greater part of the above was published by the author in the *Austria Zeitschrift für Kunst und Wissenschaft*. 1872.

flowers, blossoms in every stage of development, opening and closed buds, shoots with swelling nodes, and, finally, new eyes nestling in the axils of the leaves. If he carefully traces the gradual transitions, the history of the plant's life lies unfolded before him. Past, present, and future do not here follow one another, but exist side by side. Looking only to the sequences of the various stages, it may be asserted, paradoxical as it sounds, that the fruit is younger than the rose, the rose younger than the bud; for the fruit followed the blossom, and the flowers were preceded by the swelling of the bud, as yet hardly distinguishable from the leaves, just as in a morphological sense it may be said that the boy is an older phenomenon than the aged man. Nor must we expect to find nations still in a budding condition, although it is possible to pronounce in which race of mankind the oldest or, rather, the most primitive condition may still be observed. The lowest grades of civilization have hitherto been usually sought among the Hottentôts and Bushmen of Southern Africa, among the Veddahs of Ceylon, the Mincopies of the Andamans, the Australians and the kindred Tasmanians, and, finally, among the Eskimo, the Fuegians, and the Botocudos of Brazil. With the exception of the last, we find all the people enumerated either at the extreme margin of continents, and mainly on their southern extremities, or on remote islands or island continents; it is doubtful whether, as feeble tribes, they have been driven to the outskirts of continents, or whether, having prematurely separated themselves from other races of mankind, they could no longer be reached by the increasing blessings of civilization, or perhaps, owing to the diminution of their own numbers, were unable even to preserve those advantages of culture which they had formerly acquired. But it is only the misapprehension of the unlearned that could rank nations of such high intellectual powers as the Hottentôts and Eskimo with these still primitive people. Whether the Australians and Tasmanians rank among the lowest human beings will be sufficiently shown in a later chapter devoted to these people. But the other nations previously mentioned have risen considerably in our estimation on nearer acquaintance.

The Bushmen, or Sān, have hitherto been regarded as the link

connecting monkeys with men. And I willingly admit that, in 1852, I saw Bushmen in London whose animal appearance might well have cured any one of the beautiful delusion that all men were made in the image of God. But Livingstone soon afterwards warned his countrymen not to believe that the piteous objects exhibited were genuine types of an African race, since ugly individuals were alone selected and brought to Europe to gratify curiosity.⁴² It is only in the desert of Kalahari that the race of Bushmen has degenerated to a dwarfish size. Livingstone and Chapman⁴³ describe some of those further north, near Lake Ngami, as well-grown and handsome men. Their demeanour and appearance exhibit the self-respect characteristic of all races living in unrestricted liberty.⁴⁴ Although naked, the strictest modesty prevails among them, and the delicacy with which they woo a maiden, as well as the circumstance that their marriages are made only from affection, places them high above many other nations. Chapman relates with emotion his surprise, when out of gratitude for his having given them a share of his game, some Bushmen presented him one morning with a cup of water, the most costly gift in those thirsty regions.⁴⁵ It is also noteworthy that these lowly people find pleasure in artistic experiments. With great firmness of hand they have painted the cliffs from the Cape to beyond the Orange River with figures of men and animals in red, brown, white, and black colours, or etched them in light tints on a dark ground; the copies which we possess justify the assertion that the outlines appear more true to nature than those of many of the Egyptian monuments.⁴⁶ Lichtenstein contends that Bushmen have a conception of a supreme Being,⁴⁷ but later travellers suppose them to believe in a male and female deity,⁴⁸ and they certainly maintain priests or sorcerers.⁴⁹ As it

⁴² Missionary Journeys in Southern Africa, vol. i. p. 64. *

⁴³ Travels into the Interior of South Africa. 1868.

⁴⁴ G. Fritsch, Drei Jahre in Südafrika.

⁴⁵ Chapman, Travels into the Interior of South Africa.

⁴⁶ G. Fritsch, Die Eingebornen Südafrikas.

⁴⁷ Reisen im südlichen Afrika.

⁴⁸ Waitz, Anthropologie, vol. ii. p. 346.

⁴⁹ Fritsch, Eingeborne.

■ proverbial among them that death is merely a sleep, it is almost a matter of course that they pray to the deceased as Livingstone ascertained. Intemperance and dirt are the only vices laid to their charge.

Another primitive people is to be found in the gloomy forests of Ceylon. There dwell the Veddahs, now said to be reduced to 8000 heads, a nearly naked hunting tribe, whose language is supposed to be Cingalese uncontaminated by Sanskrit or Pali. Their skulls are narrow (index of breadth 66 to 78) but always of considerable height, tolerably mesognathous, and with the cheek-bones but little prominent.⁵⁰ They traffic with their neighbours in dumb show, exchanging ivory and wax for implements and utensils such as were used in the iron age. They do not reject the most disgusting food, such as putrid meat, but on the other hand bind themselves by dietary laws, never touching vic-tuals prepared by a Kandyan from fear of losing caste, for strangely enough they claim a higher rank for their race, and their claim is admitted by their neighbours. When they are described as wor-shippers of the devil, this implies that they endeavour to appease the powers of evil by their worship. Their hunting grounds are distributed among the families and are regarded strictly as prop-erty.⁵¹ In the midst of polygamous nations, the Veddahs are remarkable for marrying only one wife, and among them it is considered that death alone can part man and wife.⁵²

As of the Veddahs so of the Mincopies, the inhabitants of the Andaman Islands, we possess but scanty information, although for nearly twenty years past the English have been in the habit of transporting their Indian criminals to this archipelago. As there is no lack of four-footed game on these islands, hunting is a common means of procuring food among the aborigines, who are dreaded by their enemies as good marksmen.⁵³ They make nets admirably adapted for catching fish,⁵⁴ and are yet more famous for the graceful lines of their canoes, which are made

⁵⁰ Barnard Davis, *Thesaurus Craniorum*, p. 132.

⁵¹ Sir Emerson Tennent, *Ceylon*, vol. ii. pp. 439-451.

⁵² Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 51. Lubbock, *Prehistoric Times*, p. 344.

⁵³ Frederic Mouat, *Andaman Islanders*, p. 321. 1863.

⁵⁴ *Ibid.* p. 326.

of trunks of trees scooped out until the sides are ~~thick~~ ~~than those of a wooden band-box~~⁵⁵ They venture far out to sea in these canoes to spear fish by torchlight. As their language has not yet been thoroughly investigated, it would be quite premature to deny that they have any religious feelings. Their mutual intercourse is courteous and genial, and the affection between parents and children is peculiarly tender. They have been classed among the inferior races on account of their nudity, and probably also because they have always offered armed opposition to any attempts to land upon their shores.

The inhabitants of the Straits of Magellan, a region of constant damp and comparative cold, have always been described as the scarecrows of mankind. The people ethnographically most nearly allied to them are the Araucanians; we must regard them as a physically feeble tribe which could only find refuge from more powerful oppressors in the inhospitable district of Terra del Fuego. Two inventions, which are peculiar to these people, prove that, although the lowest of mankind, they are not destitute of all intelligence. As will be shown when we speak of the nautical skill of shore-dwelling populations; the Fuegians are the only South Americans who undertake voyages in hollow trunks of trees, from Ecuador to Cape Horn, and from Cape Horn to far beyond La Plata. They constantly keep a fire in these canoes, to which circumstance they and their country owe the name given to them by Europeans. In air so highly saturated with moisture, it is very difficult to set fire to wood. The fire-drill would most likely be useless, and therefore the inhabitants of the Islands of Magellan are among the few races of mankind who strike sparks from iron pyrites and catch them on tinder.⁵⁶ In breeding their sporting dogs they pay attention to the rules of cross-breeding.⁵⁷ Sad to say, they kill the old women rather than the dogs in periods

⁵⁵ Frederick Mouat, *Andaman Islanders*, p. 316.

⁵⁶ W. Parker Snow, *Off Tierra del Fuego*, vol. ii. p. 360. 1857. Perhaps, however, they may have borrowed this invention from the Patagonians, who use flint and steel like Europeans. Musters in the *Journal of the Anthropological Institute*, vol. i.

⁵⁷ Darwin, *Variations of Plants and Animals under Domestication*, vol. ii. p. 207.

of famine, alleging that the dogs catch sea-otters, and that the old women do not.⁵⁸ Charles Darwin also says, "I was incessantly struck, whilst living with the Fuegians on board the *Beagle*, with the many little traits of character showing how similar their minds are to ours."⁵⁹ Fitzroy ascribes to them a belief in a just deity, who sends adversity as a punishment for delinquencies.⁶⁰

Perhaps the Brazilian Botocudos, of all the inhabitants of the world, are most nearly in the primitive state. Although they do not live at the southern extremity of a continent, their native country is inhospitable, and was the last of the coast districts of Brazil to be colonized by Europeans. The Botocudos live in complete nudity and disfigure themselves by inserting wooden plugs in their lips and cheeks, from which habit they have received their name, which is derived from the Portuguese *botoque* (stopper); they call themselves Engkeräkung. They gain their livelihood by the arrow, and with a forethought rare in other tribes, wrap a cord round their left hands as a protection against the recoil of the string. They live in the age of the polished but unpierced stone implements, build huts, sleep on matting, cook in earthenware vessels, and are said to worship the moon as the author of creation.⁶¹ The use of their hunting-grounds is permitted only to the proprietors, and, poaching is avenged in single combats not unlike duels.⁶² To provide communication in their territory, suspension bridges are constructed with the stems of climbing plants (çipo).⁶³ Let us add that their language possesses an expression for blushing,⁶⁴ and that they enliven their feasts with songs, which are however rude and deficient in imagination. In the second half of the seventeenth century the Engkeräkung were still so powerful that they were able to destroy three landing-places, totally expelling the Portuguese from the province of Porto Seguro, a deed which they could never have accomplished had there not been some national feeling binding all the various tribes together. But their greatest achievement has yet to be related; the Nakenuk,

⁵⁸ Darwin, *Journal of Researches*.

⁵⁹ *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 232.

⁶⁰ W. P. Snow.

⁶¹ Prince of Vied, *Reise nach Brasilien*.

⁶² *Ibid.*

⁶³ *Ibid.*

⁶⁴ *Ibid.*

one of their tribes, presented themselves regularly on September 6th, for three successive years, at a Brazilian settlement, to be entertained, according to agreement, at an annual carousal; they must, therefore, have adopted some means of calculating time.⁶⁵

Possibly we are altogether mistaken in considering the races just described to be lower than all others. Their languages are very imperfectly known, and until these have been investigated, it is impossible for anybody to understand their mental conceptions. It has always been passing travellers who have drawn the most doleful pictures of so-called savages, and especially have asserted the poverty of their language. This, for instance, had been the fate of the Carib language until Alexander von Humboldt declared that "it combines wealth, grace, strength, and gentleness. It has expressions for abstract ideas, for Futurity, Eternity, and Existence, and enough numerical terms to express all possible combinations of our numerals."⁶⁶

As the tribes above mentioned live by hunting or fishing, and reside mainly on islands, they will, before long, become extinct. We do not mean to imply that pastoral tribes will not also die out, as is the certain fate of the Hottentots and all the nomads of Northern Siberia. The North American hunting tribes, in the territory of the Hudson's Bay Company, have continued to thrive under the protection of favourable laws, but now that the privileges of the Company have been abolished, these tribes will probably meet with the general fate. The opening of the great western railroads to California will greatly accelerate the extinction of the Bison tribes and the other remnants of the Indian race, and the next century will not find any Redskins in the United States, or at most as domesticated curiosities they may drag on a miserable existence for a few years. This process by which the beings of a past age pass away ought to be no mystery to us.

Above all, the idea of sanguinary suppression must not be entertained. The Spaniards are very frequently reproached for special barbarity. We have no intention of denying that they were deeply

⁶⁵ J. J. von Tschudi, *Reisen durch Südamerika*. 1860.

⁶⁶ Alex. von Humboldt, *Eine wissenschaftliche Biographie*. Herausgegeben von Karl Bruhns. 1872.

stained with Indian blood, but this was caused by greed and not by cruelty; the extermination was always lamented, and an attempt to counteract it was made by lenient though powerless laws. The transatlantic history of Spain has no case comparable in iniquity to the act of the Portuguese in Brazil, who deposited the clothes of scarlet-fever or small-pox patients on the hunting-grounds of the natives, in order to spread the pestilence among them;⁶⁷ and of the North Americans who used strychnine to poison the wells which the Redskins were in the habit of visiting in the deserts of Utah;⁶⁸ of the wives of Australian settlers, who, in times of famine, mixed arsenic with the meal which they gave to starving natives;⁶⁹ or, finally, of the English colonists in Tasmania, who shot the natives when they had no better food for their dogs.⁷⁰ Yet neither cruelty nor oppression have anywhere entirely extirpated a human race, nor have even new diseases, including the small-pox, annihilated nations; still less is it due to the brandy epidemic: a far more powerful angel of destruction now acts on races once joyous and happy, and this is, weariness of life. The unfortunate inhabitants of the Antilles killed themselves wholesale by mutual agreement, partly by poison and partly by the halter.⁷¹ A missionary at Oaxaca told the Spanish historian Zurita, that whole tribes of the Chontals and Mijes had agreed to renounce all intercourse with their wives or to destroy the unborn progeny by poison.⁷² The true cause of the extinction of so many various races of mankind is that no new generation springs up among them. It is the decrease of births in the Sandwich Islands⁷³ and Tahiti which is bringing about the disappearance of the tribes. The inhabitants of Taio-Hae, an island of the Mendana group,

⁶⁷ Prince of Vied, *Reise nach Brasilien*, vol. ii. p. 64. Tschudi, *Reisen durch Südamerika*.

⁶⁸ R. Burton, *The City of the Saints*, p. 576. 1862.

⁶⁹ Waitz (*Gerland*), *Anthropologic*, vol. vi. Eyre, *Central Australia*, vol. ii. p. 175. 1845.

⁷⁰ Bonwick, *The Last of the Tasmanians*, p. 50. 1870.

⁷¹ Las Casas, *Hist. de las Indias*.

⁷² Zurita, *Chefs de la Nouvelle Espagne*.

⁷³ In the first census in the Sandwich Islands in 1832, 130,315 individuals were counted, in 1853 they had diminished to 73,138, and in 1872 to 49,044. Globus, June, 1873.

diminished from 400 to 250 inhabitants in the course of three years, during which period only three or four births took place.⁷⁴

Certain misunderstood instances help to explain this fact. A young Botocudo boy was brought up by a Brazilian family at Bahia, attended the schools and the university, obtained a medical diploma, and for a time practised as a physician at Bahia. Profound melancholy had always been the chief feature of his character. One day he disappeared, and years afterwards his adopted parents received intelligence that he had discarded clothes and education, and was roaming about the forests with his tribe.⁷⁵ A similar case was witnessed by Dobrizhoffer among the Abipones; and he also relates the story of a Spanish lady who, with her children, fell into the hands of this warlike tribe, and remained with them till a ransom was obtained. Her son Raymond and her daughter, who had grown up among the Redskins, entirely refused to return.⁷⁶ The late Admiral Fitzroy brought a Fuegian to England, where he was christened and brought up under the name of Jemmy Button, and was for a time made much of as a pet in good society. He was taken back to his native country in the expedition in which Charles Darwin went round the world. On his return to his own home, Jemmy Button, who in Europe had always worn gloves and polished boots,⁷⁷ at once became a naked, unwashed, unkempt Fuegian, as he had formerly been, and in 1855 no longer differed from his fellows.⁷⁸ Another well-known case of this sort is that of an Australian named Bungari, who was educated at Sydney, where he gained prizes at the college, and spoke Latin well, but who afterwards escaped from civilization into the bush, and declared that education had been of no use but to make him conscious of his misery.⁷⁹ The hydrographer Neumayer also relates that, having lost his way on the Lower Murray in 1861, he was taken by

⁷⁴ Quatrefages, Rapport.

⁷⁵ J. J. von Tschudi, Reisen in Südamerika.

⁷⁶ Geschichte der Abiponer. Wien, 1783.

⁷⁷ C. Darwin, Journal of Researches, p. 207.

⁷⁸ Philipps, The Missionary of Tierra del Fuego, 1861; and Parker Snow, Off Tierra del Fuego, vol. ii. p. 29.

⁷⁹ Bonwick, The Last of the Tasmanians, p. 359.

the natives to a naked black man, who noted in his pocket-book, in faultless English, the names of the most important localities through which he was to pass on his return. This literary Australian, who was at that time twenty-four years of age, had been educated at a missionary school in Adelaide.⁸⁰

Unsympathetic anthropologists have endeavoured to prove by such cases as these that men of a different colour from their own belong to other species. These examples show principally that the measure of mental capacity is not unequally distributed, but we are also surprised to see that the so-called savage prefers a life of freedom to all the advantages and conveniences of civilization. The difficulty of accustoming hunting tribes to a sedentary life, is not that they are incapable of living in our way, but that they choose to live in their own way. They look upon all labour as degrading, and on hunting as the only dignified and manly occupation.⁸¹ "The black man does not work," say the Australians, "for he is of high birth."⁸² When the English and Dutch colonists settled on the eastern shores of the United States, a native was here and there observed watching from an elevation how the farmer followed his plough, not in order to learn his secret, but first to gaze in wonder, and then to turn away in pity, as if he silently thought, with the Latin poet, that life could not possibly be worth more than the pleasures which render it desirable (*non propter vitam vivendi perdere causas*). That this is the final impression of the native we may perceive from another trait. The Red Indians of North America imagine the next world to be a continuation of the present existence. The Great Spirit, as they hope, will transplant them to regions abounding in game.⁸³ Thus the warlike Maori of New Zealand imagine life after death as a constant series of skirmishes and battles in which the blessed are always victorious. Our Germanic forefathers cherished the same hopes. The life of the

⁸⁰ Neumayer, at the meeting of the Anthropological Society at Berlin, April 15th, 1871.

⁸¹ According to Charlevoix this is the case with the Algonkins and Iroquois (*Nouvelle France*. 1744). They show great industry, however, in the preparation of their hunting and fishing tackle.

⁸² "White fellows work, not black fellows; black fellow gentleman." Hale, *United States Exploring Expedition; Ethnography*, p. 109.

⁸³ Charlevoix, *Nouvelle France*. 1744.

uncivilized man appears to him so full of enjoyment that he can think of another life only as an enhancement of the same. Now let us ask ourselves whether we should be satisfied with an enhancement of our present existence ; whether an artisan would like to imagine the life after death as a cotton mill a mile in length. Or can we suppose that a Londoner, who goes into the country a very few times during the year, and some years not at all, could imagine the next world to be an exaggerated London ? We must therefore conclude that in the lowest social grades the sense of physical ease is far greater, the appreciation of life far smaller ; that the so-called savage prefers to renounce existence rather than undergo the burdens of civilization. Had the home of the ancient Teutons, as Tacitus describes them, been in North America, they would in all likelihood have succumbed, after the discovery by Europeans, to the same fatality which has destroyed the Algonkins and the "Five Nations." The transition from hunting to careful husbandry must be slowly effected during several generations, or the extinction of the race is inevitable. We therefore see that those natives of the New World who had already reached a higher grade of civilization, such as the natives of Mexico, Yucatan, Central America, Ecuador, Peru, and Chili, not only do not die out, but that now, after about three hundred years, are again becoming the dominant races in their own country, although in a less advanced state of civilization.

When comparing hunting tribes with literary nations, there is one circumstance which we ought never to forget. We are all slaves of society, laboriously tutored from our youth upwards to perform the work of a wheel, or often enough of a mere peg or a screw, in the machinery of civil life. Freedom is enjoyed only by the Botocudo, the Australian, or the Eskimo. We never feel the loss of natural liberty, for it is impossible to lose what has never been possessed. But, lest these words should be deemed a lamentation over a lost Paradise, we will add that on the other hand civilized man enjoys one liberty which coloured hunting tribes may well envy him, namely, intellectual liberty. It has frequently been asked whether all savages have religious feelings. No ethnologist will put this question. He knows that the nearer the state of nature, the greater is the belief in Nature. The sway

of the incredible is nowhere stronger than in the mind of the so-called savage, who trembles all his life before the creations of his own imagination. A choice was offered to our species; we were free either to become slaves in an organized society, but to be free from the terrors of imagination, or, disencumbered of all social bonds, to range as lords over wide hunting-grounds, but to be scared by every frivolous and ugly dream, and to remain the prey of a childish fear of spectres.

II.—FOOD AND ITS PREPARATION.

WHEN first considering the primitive development of the human race, we regarded it as self-evident that the scene of its first growth must have been in a region where daily food is freely offered for the mere trouble of taking it. This is the case only in the tropics, so that it was impossible to conceive that sacred garden in which our first parents were as yet free from the cares of providing sustenance, except as adorned with the feathered crowns of palm trees. There are even now small communities which are allowed to reap where they have not sown, and to gather where they have not planted. In the region of the sago palm in the Sea of Banda, Malays and Papuans find supplies of food always awaiting them. In many coral groups of the South Seas and the Indian Ocean, the meals throughout the whole course of the year consist only of cocoa-nuts, or, at most, fishing occasionally supplies a change. The whole family of palms in general is the readiest foster-mother of mankind. Among the trees cultivated by the natives in the tropical parts of South America, is the *Guilelma speciosa*, which bears the pupunhas, resembling the apricot or the egg-plum. It must have been cultivated from time immemorial, and propagated by grafts, as the originally hard stone has been reduced to fibres or entirely changed into pulp.¹ The forests on the Amazon are like a neglected orchard, in which the Brazilian chestnut (*Bertholletia excelsa*) ripens its almond-like seeds, and the cocoa, the pine-apple, the Sapodilla plum (*Achras sapota*), the Avocado pear (*Persea*,

¹ Martius, Ethnographie.

gratissima) grow wild, as well as many berries, and plum and cherry-like fruits; the Miriti (*Mauritia flexuosa*) also furnishes palm wine and food. Here, then, food is constantly supplied, and in abundant variety.² In Central Africa the doom palm (*Hyphaena thebaica*), differing from all other palm trees in having a branched stem, annually bears above two hundred nutritious nuts as large as oranges.³ By the side of this palm, the date, in the oases of the Sahara, affords sustenance not only to the rider but also to his horse. It is true that it no longer grows wild anywhere, and to secure a harvest the blossoms of the male tree must be artificially placed in connection with those of the female plant.

The bread-fruit tree has been transplanted by the Polynesians from its home in the Moluccas and the Philippines, across the South Seas. During eight successive months of the year it ripens fruits as large as melons, which, when buried in the earth, may be preserved in an edible condition during the other four months.⁴ This latter custom is however not universal, for the younger Pritchard observes,⁵ that the yams ripen in the six months during which the bread-fruit is failing or altogether absent; yams, however, certainly presuppose some degree of cultivation. According to J. R. Foster's calculation, twenty-seven bread-fruit trees, which would about cover an English acre with their shade, are sufficient for the support, during the eight months of fruit-bearing, of from ten to twelve people. If we knew with certainty the original habitat of the pisang or plantain, which three times a year bears from seventy to eighty pounds of fruit in clusters, and according to an often-cited calculation of A. von Humboldt,⁶ yields on an equal surface of ground fifty times as much nourishment as wheat, we should be inclined to believe that the first appearance of our race was under the picturesque shade of the tattered oar-like leaves of the Musaceæ. Outside the tropics, however, there are also dense thickets of trees, showering edible and easily preserved fruits on men who shun labour. The Mezquite forests in North

² Martius and P. Gumilla, Orinoco.

³ Sir Samuel Baker in the Proceedings of the Royal Geogr. Society. 1866.

⁴ Charles Martins, From Spitzbergen to the Sahara.

⁵ Polynesian Reminiscences. 1866.

⁶ Bemerkungen auf einer Reise um das Welt. 783.

America cover the ground to the depth of an inch with fallen pods, which are not only greedily devoured by horses and mules, but from which an acid beverage is prepared for man's consumption, while in Mexico the beans are said to be ground and baked into bread. It is at any rate certain that these seeds of the *Algarrobia* or *Prosopis glandulosa* are carefully packed in baskets and stored by the Mohave tribes on the Western Colorado, to serve as a resource in case of the failure of other and more favoured fruits.⁷ Pods like those of these acacias of the dry western parts of North America, are produced in the Pampas of La Plata by the *Prosopis horrida*. The present inhabitants call the fruit St. John's bread (algarroba), but except in name it has nothing in common with the pods of the *Ceratonía siliqua* of the south of Europe. The fruit is picked up twice a year by the Abipones, and eaten either raw or mixed with water, and converted by fermentation into a vinous beverage.⁸

Although the supplies of food hitherto enumerated belong chiefly to the plains, the mountain sides are not totally destitute. In the Cordilleras of Chili the araucarias, which there take the place of our conifers, produce spherical fruits, which are as large as a man's head, and which contain from two to three hundred nuts, each of which is twice the size of an almond, and when roasted fresh resembles a chestnut in flavour. As two hundred of these nuts are sufficient for a day's food for the greatest eater, eighteen araucarias are sufficient for a year's sustenance.⁹ But we need not go to the Andes of Antuco for such instances. The pine forests of Southern Europe might also be cited; nay, even in the stone-pine of our mountains, which rarely grows at an altitude of less than four thousand feet, we ourselves possess a tree yielding food and growing wild. The fact may be mentioned here that the potato was found wild in the highlands of Chili; and that in Peru the quinoa (*Chenopodium quinoa*) grows at an altitude equal to Mont Blanc; without this plant it is hard to believe that a dense population on Lake Titicaca could have built the famous temple dedicated to the worship of the sun.

⁷ Möllhausen, Tagebuch.

⁸ Dobrizhoffer, Geschichte der Abiponer.

⁹ Pöppig, Reisen.

Although the native habitats of our cereals are still unknown, there yet exist in boggy marshes wild graniferous plants which have hitherto escaped cultivation. In North America the natives collected, and still collect, the ears of the marsh millet (*Zizania aquatica*).¹⁰ The banks of the pools, back-waters, and igarapes (side streams), of the Rio Negro in Brazil are covered with wild rice (*Oryza subulata*), the ripe grains of which the colonist as he passes in his boat has only to strip off.¹¹ Quite recently Schweinfurth¹² has mentioned another species of rice (*Oryza punctata*), which at the rainy season makes its appearance in all the pools in the Bongo country, in the neighbourhood of the Gazelle river, and which, though not collected by the negroes of that district, is considered a pleasant article of food by the Baggara Arabs and also at Darfur. Even the arid plains of Kalahari produce many edible roots, bulbs, beans, juicy fruits, and the esculent maguli, the milky juice of which allays thirst.¹³

The examples given by no means exhaust the list of the esculent plants of the desert. Those who have studied the subject will be able to add many others, or some will even be surprised that we have overlooked important instances. Yet enough has been said for our purpose. Nor is our enumeration of different sorts of food intended to uphold the idea that man in his earliest stages of development depended solely on the vegetable kingdom for his nutriment, and, like Brahmins and Buddhists, passed over the animal kingdom with holy awe. Vegetable products claim precedence because man is fitted for a vegetable diet, both by his dentition and digestive system, so that hunger must have driven him to change his mode of nourishment. But even animals which are classed among graminivora by comparative anatomists do not adhere rigidly to the diet allotted to them. As the apes of the New World are exactly analogous to man in dental structure, which is the point with which we are here primarily concerned, it is a significant fact that a similar abnormal mode of

¹⁰ The Acclimatization Society of Berlin has since 1870 undertaken the cultivation of Indian rice, and, as it appears, successfully. Ausland, 1872.

¹¹ Von Martius, Ethnographie, vol. i. p. 679.

¹² Im Herzen von Afrika.

¹³ Chapman's Travels into the Interior of South Africa, vol. ii. p. 297. 1868.

subsistence has been observed in them also. Thus, according to Otto Kersten's¹⁴ description, baboons gather leaves and leaf buds, blossoms and half-ripe fruit, dig up bulbs and roots, but also pursue such animals as they are able to overpower. They turn over stones in order to find the insects on the lower side. Pupæ of ants and butterflies, larvæ of beetles, smooth-skinned caterpillars, flies, and spiders are welcome prey. They are also most inveterate birds-nesters, devouring the eggs and nestlings of any but the largest birds; nay, they catch the fledglings and seize mice, devouring them with manifest satisfaction. Not unlike the description of these baboons are the remarks of Alfred Lortsch on the Australians, who not only eat marsupials, but all sorts of birds, even carrion kites, eels, fish of every kind, bats, flying foxes, frogs, lizards, snakes, and worms.¹⁵ We have lately seen a similar list given by Schweinfurth, who says of the Bongo or Dor negroes, that they allow no animal food, with the exception of dogs and men, to escape them; they take rats, snakes, carrion kites, hyænas, fat land scorpions, winged ants, and caterpillars.¹⁶

F. Appun says of the Indians of British Guiana, that "Game and fish constitute their chief food, but they do not despise rats, monkeys, alligators, frogs, worms, caterpillars, ants, larvæ, and beetles."¹⁷ The disgust caused by any article of consumption is merely conventional, or arises from fear of the unknown. Nor are civilized Europeans justified in shuddering at the Chinese for considering swallows' nests and trepang (*Holothuria*) as great delicacies, or because in Arabia a flight of locusts is greeted as a feast given by God, when they themselves do not shrink from the trail of snipe, nor from lobsters and crayfish, although the latter, as water scavengers, act both as grave-digger and grave. Hence, in picturing to ourselves the mode of subsistence in use among the original stock of our race before the institution of husbandry, and even before the adoption of hunting, we must not suppose that vegetable fare alone appeased their hunger, but that everything was seized that seemed fit to eat. Turning first to

¹⁴ Reisen des Baron von der Decker in Ostafrika.

¹⁵ Ausland. 1866.

¹⁶ Globus, Bd. xxii. No. 5.

¹⁷ Ausland. 1872.

the sea-side at every season of the year, we may gather edible shell-fish from the shoals, and even from the bottom of the sea, as well as snails in considerable quantities. The accumulations of shells of edible molluscs, which extend in heaps along the shores of the Danish islands, and are known to archæologists under the name of kitchen-middens, consist of the shells of four species of molluscs found in the Baltic, which formed the sustenance of the inhabitants of the shores from the palæolithic to the neolithic age.¹⁸ As soon as attention was directed to these remains, similar accumulations were recognized in Scotland, the United States, Brazil, and Australia.

The capture of fish without the use of fishing apparatus, either net or line, is an every-day occupation in Kamtschatka. Fifteen miles in the interior of this peninsula, Kennan¹⁹ found the sluggish streams polluted by the bodies of dead and putrifying salmon. He saw fish of this species from 18 to 20 inches long, laboriously wending their way upwards in brooks scarcely deep enough to cover their backs with water, so that they could be taken out with the hand. In Cambodia, where fishing-tackle is not used, Adolf Bastian²⁰ observed that the natives let the water of the river Tasavai into a canal, dammed it up, and then drained it off again, in order to catch in their hands the fish which had entered during the interval. A Chinaman at Calumpit, in the island of Luzon, was seen by F. Jager²¹ to do exactly the same thing. Poisoning the water, as it is practised in South America, presupposes more reflection and more protracted observation of nature. The process in use in Guiana has been elaborately described by F. Appun,²² who saw the Cambodian system of damming and draining in use among the Indians of that district.

It would evidently be a hopeless undertaking to point to any one region of the earth as that which, by a constant supply to meet daily needs, was best adapted for the home of our first ancestors before they were strengthened by thought and practice; on the contrary, innumerable districts of both continents of our

¹⁸ See above, p. 40.

¹⁹ *Tent Life in Siberia.* 1871.

²⁰ *Völker Ostasiens.* Jena, 1868.

²¹ *Reisen in den Philippinen,* p. 74. Berlin, 1873.

²² *Ausland.* 1870.

planet were fully adapted for the reception of man. The facts which we have put together may, however, free us from the old mistake of supposing that the spread of our race from one centre of creation to remote continents, could only have taken place under more mature conditions. Of food, at least, there can have been no want: the profusion, greater in some localities than in others, and the narrow regions to which palatable articles of food were originally confined, may have contributed much to entice tribes which had roamed abroad and had discovered these new sources of food, to settle in the uttermost corners of the world. Throughout historic and such prehistoric times as are susceptible of investigation, nations have constantly been in a state of migration, adhesion to the soil being peculiar to highly advanced states of society.

We must not here entirely omit to mention a custom unworthy of the human race.²³ While it seldom occurs that animals devour their own species, we meet with cannibalism in nearly every part of the world. In some cases, this horrible custom is less depraved, in that it is founded on the lamentable superstition that the estimable qualities of the person devoured are thus absorbed. At the time of the Taiping insurrection, an English merchant at Shanghai met his servant in the street, carrying home the heart of a rebel, with the avowed intention of eating it to increase his own courage.²⁴ Sometimes it is not the sensual appetite but the desire for revenge which prompts this most dishonourable mode of interment for the fallen enemy. Occasionally the deity himself is made to take part in the transaction, when human sacrifice is followed by a revolting feast on human flesh, as was the custom in ancient Mexico.²⁵ On the other hand, it is quite inadmissible to justify cannibalism by a plea of physical compulsion, as if our bodily welfare urgently depended on an alternation of animal

²³ Richard Andr  e has lately published a work on the spread of cannibalism in the Transactions of the Ethnological Association of Leipsic, from which it appears that this vice is more common among the Australians than was supposed. A distinction should be made between cannibals by taste and those who are so from superstition.

²⁴ Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 167.

²⁵ Prescott, *Conquest of Mexico*, vol. i. p. 78.

and vegetable food, 'for in India more than a hundred' million people are satisfied with a 'vegetable diet. It is usual to quote the case of the Maori who on their arrival in New Zealand found no terrestrial quadruped there, and driven by an uncontrollable natural impulse, were forced to eat human flesh.'²⁵ But cannibalism is common to all other Polynesians. It has been proved to exist on the Marquesas Islands, the Hawai group, Tahiti, and elsewhere, where pigs and dogs are bred for the sake of their flesh, so that the Maori must assuredly have been polluted by this disgusting vice before they²⁶ separated from their kindred tribes. Moreover, even nations which were in the habit of breeding cattle, such as the Immithlanga, a Zulu tribe in South Africa, were not free from this abomination,²⁷ and among their kindred, the Basuto, it was only suppressed by the chief Moshesh.²⁸ It would be a mistake to regard this as a vice peculiar to the so-called inferior and less responsible nations. The Australians, although they cannot be entirely exculpated, are yet not habitual cannibals. X As far as we know, neither Hottentots nor Bushmen have ever been suspected, but there can be no doubt of the cannibalism of the Botocudos. The detestable custom is most frequently encountered exactly among those nations and groups of nations which are distinguished from their neighbours by their abilities and more mature social condition, such as the ancient Mexicans, who have already been mentioned. Papuans in general, including the inhabitants of New Guinea and the Solomon Islands, the New Hebrides, New Caledonia, and the Fiji group, are cannibals by taste, and yet as a race we must rank them as high or even higher

²⁵ The same might be said of the inhabitants of Rapa-nui, near Easter Island. *Revue maritime et coloniale*, tome xxxv.

²⁶ While alluding to the fact that cannibalism was suppressed on the Western Paumotu Islands by the Tahitians, Meinicke conjectures that the latter were free from this vice, but Gerland (Waitz, *Anthropologie*) has given evidence of the contrary.

²⁷ Waitz, *Anthropologie*.

²⁸ Casalis, *Les Bassoutos*. 1859. Among the cave-cannibals were two Betschuan tribes, the Ba-fukeng, or Ba-brukeng, and the Ma-katla, as well as two Kaffir tribes, the Ba-makakana and the Ba-matlapatlapa. Their hiding-place was in the vicinity of Thaba-Bosigo, near the source of the Caledon river. *Anthropological Review*. April, 1869.

than the Polynesians. Among the Asiatic Malays, the Batta of Sumatra are so advanced as to have framed an alphabet of their own, although after the Indian model.²⁹ The statement made by a Dutch governor of Padang to Bickmore³⁰ the traveller, respecting the supposed recent origin of cannibalism, is a legend invented by the Batta themselves, for they were cannibals as early as Nicolo Conti's time,³¹ and even in the days of Marco Polo;³² nay, if the island of Ramni of the old Arabian records has been rightly indentified as Sumatra, the Batta disgraced the dignity of the human race by this vice a thousand years ago.³³ In Equatorial Africa we find two tribes equally degraded, namely, the Fans of the West Coast, described first by Du Chaillu and afterwards by Burton, as remarkable for their work in iron and generally for their high degree of intelligence,³⁴ and the Niamniam, or Sandeh, in the region of the Gazelle Nile, who excel their neighbours in civilization, both of which tribes are cannibals according to Petherick and Piaggia. Finally, Schweinfurth brought to Europe the first account of their southerly neighbours on the Uelle, the light-coloured Monbuttoos, whose semi-civilization is very wonderful when compared with the primitive condition of the Nile tribes; yet there can be no doubt of their cannibalism. An old experience was confirmed by their case, namely, that the consumption of dogs' flesh generally accompanies, and is the first step to, cannibalism.³⁵ Schaaffhausen³⁶ maintains that even Europeans within this century have not abstained from human flesh, but we must leave him to answer for the trustworthiness of his authority. In the last siege of Messina, the flesh of the captured soldiers is said to have been

²⁹ Waitz, *Anthropologie*.

³⁰ *Reisen im ostindischen Archipel*. Jena, 1869.

³¹ In the only correct version of Poggio, recently published by Fr. Kunstmann (*Indien im 15 Jahrhundert*. Munich, 1863), his words are: "In ejus insulae (namely, Sumatra), quam dicunt Bathech parte anthropophagi habitant."

³² Lib. iii. cap. ii.

³³ Peschel, *Gesch. d. Erdkunde*.

³⁴ Winwood Reade (*Savage Africa*, 1863) speaks of the Fans as an extremely civil and amiable race. According to Zucchelli (*Missione di Congo*. Venezia, 1712), the Congo negroes are also cannibals.

³⁵ *Im Herzen von Afrika*, vol. i. p. 442, and vol. ii. p. 98.

³⁶ *Archiv für Anthropologie*. 1870.

sold on the Giudecca, and that of the Swiss at a higher price than that of the Neapolitans.

From all these facts, we learn that cannibalism does not pervade entire groups of nations, with the exceptions of the Papuan and the Polynesian, but occurs only in very isolated cases in Africa and America, while it is, almost entirely absent in Asia, and in Europe belongs to past ages of uncertain date. The supposition that all human societies in their more barbarous stages have been guilty of this vice, and have overcome it, is incapable of proof, especially as it has lately been acknowledged that legends of cannibalism have easily spread from one nation to another, so that their local occurrence by no means proves anthropophagy in prehistoric times. It was also assumed with unjustifiable haste that where human sacrifices were customary, human flesh had previously been eaten, as if nothing had been laid upon the altars of the gods which was not esteemed as valuable food by those who brought the offering. Cannibalism was never associated with the numerous human sacrifices in Khondistan. As may be ascertained from Campbell's minute descriptions, they were offered to the deified Earth in order to obtain the boon of a productive harvest. Sacrifice of women and of domestic slaves on the tombs of the deceased is certainly quite unconnected with anthropophagous habits. Thus the *Ada*, or "great custom," of Dahomey is founded solely on a belief in immortality. Hundreds of men perish at the grave of a king, victims to the delusion that their spirits will follow and aid the departed, or convey to him the latest tidings from this world.³⁷ For thousands of years the Hindoos have abstained from all animal food, and yet at the great festivals of Juggernaut, these people, in a paroxysm of religious frenzy, were wont to cast themselves by dozens under the wheels of the idol's car in voluntary self-sacrifice. Because Abraham bound his son on an altar of wood, it does not follow that before Abraham's time the Hebrews were cannibals, nor that the Romans had once been in the habit of eating their fellow-creatures, because Pliny³⁸ mentions that an edict against human sacrifices was published at Rome in u.c. 357. We may therefore assume that here and there, not only

³⁷ Ausland, p. 407. 1861.

³⁸ Hist. nat. xxx. 3, 4.

barbarous, but even superior races of mankind yielded to the horrible temptation, and that cannibalism has assuredly not been a disease inevitable in the evolution of our species.

It is extremely difficult to prove the effect exercised by diet on the civilization of individual nations. All that we can confidently assert is that insufficient or unsuitable fare has always been followed by physical and mental deterioration. In the prolific hunting-grounds of Australia, travellers have found vigorous and well-made people, instead of such shrivelled deformities as are seen on the west coast. It is only in the deserts of Kalahari that the Bushmen are small and emaciated.

As to the choice of diet, we can only repeat a general and well-known rule. Food abounding in carbon is more eagerly seized in cold than in warmer climates. The arctic circle would be uninhabitable to the Hindoo without a change in his dietary rules, as on the other hand it would be difficult for the Eskimo transported to India to devour enormous quantities of raw seal's blubber. If we add Moritz Wagner's accurate observation,³⁹ that in Southern Asia, and in Central and Southern America, wherever there is a want of animal food, vegetables are largely consumed, and that where rice constitutes the daily food, fishing is zealously pursued, we shall have given all the information which can be looked upon as certain. On the other hand, it is not proved that bodily strength, physical courage, and acuteness of intellect, are not as possible with vegetable as with animal diet. Of all the Polynesians, if we except the inhabitants of solitary islands, the Maori of New Zealand were the only people who did not fatten either pigs or dogs, and unless it be assumed that their occasional repasts on human flesh may have supplied this deficiency, it must be admitted that, on a diet of fish and roots, they have become the most powerful, courageous, and warlike race of their family of nations, and the one which has made most advance in the social arts.

Probably each of us has at some time had personal experience of the effects of alcohols and narcotics, and has perhaps observed that a moderate use of wine is capable of raising us above the

prosaic state of our every-day life. With many the excitement produced by tea or coffee is still more powerful. When we feel ourselves thus strengthened, it seems as if we were able to see more clearly and to argue more acutely. Ideas previously eagerly but unsuccessfully sought now crowd upon us in rapid succession, and new truths seem to be within our grasp. This would seem to show, perhaps, that the movements evoked by our mental functions have been accelerated by narcotics, or their length of vibration increased. Mental progress must perhaps have become perceptibly more rapid in human society since the discovery of these magic potions.

Let us be warned by the errors of Buckle, who, lured on by deceptive facts of this description, deceived himself and a willingly deluded multitude into a belief that it is possible to explain the course of the history of the most highly civilized nations by the chemical constituents of their food. The rapid rate of intellectual progress in our days is primarily due to the adjustments of modern society, which furnishes science with many more disciples, and these all better prepared than formerly. The greatest inventions of mankind, hieroglyphic and phonetic writing, the division of time, weights and measures, the positional value of figures, are older than the acquaintance with narcotics, and to wine alone could we ascribe any share in this service. The Mosaic conception of God, the Zoroastrian dualism, Christianity and Islam, Indian legends and philosophies, have all arisen without the aid of narcotics. During the age of Chinese invention, that is to say, during the first three dynasties, tea was unknown in China. Copernicus devised his system, Galileo confirmed it, and Kepler proved it by his laws, without coffee and without knowing its very name. Hence it is more prudent not to enter upon the obscure inquiry as to the excitability of our intellectual faculties by means of stimulants.

Of equal importance with food is its preparation. The consumption of raw flesh and fat is habitual only among the Eskimo, although it occurs exceptionally elsewhere. Among other people glowing embers and a wooden spit are generally employed for roasting. The rinds of gourds, or the shells of nuts, mostly serve as drinking vessels, and among Bushmen occasionally the eggs of

the ostrich. Their neighbours, the Betchuans and Kaffirs, plait baskets so closely that liquids are retained in them.⁴⁰ Unserviceable as wooden vessels may seem for boiling water, human sagacity hit upon the expedient of making stones red hot, and then dropping them into water in such wooden vessel. In this manner cooking was first carried on. A yet simpler method is pursued by a tribe of Red Indians in the north of the prairies. They line a hole made in the ground with the skin of the slaughtered game, pour water upon it, and heat the water with red-hot stones, hence the Ojibwas called these tribes the Assiniboinis, or stone-cookers.⁴¹ Since commerce has supplied them with earthenware vessels and cauldrons, this primitive mode of dressing meat has been practised only on festive occasions.⁴² Beyond the Rocky Mountains, the Ahts of Vancouver's Island,⁴³ as well as the Tshinuks of Oregon, use heated stones and wooden vessels for cooking,⁴⁴ and the Kolushs further to the north occasionally employ their canoes as kettles for boiling large fish. The Kamtskadals also cook by means of heated stones dropped into wooden troughs.⁴⁵ Even in Europe, as Linnæus records, cooking with stones had been retained in Finnish East Bothland as a remnant of remote past ages.⁴⁶ Tylor has ascertained that heated stones were used in Ireland for warming milk even in the year 1600, and that in the Hebrides in the sixteenth century meat was still cooked in the skin of the animal.⁴⁷ This last method was customary in the woodless southern steppes of Russia at the time of Herodotus. He says that the Scythians used the bones as fuel, and the skin of the animal as a vessel in which the meat and water was placed during the process of cooking.⁴⁸ The Polynesians, who had no earthenware utensils, prepared their food in pits lined with leaves, on which the

⁴⁰ Casalis, *Les Bassoutos*. Paris, 1859. T. G. Wood, *Natural History of Man*; Africa, p. 63.

⁴¹ Catlin, *Indianer Nordamerika's*. Leipzig, 1851.

⁴² The Patagonians do the same when on their hunting expeditions, although at home they use iron kettles. Musters, *Journal of Anthropol. Institute*. 1872.

⁴³ Ausland. 1868.

⁴⁴ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. iii. p. 336.

⁴⁵ G. W. Steller, *Kamtschatka*. 1774.

⁴⁶ Linnæus, quoted by Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 270.

⁴⁷ Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, p. 272.

⁴⁸ Herod. lib. iv. cap. 61.

animal or vegetable food was placed with some heated stones; the holes were then filled up with leaves and covered over with earth. From all this we get a clear idea of the mode of dressing food implied, when it is said of a people that they cook with stones, or that they possess no earthen vessels.

Mankind may have discovered how to manufacture earthen vessels in various ways. Sir John Lubbock points out that Captain Cook saw stones surrounded with a rim of clay in use among the Aleutians on Unalashka; but this might be an imitation of European vessels with which the islanders had already become acquainted through Russian sailors. The practice of the Australians on the Lower Murray river, of puddling holes in the earth with clay, and cooking food in them, might perhaps have led an inventive mind to the manufacture of earthen vessels. But the process is better explained by the account of the French sailor Gonneville, who, in 1504, landed on a South Atlantic coast, probably in Brazil.⁴⁹ He describes certain wooden vessels in use among the natives (in whom D'Avezac fancies that he recognizes Brazilian Carijo), enveloped in a coating of clay as a protection from the fire.⁵⁰ If by chance the wooden bowl separated itself from the covering of clay, an earthen vessel would remain. In examining the site of an old pottery manufactory of the Red Indians on the Cahokia, which falls into the Mississippi below St. Louis, Carl Rau discovered half-finished vessels, that is to say, baskets of rushes or willow, lined inside with clay. When the vessel was baked the fire naturally consumed the external covering. Half-finished vessels from the Southern States show that the rinds of gourds instead of baskets were lined with clay.⁵¹ Hence the art of making pottery was independently invented in America and in the Old World, in centres of civilization unknown to us. From this centre it may have spread over the whole of Africa, with the sole exception of the Bushman district, but not to the extreme north-east of Asia, and not across Behring's Straits. That the Europeans of prehistoric times also originally

⁴⁹ Pierre Margry, *Les Navigations françaises*. 1867.

⁵⁰ D'Avezac, *Voyage du Capitaine de Gonneville*. 1869.

⁵¹ Carl Rau in the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. iii.

lined basket-work with clay, may be inferred from the decorations of vessels of the stone age. These decorations consist merely of rows of marks made with the finger nail, as if to represent the traces left by the basket work.⁵² When some bold individual began to shape the clay by hand, his earthen vessels were perhaps regarded as not genuine, or of inferior quality, as they had not originated in the time-honoured fashion; in order to meet these doubts he may have counterfeited the impressions of the rushes with his nail. In South America even the Botocudos possess earthen vessels, as do all the natives with the exception of a few tribes of the Pampas.⁵³ Nor are they wanting among the Papuans; but they do not exist among the Polynesians and Australians.

All races use their cutting implements to divide the meat into large pieces, in which operation barbarous nations generally exhibit great anatomical dexterity. Forks, which, as we shall see, were unknown in Northern Europe only a few centuries ago,⁵⁴ are, as a rule, found only in nations of mature civilization, but they are in use among the Papuans of the Fiji Islands.⁵⁵ The mussel shell suggested the first idea of the spoon, and still performs its functions on the Atlantic shores of Morocco.⁵⁶ On the White Nile the Bari negroes eat their meal porridge with wooden spoons, and the Kitsh negroes with the shells of fresh-water mussels.⁵⁷ In Southern Africa the Hottentots use spoons made of mother-of-pearl or of tortoiseshell; ⁵⁸ among the Bantu negroes these utensils are artistically carved out of wood and adorned with figures of animals.⁵⁹ Chop-sticks, after the Chinese fashion, and cooking spoons are in use among the Papuans of New Guinea.⁶⁰

⁵² G. Klemm, *Allgemeine Culturgeschichte*. 1843.

⁵³ D'Orbigny, *l'Homme américain*.

⁵⁴ Little is known about the use of forks in Europe. Tylor has ascertained that in Ruysbroek's time (1253) forks were in use among the Mongols as well as in the west. (*Early History of Mankind*, p. 22).

⁵⁵ Williams, *Fiji*, vol. i. p. 212.

⁵⁶ Gerhard Rohlfs, *Erster Aufenthalt in Marokko*. 1873.

⁵⁷ W. von Harnier, *Reise am oberen Nil*.

⁵⁸ Kolben's *Reise an das Vorgeb. d. G. Hoffnung*.

⁵⁹ Casalis, *Les Bassoutos*. Paris, 1859.

⁶⁰ Otto Finsch, *New Guinea*, 1865; and *Nieuw Guinea*, ethnographisch en natuurkundig onderzocht, uitgegeven door hetv. Kon. Instituut voor taal-land-en volkenkunde. Amsterdam, 1862.

Alexander von Humboldt observes that the uncivilized natives of South America, who, like caterpillars, are restricted to one species of vegetable food, on a change of abode with difficulty accommodate themselves to any other diet, and generally sicken in consequence. The alternation of the seasons in temperate quarters of the world, he continues, enabled man to obtain, and accustomed him to digest, various substances, while at the same time he acquired greater freedom in the choice of his abode.⁶¹ Hence the preparation of food gains great importance in ethnology: it is an interesting fact that at Tongataboo, one of the Friendly Islands, by skilful variation in the dressing, forty different dishes are prepared from the few indigenous edible plants.⁶² Future observers ought always to note carefully whether the natives eat salt with their provisions. This is not done, for instance, by either the Papuans⁶³ or many Malay nations,⁶⁴ nor by the Hottentots in South Africa.⁶⁵ In the districts of the Soudan negroes there is no rock salt, but it is brought from the Sahara by caravans. The negroes living between the Gambia and the Niger suck pieces of salt as eagerly as our children suck sugar-plums. It is there said of rich people that they eat salt at their meals.⁶⁶ Zucchelli, the missionary, describes the process of evaporating sea-water in use among the natives on the coast of Congo; but it is uncertain whether this mode of obtaining salt was in use before the settlement of the Portuguese.⁶⁷ In South America the nations of the coast of Brazil adopted this new article of food in imitation of Europeans, and very quickly recognized its value. The Patagonians consume a large quantity of salt which they procure without trouble from the natural brine-pits of their own country.⁶⁸ Even at the time of their discovery the people on the coast of the Caribbean Sea used salt as money in their commercial transactions. This salt was in the brick-like shape in which they

⁶¹ Handschriften. Eigene Gedanken.

⁶² Quatrefages, Rapport.

⁶³ Otto Finsch, New Guinea.

⁶⁴ Waitz, Anthropologie, vol. v. p. 129.

⁶⁵ Kolbe, Reise an das Vorgeb. d. G. Hoffnung.

⁶⁶ Mungo Park, Reise ins Innere Afrika's. Berlin, 1799.

⁶⁷ Zucchelli, Relazioni del viaggio e missione di Congo. 1712.

⁶⁸ Musters in the Journal of the Anthropol. Institute, vol. i.

obtained it from the natural salt-pans on the peninsula of Araya.⁶⁹ Saltpetre procured from vegetable ashes is used as a substitute for salt on the Orinoco.⁷⁰ P. Charlevoix⁷¹ expressly remarks that the Algonkin and Iroquois nations were not in the habit of salting their food. On the other hand, during de Soto's hazardous expeditions, the Indians of the present Southern States of North America were supplied with salt from the province of Cayas by native merchants.

III.—CLOTHING AND SHELTER.

WHEREVER European seafarers saw the inhabitants of newly discovered shores in a state of nudity, they at once concluded that these natives were in the lowest grade of human development. Nor is it only among highly civilized nations that a covering for the naked body is looked upon as the first step upwards from a so-called savage state. The missionary Williams relates that a shaman or priest of Somosomo, one of the Fiji Islands, who, like all his countrymen, was satisfied with a masi or scanty hip-cloth, on hearing a description of the naked inhabitants of New Caledonia and of their idols, exclaimed contemptuously, "Not have a masi and yet pretend to have gods!" But the more familiar we have become with foreign customs by means of thorough research, the more frequently have we found that nudity is not incompatible with modesty, and, above all, that in different nations modesty enjoins the veiling now of one, now of another portion of the body. Were a pious Mussulman of Ferghana to be present at our balls, and see the bare shoulders of our wives and daughters, and the semi-embraces of our round dances, he would silently wonder at the long-suffering of Allah, who had not long ago poured fire and brimstone on this sinful and shameless generation. Before the appearance of the Prophet the veiling of women was not customary in the East. Countess Pauline Nostiz abashed the ladies in the royal harem of Mascat by approaching them without

⁶⁹ Peter Martyr, *De orbe novo*, Dec. i. cap. 8.

⁷⁰ Gumilla, *El Orinoco ilustrado*. 1741.

⁷¹ *Nouvelle France*.

a wire mask. There, not even the mother sees her daughter with uncovered face after the twelfth year, but, on the other hand, the transparent garments allow the body and limbs to be clearly seen.¹ Karsten Niebuhr says that women who, while bathing at Basra on the Euphrates and in a bath at Constantinople, were surprised by men covered their faces only.² Similarly the Fellaheen women in Egypt uncover themselves unabashed before men, provided that their faces remained veiled.³ The Arab women, says George Ebers, will, without embarrassment, allow foot, leg, and bosom to be seen, but, on the other hand, it is reckoned even more indecorous to uncover the back of the head than the face, though even that is carefully concealed by every respectable woman.⁴ The oldest Christian community were of a like opinion, for the apostle commanded women to veil their hair during their devotions.⁵ Strangely enough the Hottentot women also wear a cloth like a cap upon their heads, and many cannot be induced to remove it.⁶ In nations of the Malay race, modesty takes another form. The traveller Jagor told the author that while he was drawing a little naked girl at Samar, one of the Philippine Islands, the mother angrily interrupted them, and obliged the child to put on a shirt, of a length which, according to our notions of propriety, might as well have been dispensed with;⁷ still it covered the most essential part according to the manners of the country, namely, the navel. Among the inhabitants of Navigators' Island also it is considered the greatest disgrace for this part of the body to be visible.⁸ In China a woman is considered immodest if she shows her artificially distorted foot to a man; it is even improper to speak of it, and in decent pictures it is always concealed under the dress.⁹ Longobard women also considered themselves mortally disgraced if men saw

Joh. Wilh. Helfer's Reisen in Vorderasien und Indien. 1873.

Reisebeschreibung nach Arabien. Kopenhagen, 1774.

Waitz, Anthropologie, vol. i. p. 359.

Durch Gosen zum Sinai. 1873.

1 Cor. xi. 5-6.

* Fritsch, Eingeborne Südafrika's.

Representation of the child in Jagor's Reisen in den Philippinen.

Waitz, Anthropologie, vol. i. p. 359.

Wilh. Stricker im Archiv für Anthropologie. 1870.

their legs from the feet to the knees.¹⁰ With these strange freaks of the sense of modesty we may compare the fact that we, on the contrary, regard uncovering as a token of respect. Thus we take off our hats as a salutation in the street, at church, and generally in every covered place. The English officials in India always require every native, of whatever caste, to lay aside their shoes before entering the audience chamber.

Thus habit and custom decide what is permissible and what is offensive, and not until an opinion has become established does any neglect of it become a reprehensible act. Nudity prevails among both sexes of the Australians, the Andaman islanders, sundry tribes on the White Nile, the red negroes of the Soudan, and the Bushmen, all of which tribes have as yet no sense of shame. The Guanches, or old inhabitants of the Canary Islands, those at least of Gomera and Palma, may be added to this list.¹¹ The inhabitants of the Bahama Islands, the Lesser Antilles, and a number of coast tribes in the present Venezuela and Guiana, to whom the name of Caribs is often incorrectly given, are described by their first discoverers, the Spaniards, as completely naked. In the time of Eschwege and Martius, the number of naked Brazilians, such as the Puris, Patachos, and Coroados was much greater than at present, when the Botocudos alone have not adopted any clothing.¹²

The supposition that the sense of modesty arises earlier in the female sex than in the male is entirely erroneous, for there are many races of which the men alone wear clothes. The missionaries on the Orinoco assured A. von Humboldt,¹³ that the women show far less sense of modesty than the men. Among the Obbo negroes east of the outlet of Baker's great Nile lake, the only covering of the women is a bunch of leaves, whereas the men wear an apron of skins.¹⁴ In the interesting kingdom of the Monbutoo negroes, on the Uelle, the men wear a garment of bark

¹⁰ Chron. Salernit, cited by Pertz, Monumenta. Hanover.

¹¹ Kunstmann, Afrika vor den Entdeckungen der Portugiesen. 1853.

¹² As to the clothing of the Coroados at the present day, see Burmeister, Reise nach Brasilien. 1853.

¹³ Reisen in die Aequinoctialgegenden. Stuttgart, 1860.

¹⁴ Baker, Albert Nyanza, vol. I. p 273.

which reaches from the breast to the knees, while their wives merely fasten pieces of banana leaves no larger than the hand to their girdles.¹⁵ Speke found that extreme strictness in the matter of decency of clothing prevailed at the court of Mtesa, King of Uganda. Although the apprehensions of his friend Rumanika were unfounded, that admission to this country would be denied to him and Grant because they wore trousers only and not flowing garments after the Arab fashion, it afterwards transpired that the king punished with death every man who appeared in his presence with only an inch of his leg uncovered, while at the same time the service of the house was performed by completely naked women.¹⁶ The Arabian traveller, Ibn Batoutah, declares that it is only when unclothed that women, even if they are princesses, may approach the king of the Mandingo state of Melli.¹⁷ Livingstone was received by the Queen of the Balonde negroes, in South Africa, when she was in a state of complete nudity, and the women of the neighbouring Kissama negroes appear in the same condition on festive occasions.¹⁸ In half-clothed races the covering is assumed only on reaching adolescence, and it is an exceptional case, which moreover requires confirmation, if it is true that the Australian women go naked only after their marriage.¹⁹

Fair-skinned nations feel the need of clothing far more keenly than dark ones. The Africans are fully conscious of the advantages of their dark skin.²⁰ We remember reading a statement of Adolf Bastian, that when he was bathing near some brown-skinned Asiatics, his own white skin appeared to him abnormal and by no means beautiful. Von Maltzan also says "Nudity was never displeasing to me if the skin was black, but in fair people it is always repulsive."²¹ In like manner, F. Jagor describes his coachman at Singapore, a black Kling from the coast of Coromandel, whose

¹⁵ G. Schweinfurth, *The Heart of Africa*, vol. ii. p. 110.

¹⁶ Speke, *Sources of the Nile*, vol. i. p. 262.

¹⁷ *Voyage d'Ibn Batoutah*. Paris, 1858.

¹⁸ Livingstone, *Missionary Journeys*, vol. i. p. 315. Hamilton, in *the Journal of the Anthropological Institute*, vol. i.

¹⁹ Dumont d'Urville, *Voyage de l'Astrolabe*. 1830.

²⁰ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. ii. pp. 381, 382.

²¹ *Globus*. 1872.

dress consisted simply of a turban and a waistcloth, adding significantly, he did not look indecent, for dark colour almost removes the impression of nudity.²² By the majority of American Indians clothes are replaced by skin painting. Where this is the case, shame is felt by women and men if they are seen unpainted. A. von Humboldt, to whom we owe this observation, adds that on the Orinoco the extreme of poverty is expressed by saying, "The man is so wretched that he cannot paint his half body."²³ Tattooing, which is another substitute for raiment, consists of drawings on the body, produced either by the injection of coloured pigments under the skin, or by the artificial formation of raised scars. That it actually takes away from the impression of nudity is declared by all who have seen fully tattooed Albanese. Tattooing may still be seen in every quarter of the world with the exception of Europe. In the South Sea Islands it not only serves as ornament where it extends to covered portions of the body, and where the etched drawings represent emblems of the deities, but has a religious signification.

That clothing frequently serves only for personal adornment or is worn as a protection from cold, is proved by the case of the well-clad Maori of New Zealand, who have no notion of decency.²⁴ This applies to the highly civilized Japanese, among whom the bathing of both sexes in common, in enclosed areas as well as in the open air, has only recently been prohibited by the authorities.²⁵ The Eskimo, who in the winter are enveloped to the face in furs, nevertheless, according to Kane's strongly expressed description, completely lay aside their garments in their subterranean dwellings, and the demeanour of the wife of Hans the Eskimo, on board Hayes's ship, plainly shows that she had no idea of decency. G. G. Winkler²⁶ found that even the Christian and thoroughly conventional population of Iceland had not yet arrived at the perception which the scriptural parents of the human species had already acquired in the Garden of Eden.

These facts ought to render us extremely cautious in estimating

²² Reiseskizzen.

²³ Reisen in den Aequinoctialgegenden.

²⁴ Waitz, Anthropologie, vol. i. p. 357.

²⁵ Wilhelm Heine, Japan.

²⁶ Iceland, p. 107.

the moral worth of a people by its standard of bodily covering. But although, as we have shown, chastity and morality are quite independent of the absence or vividness of sexual modesty, yet in every nation, the awakening of this latter feeling is a mark of progress. Before the idea of covering himself dawned on any human being, he must have discriminated between the beautiful and the ugly.* For clothing we are therefore indebted to the earliest æsthetic emotions experienced by the human species, and in so far as reverence for the beautiful has an ennobling effect upon us, these emotions promoted the education of mankind. Correlatively with the decline of rigid morals at ancient Rome, arose a contempt for the maxims of propriety. The desire for clothing is first awakened by the consciousness of a higher dignity, which urges man to endeavour to increase the separation between himself and animals. It is not mere vanity endeavouring, it may be, to hide the loss of youthful charms, for at a much earlier period a wish is felt to throw a veil over, so to speak, unmerited degradations imposed upon us by the constitution of our animal body, and the desire arises to appear before others as if we were as pure and pleasant to the sight as the lilies of the Gospel. Notwithstanding all the strange freaks of the sense of modesty which we have just recounted, the majority of people have known exactly what most required covering. The sensitiveness of the women of ancient Lydia is known from the narrative of the wife of Candaules, as given by Herodotus;²⁷ and how carefully the modesty of the female sex is guarded by the Mandanas in North America, is told by Catlin.²⁸ Among the semi-Papuan inhabitants of the Palawan Islands, the women have an unlimited privilege of striking, flogging, or, if it be done on the spot, killing every man who makes his way into their bathing-places.²⁹

We find traces of clothing as far back as the so-called reindeer period of Europe. Bone needles were discovered in the caves of Périgord; and a similar discovery in the stratum of relics of civilization in the source of the Schussen, shows that the inhabitants of Suabia knew how to sew even in the glacial period. But in both

²⁷ Lib. i. cap. 8-12.

²⁸ Die Indianer Nordamerika's.

²⁹ Karl Semper, Die Palauinseln. 1873.

cases, the occurrence of lumps of vermilion pigment points to the co-existence of skin painting.

The material of clothing always depended on the food of each race. Thus among hunters and shepherds the skins of slaughtered animals were used. But it is instructive to notice that human invention has devised the same expedients in widely distant places, as we have already shown. The simplest form of dress consists of leaves or twigs stuck into a girdle. In other places reeds or rushes are strung upon the girdle as is done by the Papuan women of New Guinea and the Pelew Islands. As it was necessary to renew these rushes too frequently, they were replaced by bands of bass or strips of leather; this was the origin of the fringed girdle worn by the females of the Mohave tribes and their neighbours on the Colorado in North America, by the Fijians in the South Sea, where it is called Liku, by the New Caledonians, and the Kaffirs. The Tapa is exclusively Polynesian; this, as is well known, is the bark of the paper mulberry tree (*Broussonetia papyrifera*) beaten to make it soft. Where refinement had begun and higher pretensions had arisen, the plaiting of baskets and mats led to weaving. When the Polynesian Maori migrated to New Zealand they brought with them the secret of the manufacture of mats. In their new abode they found an excellent fibrous material in the leafy tufts of the *Phormium tenax*, or New Zealand flax, and they invented for themselves the art of preparing and manufacturing a sort of linen. The use of cotton has been discovered in both worlds, for the natives of America independently discovered the process of twisting the threads which they found at home, and of converting these threads into a tissue. Cotton was also indigenous in ancient Egypt and was woven into stuffs.³⁰ Still the preference for linen kept it completely in the background. Cotton was naturalized from the earliest ages even in Syria. The English word *cotton* is derived from *keton* which, with small variations in the vowels, signifies cotton in all Semitic languages, and is still *kutn* in modern Arabic.³¹ Phœnician

³⁰ G. Ebers, *Durch Gosen zum Sinai*.

³¹ H. Brandes, *Antike Namen der Baumwolle*. 5th Jahrsbericht der Ver. für Erdkunde. Leipzig, 1866.

sailors therefore conveyed not linen but cotton fabrics under the name of *Kitonet*, or *Kelonet*, to the Grecian ports, and from this term arose words such as *χιτών* and *κιθων*. The word *linum* (flax) originally vaguely used in Latin and Greek, passed, with little alteration from its Latin form, to the Basque, Celtic, and Germanic languages³² and thus appears to have spread from South-eastern to Northern and Western Europe. If spindle wheels have been found in the Danish middens, and if the weaver's bench already stood in the lake dwellings of Switzerland,³³ the art of spinning and weaving must have originated at an age so remote that it can no longer be decided which tribe or which race was the first discoverer. Hemp is certainly an acquisition for which civilization is indebted to the so-called barbarous nations. The cultivation of hemp was found by Herodotus even among the Medo-Persic Scyths.³⁴

A. Bacmeister confidently maintained that *Hemd*, *Hut*, *Haube*, *Schuhe*, *Rock*, and *Hosen* (shirt, hat, cap, shoes, coat, trousers), are primordial words in the German language.³⁵ It is noteworthy that the use of trousers first spread from Northern Europe to the classical shores of the Mediterranean and then over the whole world. But even this article of dress has been invented in various places. All Northern Asiatics wear trousers, and have worn them in the most remote ages of which we have any knowledge. Even if we suppose that in their emigration to America the Eskimo brought this novelty with them from their western home, we yet find the same garment in use among the Red Indians in the northern parts of the New World. The American aborigines had one small advantage over the old civilized nations, in that they were already in the habit of manufacturing an excellent covering for the foot; these were not sandals, but half-boots or mocassins. It is remarkable that the Patagonians, in the extreme south of the New World, also use mocassins, whereas they are unknown in Central America and the other parts of South

³² Von Hehn, *Kulturpflanzen und Haustiere*.⁴

³³ See above, and Wilhelm Baer, *Der vorgeschichtliche Mensch*.

³⁴ Lib. iv. cap. 74.

³⁵ *Ausland*, 1871. *Hemd* is certainly derived from *ιματιον*.

America. It was among the barbarians that the Romans first saw shoes; the idols of the old Egyptians are also barefooted. Shoes and sandals were also entirely wanting in Babylon, where, however, to judge from the cylindrical seal of King Uruch (2326 B.C.), great luxury in dress must have been customary.³⁶ Barefooted nations are still everywhere to be found in low latitudes, whereas in regions of perpetual snow, where it freezes, or where the ground is greatly chilled by radiation, the necessity of protection for the feet must soon suggest itself. In Africa, sandals are used by the Mandingo negroes of Musardo,³⁷ and, strange to say, by the otherwise naked Bari negroes of the White Nile,³⁸ the Kissama in Angola,³⁹ the Kaffirs⁴⁰ as well as by other Bantu negroes, and by the Hottentots.⁴¹

As many animals, and even inferior animals, provide themselves with an artificial protection against the vicissitudes of the weather, and no race of mankind has been found without a shelter of some sort, the instinct of building must be as old as our race itself. It is in caves that we meet with the first traces of our ancestors, but we must not therefore infer that these natural refuges, which exist moreover only in rocky districts and especially in calcareous mountains, were the earliest dwelling-places of man, or first suggested the idea of constructing artificial shelter. When the Bushmen are away from their caves during their excursions, they cover themselves with sand whenever they spend the night in the open air, or weave a shelter of branches and brushwood for themselves in the thicket. In the temperate season the Australians shelter themselves from the wind by screens of foliage, but at other times they stretch pieces of bark, often 12 feet in length, and from 8 to 10 feet wide, over a dome-shaped framework something like a tent.⁴² A similar summer tent of birch

³⁶ G. Rawlinson, *Great Monarchies*, vol. i. p. 107.

³⁷ Anderson's *Journey to Musardo*, in the *Transactions of the Geographical Society of Vienna*. 1871.

³⁸ W. von Harnier's *Reisen am obern Nil*.

³⁹ Hamilton, *Journal of the Anthropological Institute*, vol. i.

⁴⁰ G. Fritsch, *Eingeborne Südafrika's*.

⁴¹ Kolbe, *Kap der Guten Hoffnung*.

⁴² Dumont d'Urville, *Voyage de l'Astrolabe*.

bark sewn together, is sufficient for the Ostiaks of Siberia.⁴³ Charlevoix, the Jesuit, describes the shelter of many hunting tribes in Canada as being but little superior.⁴⁴

In the extreme north of the Old and New World, beyond the limit of trees, or where the stems of the trees are not of the requisite thickness, and also on the treeless steppes, bark walls are replaced by hides of animals. Thus the leathern tent of Lapland⁴⁵ is used throughout Siberia and as far as the prairies of the United States to the 35th degree of latitude.⁴⁶ It disappears in Equatorial and Southern America only to reappear among the Patagonians, who cover a framework of stakes with the hides of the Guanaco sewn together.⁴⁷ The felt tent, an invention of the Ural-Altaic nations, is doubtless of high antiquity. From Central Asia it has spread in the direction of the monsoon, and within the zone of the trade winds, over the Sahara, and to the wooded districts of Central Africa, but it is transformed on the way into an airy tent of a woven fabric, and rendered architectural in the Arabian style with its domes and slender shafts, the latter of which are represented by the tent-poles.

In the lofty forests of tropical America the itinerant hunting tribes are sheltered from the rain by a sloping roof of the oar-shaped leaves of palms and other trees, laid like scales one above the other. When nations finally become stationary they are at first satisfied with a quadrangular or circular framework of poles, bound together with basket-work or strips of bark. A pointed or dome-shaped roof covered with leaves, tufts of grass, or bundles of rushes, completes the simplest form of hut. Whole tribes frequently live in a single cloister-like structure, within which a cell is allotted to each family. Dumont d'Urville describes two such buildings of the Arfaki of New Guinea, which together accommodated 150 people, and on the Utanete river in the same region

⁴³ Pallas, *Voyages*. Paris, 1793.

⁴⁴ *Nouvelle France*.

⁴⁵ See the representation of Lapp summer tents given by J. A. Frijs in *le Globus*. 1873.

⁴⁶ Möllhausen, *vom Mississippi nach der Südsee*.

⁴⁷ Musters, *Journal of the Anthropological Institute*, vol. i. p. 197.

there are similar structures.⁴⁸ At Borneo, Spenser St. John saw a Dyak building 534 feet in length.⁴⁹ Similar rows of cells are also customary among the Ostiaks,⁵⁰ but the most extensive of these wooden structures are inhabited by the Haidahs on Queen Charlotte's Island in North America, and by the Colquiths on Vancouver's Island, for they accommodate from two to three hundred people, and in Nootka Sound even eight hundred.⁵¹ The bark huts of the Indians in the east of the present United States, as described by Charlevoix, are not so thickly populated, but yet contain several families.⁵² Even in South America such common dwellings occur. Wallace found them on the Uaupés (Rio Negro) among the tribe of the same name, as far as latitude 75° and longitude 115°.⁵³

In Australia and the South Seas plastic earth is never used to thicken wicker walls. Building with sun-dried bricks or adobes is peculiar to the dry highlands and lowlands of New Mexico, Mexico, and Central America, while Central Africa again has its earthen huts, the walls of which are formed of stamped clay, on which a straw roof is placed. Stone architecture at first attempted only the humblest undertakings, for the difficulty of erecting perpendicular walls with mere fragments of stone was insuperable. In Central America, as in Mesopotamia, ancient temple structures consisted of pyramids in steps. The earliest attempts at such works of art may have resembled the simple terraces, or Morai, of the Polynesian Islands, but they attained their fullest development in the smooth Pyramids of Egypt. It was in dry, treeless regions that the inhabitants were first compelled to build walls, by the necessity of finding a substitute to replace the beams which could not be procured. Architecture is therefore nearly four thousand years older in Egypt than in India, where the earliest works of the kind were the rock temples, in which, however, the roofs were supported by trunks of iron-wood (*Sideroxylon*), while according to Fergusson's researches, self-supporting stone structures were

⁴⁸ Otto Finsch, *New Guinea*.

⁴⁹ *Life in the far East*.

⁵⁰ Pallas, *Voyages*. Paris, 1793.

⁵¹ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. iii. p. 332.

⁵² *Nouvelle France*.

⁵³ Martius, *Ethnographie*.

only introduced under King Asoka, in the middle of the third century before Christ. To pierce the walls for light and air, as well as afford access to the inhabitants themselves, was a severe problem to human ingenuity. This was at last done by placing the stones so as to project one beyond the other, like inverted steps, until the highest stones approached each other so nearly that the aperture could be bridged over by a broad stone laid transversely on the top. The temple gates, which are wider at the sill than at the top, show that the art among the Egyptians and Greeks must for a time have remained stationary at this point, for even when, at a later period, the art of stone-masonry had so far advanced that it was possible to construct rectangular entrances, the primitive form was retained either from old affection or artistic taste. In ancient Babylon spurious vaults converging obliquely, and false arches, were made in like manner, namely, by projecting layers of bricks.⁵⁴

These timid attempts serve to make us recognize the full merit of the invention of the stone self-supporting arch. In the Old World the Assyrians were probably the first to adopt this expedient, and the Romans the first to advance from the construction of door and window arches to that of vaults and domes. To justify this digression into the history of art, we need only state that these facts are of importance in estimating the intellectual rank of American peoples. On the Puna, the plateaux of the Cordilleras, we find stone huts and stone tombs⁵⁵ in the district of Inca-Peruvian civilization. Humboldt⁵⁶ made sketches of arched vaults in the Palace of the Atahualpa, at Caxamarca, while further to the south, vaulted buildings and round arches at Tiahuanaco, as well as in the Temple of the Sun at Cuzco, have also been described by Desjardins and J. J. von Tschudi.⁵⁷

No small credit is due to the Eskimo for the tunnel-like stone

⁵⁴ Rawlinson, *Monarchies of the Ancient World*, vol. i. p. 86.

⁵⁵ Clement Markham, *Proceedings of the Royal Geogr. Society*, vol. xv. 1871.

⁵⁶ Alexander von Humboldt, *Eine wissenschaftliche Biographie*, ed. Karl Bruhns. 1872.

⁵⁷ F. von Hellwald *im Ausland*, No. 41. 1871.

vaulting of the entrances to their huts, and of the huts themselves.⁵⁸ The idea suggested itself more readily to them than to the denizens of more temperate zones, for they had long been in the habit of piling up snow grottoes, and of constructing domed huts with blocks of snow.⁵⁹

IV.—WEAPONS.

IF we follow the course of any of the old Spanish, Dutch, or English discoverers who preceded Captain Cook on a voyage across the South Seas, we are greatly puzzled if we attempt to assign the names accepted in modern geography to any of the islands which they saw. Even if the calculations of latitude are correct within half a degree, the error of the longitude given may on the other hand increase twentyfold, so that we must search about among countless islands which all look alike, for they are either mere coral reefs, or are recent or ancient volcanoes. Our task would thus be hopeless were we not able to ascertain the longitude by two indications. When the discoverer sailing westwards describes nations with crowns of hair, this must be close to the 180th meridian of Greenwich, for the twin islands, Hoorne and Alofa, are the most easterly points reached by the Papuans, to whom this character exclusively belongs. Again, when we read that the traveller was greeted by the natives on land or water with volleys of arrows, we may conclude that this was in the neighbourhood of New Guinea.

The Polynesian races of the South Seas have never opposed Europeans by means of bows and arrows, and, strange as it may sound, the reason of their not doing so is purely geological. If any one attempted to explain this circumstance by stating that the Polynesians, like other Malay nations, were unacquainted with these missiles, because the bow was not invented when they abandoned Southern Asia for their homes in the Pacific, we should tell him that the bow and arrow is a boy's plaything on Nukufetaw, in the Ellice group, and even much further east, at

⁵⁸ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. iii. p. 306.

⁵⁹ Chas. F. Hall, *Life with the Esquimaux*, p. 461.

Tahiti.¹ These missiles were known to the Malay Polynesians at the commencement of their migrations, and it was only at a later period that they fell into disuse. It is just the same with the Papuans, in whose original home, New Guinea, bows and arrows are never laid aside by the men, although these weapons are totally wanting among the kindred inhabitants of New Caledonia. On the other hand, the Fijians, a race with crowns of hair, like those of the Papuans of New Guinea, certainly brought bows and arrows to their island, but they now use them only for throwing burning missiles into fortified places, or they leave them to the women who are thus able to assist in the defence of their stockades. The favourite weapons of the men are the club and the spear.² The Tongans relearned to use bows and arrows from their neighbours on the Fiji Islands.³

It is easy to see why bows and arrows were forgotten on the South Sea Islands. The management of these weapons requires great skill and constant practice. Where they are in use among savage nations, travellers inform us that even the boys practise shooting with miniature implements. In the hands of an expert, the bow is far more effective in the chase than our fire-arms, for it kills in silence. An arrow which has missed its mark falls unobserved, so that the marksman can aim two or three missiles without alarming the game. We need not wonder therefore that the traveller Marcou met hunters in New Mexico, with white skin, and of Spanish descent, who had laid aside their guns and taken to the Indian weapons, which they considered better adapted for the chase.⁴ As a further confirmation, Reinhold Hensel records that the Coroados of Brazil refused to exchange their bows and arrows for fire-arms, as, on account of their noisy report, their weight, the loss of time in loading, and the difficulty of procuring ammunition, the latter were ill suited for hunting in tropical forests.⁵

But excellence in the use of this instrument requires incessant practice, a condition which among savage nations will only be ful-

¹ Waitz, *Anthropologie der Naturvölker*.

² Thomas Williams, *Fiji and the Fijians*.

³ Mariner, *Tonga Islands*. Edinburgh, 1827.

⁴ Lartet and Christy, *Reliquiae Aquitanicae*.

⁵ *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*. 1869.

filled by those who live on the produce of the chase. The first rude implements of man originally served all purposes. The hunter seized his missiles to repel an enemy; and the stone axe of the savage, which felled the tree, also split the skull of an opponent in the fray. Hence, the oldest, the truest, and the noblest implement of war is the sword, which can never have been used indifferently for war and handicraft.⁶ We may here observe that, so far as we yet know, the invention of swords in Europe dates only from the bronze age, whereas we shall presently find a case in another part of the world in which there were swords elsewhere, even in the stone age.

Bows and arrows necessarily disappear entirely wherever the chase is no longer a means of livelihood, or where hunting is impossible. As we pass in an easterly, northerly, or southeasterly direction from New Guinea, hunting ceases, for, with the exception of bats, tame pigs, dogs, and rats, all the islands are destitute of mammals. Hence the interest excited some years ago by the discovery by Haast of a wild mammal, although an aquatic one, namely, an otter, on the southern island of New Zealand. That there should be no mammalia on these islands is simply accounted for by their origin; for coral islands arise only where polyps build up wall-like reefs of their calcareous branches on the shallow surfaces of submerged continents. The only other islands are volcanic structures, originally formed below the sea, and then gradually upheaved above the surface by eruptions. These islands, New Zealand included, have never, at least since the tertiary period, been connected with any continent, so that no mammals incapable of flying or swimming were able to reach them. Hence it is that the disappearance of bows and arrows is due to their geological origin.

That this is the true and ultimate reason is substantiated in another locality. In the West Indies we have before us, not small and narrow coral structures, but large areas, such as Cuba, Haiti, Jamaica, and Porto Rico. But, with the exception of Cuba, even these spacious islands were destitute of any large mammals; for, at the time of the Spaniards' arrival, there were, besides bats, only

⁶ *i.e.*, the sword of the bronze age, which was intended for striking only.

five species of small rodents, of which the largest was but slightly bigger than a rat. These islands, the remains of larger tracts of country, must have lost their connection with the nearest continent, which is South America, in the early part of the tertiary period. North America was at that time far more distant; for the peninsula of Florida is a recent and still incomplete creation of the coral animal. As hunting was impossible on these islands, the inhabitants did not use bows and arrows, though all the tribes of the adjacent continent carry these weapons. For the sake of accuracy it must be added that, on the Antilles, on the eastern shore of Haiti, the eastern half of Porto Rico, and in the Windward Islands, there were people who wielded these weapons with dexterity. But these were new-comers, the Caribs, who, being better sailors than any other American tribes, invaded the peaceful inhabitants of the Antilles in their own abode, slew the men, and carried off the women as captives, from which circumstances there arose among them separate languages for men and women, unless we accept the other explanation, that, as among the Kaffirs, husband and wife speak different languages, because the wife may suffer no word to pass her lips which occurs in the name of any man allied to her by marriage. As these Caribs came from the continent, where they lived on the produce of the chase, we can easily understand that when they spread to the Antilles they had not completely laid aside the bow and arrow.

The blow pipe is another characteristic weapon for shooting, which is used by the Malay tribes in Borneo, and also on the continent of Asia by the Malayo-Chinese Laoti on the Mekong, as well as by the Orang-kubits⁷ and the Semangs of the peninsula of Malacca.⁸ The Papuans of New Guinea may also have borrowed it from the Malays.⁹ But the blow pipe was not invented in South-eastern Asia only, for we find it also in the hands of the Indians on the Amazon, whose aim is certain at a distance of 250 feet.¹⁰ The blow pipe has the same advantage over other weapons as a breechloader has, and a practised hand can despatch

⁷ Peschel, *Zeitalter der Entdeckungen*.

⁸ Mouat, *Travels in Indo-China, Cambodia, and Laos*. 1864. F. Jagor, Singapore, Malacca, Java. Berlin, 1866.

⁹ Waitz (Gerland) *Anthropologie*, vol. vi. p. 599. ¹⁰ Martius, *Ethnographie*.

several projectiles in the space of a minute. The small slender darts escape the notice of the victim still more easily than the arrow, and the marksman may continue to fire his missiles from his concealment until the object is struck. As the projectile force is derived from the muscles of the thorax, the strength of the percussion is very slight. To produce a deadly effect it is therefore requisite for the dart to be poisoned. Hence the poison itself is the weapon and the missile merely the vehicle. On the Malay islands this purpose is served by the Ipo, or the juice of the upas tree (*Antiaris toxicaria*), which produces very malignant but rarely mortal wounds. At least Dr. Mohnike maintains that a considerable number of arrows are required to produce tetanic rigidity in an old orang-outang.¹¹ On the other hand Spenser St. John asserts that in a conflict in Borneo with the Kanowit Dyaks, in 1859, the English lost thirty of their men by small and scarcely perceptible wounds made by the poisoned darts;¹² and Lieutenant Crespigny saw a native of Borneo die in two hours after being wounded in this way in the calf of the leg and in the shoulder.¹³ Similar effects were produced by a poisonous unguent used by the warlike and bloodthirsty inhabitants of the shores of the Caribbean Sea. According to the accounts of the old Spanish navigators, the death of the wounded took place somewhat tardily, amid delirium and agonies of suffering, frequently only after the lapse of twenty-four hours. They state that the poison was made of the juice of the manchineel tree (*Hippomane mancinella*), mixed with snakes' poison;¹⁴ but their assertions are all very obscure and questionable.

We are better informed as to the most terrible of all poisons, namely, the urari, curaré, or woorali, of the Indians of the river Amazon¹⁵ and of Guyana. Neither Lacondamine nor Spix and

¹¹ Ausland, vol. xlv. 1872.

¹² Far East, vol. i. p. 46.

¹³ Proceedings of the Royal Geographical Society, vol. xvi. 1872.

¹⁴ Oviedo, Historia general y natural de las Indias, lib. xxvii. cap. 3.

¹⁵ This dreaded poison is prepared on the river Amazon by the tribes living near the sources of its northern affluent, between Rio Negro and Japura (Bates, The Naturalist on the Amazon, vol. ii. p. 238. London, 1863). The Indians on the Napo river procure the urari from the Tecunas; and the return voyage of the boats occupies no less than three months. In their own country the poison is weighed against silver (James Orton, The Andes and the Amazon. 1870.)

Martius witnessed the preparation of this arrow poison. Alexander von Humboldt was the first to penetrate into a manufactory of this poison on the Orinoco, and bring samples of curaré back to Europe. But it was the younger Schomburgh at Pirará who first assisted at the preparation of the unguent.¹⁶ The urari, as he calls it, was made of various vegetable substances, but the actual poison is the bark and albumum of the *Strychnos toxifera*. In small warm-blooded animals the smallest wound is followed by instant death, and even larger animals stagger and collapse. Humboldt even declares that the earth-eating Otomaks kill their antagonists by the pressure of their poisoned thumb nails.¹⁷ Samples of urari, or curaré, were brought to Paris about ten years ago, and were there employed in experiments by the celebrated physiologist, Claude Bernard.¹⁸ It then became apparent that the poison operates only if it is able to mingle with the blood. The cessation of nervous power in muscular movements then commences, but ultimately the action of lungs and heart is stopped, and death results quite painlessly from the greatest conceivable degree of lassitude, like the stopping of a pendulum when the clockwork has run down. When the poison is fresh even animals as large as the tapir collapse after a few steps.

The practice of poisoning missiles is also common in Africa, According to the records of the Portuguese discoverers, the Joloferes in Guinea, as well as the negroes of Rio Grande, formerly poisoned their arrows.¹⁹ The Mandingo negroes did the same in the days of Mungo Park,²⁰ and, according to Benjamin Anderson, it is even now done by the Mandingoes at Musardo.²¹ On the White Nile the Moro negroes, who live near 5° north latitude,²² as well as the Bari negroes, are said to anoint their arrows with the poison of snakes or plants.²³ Du Chaillu says that the Fan

¹⁶ Richard Schomburgh, *Reisen in Guayana*. 1847.

¹⁷ *Ansichten der Natur*.

¹⁸ *Revue des Deux Mondes*. 1864.

¹⁹ Peschel, *Zeitalter der Entdeckungen*.

²⁰ Mungo Park, *Reisen im innern von Afrika*. Berlin, 1799.

²¹ *Globus*, vol. xx. 1871.

²² Petherick, *Central Africa*. 1869.

²³ W. von Harnier *Reise am obern Nil*.

negroes in South Africa do the same.²⁴ Ladislaus Magyar²⁵ relates that the southern neighbours of the Kimbunda in Bihé, poison the points of their spears. Livingstone speaks of kombi, a poison made from a species of *Strophanthus* by the people living on the Shiré, and of another arrow poison used on Lake Nyassa; he also states that the Bushmen of Kalahari procure a poison for their missiles from the entrails of a small caterpillar named Nga.²⁶ Theophilus Hahn, on the other hand, asserts that the Bushmen obtain the poison for their arrows used for hunting from the bulbs of *Hæmanthus toxicarius*; but for their weapons of war from the poison glands of snakes and the juice of a kind of spurge (*Euphorbia candelabrum*).²⁷ Kolbe saw Hottentots anoint their arrows with the poison of the hooded snake.²⁸ Pliny speaks of the Arabian pirates in troglodyte Africa, that is to say, on the southern shores of the Red Sea, as poisoners of arrows. Another Arabic race, the Bhortans of the Himalayas, completes the list.²⁹

The nations enumerated are all within the tropical, or at least within the subtropical, zone. The whole of North America is free from this evil practice, which, according to Moritz Wagner, has its most northerly limit in the New World at the Isthmus of Darien, and at Choco on the Atrato.³⁰ The single exception yet known to us is the case of the Ceres, or Seris, of the Bay of California, who make use of these hateful weapons.³¹ The use of the blow pipe in South America has been already noticed; we will now only add, on the authority of Dobrizhoffer, that the Chiquitos in Paraguay anointed their darts with a poison so fatal that, if the least blood was shed, the smallest injury produced death in the course of a few hours.

But it would be a mistake to suppose that this means of inflict-

²⁴ Explorations and Adventures in Equatorial Africa. 1861.

²⁵ Reisen.

²⁶ Livingstone, Zambesi, p. 466. A representation of this larva is given in Wood's Natural History of Man.

²⁷ Th. Hahn in the Globus. 1870. G. Fritsch, Eingeborne Südafrika's.

²⁸ Vollständ. Beschreibung des Vorgebirges der guten Hoffnung. 1719.

²⁹ H. von Schlagintweit, Indien und Hochasien.

³⁰ Naturwissenschaftliche Reisen. 1869.

³¹ Waitz, Anthropologie der Naturvölker.

ing death is peculiar to sultry or warm regions. Chinese writers mention the poisoning of weapons as practised by a Tungus tribe in the third century A.D., and by the Mongols in the fifth century.³² Even now it is practised by the bearded Aino³³ at Saghalia and the Kuriles; in Steller's time the Itelmes of Kamtschatka used monkshood (*Aconitum napellus*)³⁴ for the same purpose, and even the inhabitants of the Aleutian Islands knew and used a poison for their darts.³⁵

We read of these treacherous instruments of death in classical antiquity. Horace mentions them in his odes.³⁶ Ovid accuses the Pontic nations in the vicinity of his place of exile of the practice of this crime.³⁷ Pliny gives an antidote for poisoned wounds, and blames the depth to which human nature has descended in adding the effects of a serpent's bite to the sharpness of iron.³⁸ Even the Celts of Gaul made occasional use of this expedient,³⁹ as did the Saracens in the war of Granada in 1484.⁴⁰

This custom had therefore spread through every region of the world, with the exceptions of Australia and the Polynesian Islands, where bows and arrows do not exist. We have dwelt longer than usual on this subject, which we were the first to review,⁴¹ because the suppression of this crime affords one of the rare instances in which man's social instinct has not only raised the level of his morality, but has induced him to strive towards still further improvement; for the crude impulse of self-preservation would certainly warrant the use of poisoned weapons. A passage in Homer shows that some nations even then began to be ashamed of such unworthy means of defence. Odysseus wants to purchase a deadly arrow-poison from Ilos at Ephyra, who, however, refuses it to him from fear of the eternal gods.⁴²

³² Alex. Castrén, Ethnol. Vorlesungen, p. 26.

³³ Herr von Brandt, Berlin Anthropological Society's Transactions. 1872.

³⁴ Kamtschatka. 1774.

³⁵ Waitz, Anthropologie, vol. iii. p. 316.

³⁶ Lib. i. 22.

³⁷ Tristium, lib. iii. Eleg. x. v. 62.

³⁸ Hist. nat. lib. xx. 81.

³⁹ Forbiger, Handbuch der alten Geographie.

⁴⁰ Hernando de Pulgar, Cronica. Valencia, 1780.

⁴¹ Ausland. On the Influence of Local Conditions on some Weapons. 1870.

⁴² Odys. I. 260. Ephyra must be either in Epirus, or in some island of the Argolic bay.

The reason of this refusal suggests why poisoned arrows are used only in the tropics and their vicinity, for the barbarous races of those parts are not troubled about the wrath of the eternal gods.

Another projectile apparatus, the sling, can occur only where there are stones, which are not everywhere to be found. The Amazon and its huge tributaries pass at once from the slopes of the Cordilleras through a flat table-like plain, with a scarcely perceptible fall, throughout which no shingle is to be found, for a fathom of loam covers the finely triturated clay or marl.⁴³ If all parts of the world had resembled these South American plains, mankind could never have advanced to the stone age, but must have remained at a stage of wood and horn. It is obvious that slings could not be used in the forest country of the Amazon. In North America we find slings only among the Eskimo. They are very common, on the contrary, in the South Sea Islands, among the inhabitants of the Marianne Islands,⁴⁴ on the Samoa group,⁴⁵ in Tahiti and the Sandwich Islands.⁴⁶ The Papuans of the Fiji group and New Caledonia use them.⁴⁷ On these islands the sling was also habitually used to knock coconuts down from the trees. It is less evident why the Guanches, the extinct inhabitants of the Canary islands, employed this weapon; it may be that they brought their slings from their earlier home in Northern Africa. The best slingers of classical times were also islanders, from the Balearic group.⁴⁸ The sling does not occur in the Soudan, or only rarely, but it is very common among the nations of biblical history. Among the Hebrews the slingers of the tribe of Benjamin were famed for fighting with either hand, and could sling stones at a hair's breadth and not miss.⁴⁹ It was by slinging a stone against a gigantic Philistine that the royal dynasty was founded in Judah. Stony pastures,

⁴³ Ed. Pöppig, Chile, Peru und der Amazonenstrom.

⁴⁴ Waitz, Anthropologie, vol. v. p. 30.

⁴⁵ Fr. Müller, Reise der Fregatte Novara; Anthropologie, vol. iii. p. 39.

⁴⁶ Heinr. Zimmermann, Reise um die Welt mit Capt. Cook. 1781.

⁴⁷ F. Knoblauch. Ausland, 1866.

⁴⁸ Forbiger, Handbuch der alten Geographie.

⁴⁹ Judges xx. 15, 16.

such as extend throughout Palestine, provoke practice with the sling, especially as all shepherds are in the habit of throwing, partly for the defence of their animals, and partly to punish either their dogs or stray members of the flock. Adolph von Wrede saw formal practices, in shooting at a mark, and throwing stones, among the Bedouins of Hadhramaut in Arabia.⁵⁰ The sling has become a national and favourite weapon in South America. While the hunting tribes of the wooded plains to the east of the Andes are armed only with the bow, the sling is used both for the chase and for war in the land of the Incas, by the civilized Quichua and Aymara nations, on the treeless plateau of the Cordilleras called the Puna. All the nations of the South American Andes use the sling as far southwards as Cape Horn, where the Fuegians use it in hunting the llama or, rather, the guanaco. The Patagonians of the steppes in the south and west of the Argentine Republic are allied by race to the nations of the Andes. Here slings, and the art of using them, have reached their highest development. The stones, which are rounded and held by a leather band, are swung above the head. This is the origin of the bolas, a casting-line with balls.⁵¹ In the course of time the casting-line was even used without any stone; the Gauchos, or half-bred shepherds of the Argentines, still fling their lasso with such dexterity that they use it for defence in preference to a gun.⁵² The ordinary sling was superseded by the line and balls in ancient Egypt. In the hunting scenes depicted on the monuments, is a huntsman of the age of the Pharaohs whirling a line with balls round the hind legs of a buffalo.⁵³ It need not be rashly inferred from this that the Patagonians are descended from the ancient Egyptians, or that Egyptians straying from the Phœnician fleet which sailed round Africa under Pharaoh Nika had perhaps reached South America.

⁵⁰ Wrede's *Reisen im Hadhramaut*.

⁵¹ On the use of the bolas among the Quichua nations in Peru, comp. Markham, *Proceedings of the Royal Geographical Society* vol. xv. Meeting of July 10th, 1871.

⁵² Von Tschudi, *Reisen in Südamerika*. That the lasso was employed by the allies in the war against the Paraguayans, comp. Ausland and Max von Versen, *Reisen in America*. Breslau, 1872.

⁵³ Wilkinson, *Ancient Egyptians*, vol. iii., and in Lepsius' *Monuments*.

This is rather one of the innumerable instances in which the same implements have been independently invented by nations remote from and perfectly alien to one another.

As yet we have only traced the connection between the nature of certain regions and the weapons used in them; but we will now turn to a more important view of the subject. Just as comparative anatomy has raised the Latin proverb, that from the claw the lion may be known, into a scientific truth, so is ethnology able to infer accurately the grade of a nation's civilization from its arms. Density of population proportionate to space is the first essential of all high social conditions, for this alone admits of a division of labour. From the census and the extent of land occupied by the Redskins of the United States in 1825, it was calculated that hunting tribes require for their maintenance 1 $\frac{1}{4}$ square miles per head, whereas in a district in some ways not dissimilar, namely, in Belgium, 320 persons live in one square mile.⁵⁴

Prosperous agriculture alone renders density of population possible. But a husbandman cannot wield arms which require constant practice and unusual dexterity. He will rather guard his body from the missiles of hunters by a covering of wadding, as in America, or with leather or metal. Moreover, abandoning that desultory fighting which has much in common with hunting, he and his fellows will combine into bands. In America we may see his innovation adopted by all civilized nations. The Mexicans and Yucatecs not only possessed defensive weapons, but also wielded the sword of the stone period, made of wood, and provided with a groove, into which separate sharp flakes of obsidian were inserted to form a blade. All the Nahuatl nations of Central America would have remained at a very low stage had they not found obsidian or *itztli* in the lava of their volcanoes. This mineral may be said to require but one dexterous stroke of the hammer to cause it to fly into knife blades, which are so sharp that long after the conquest the Spaniards allowed native barbers to shave them with such flakes. The Inca-Peruvians had wooden helmets, padded doublets, copper swords, battle-axes, spears, and

⁵⁴ Sir John Lubbock, *Prehistoric Times*, p. 582.

lances,⁵⁵ as well as flags, which are the best evidence of the existence of a system of tactics even at that time.

These transitions must have required long periods. Nomadic tribes did not suddenly lay aside their hunting implements. Husbandmen and herdsmen fought in the Trojan war. Hence in the ranks of the Achæians only two or three experts carried bows and arrows; and in the *Odyssey*, when Penelope cunningly challenges her suitors to a shooting-match, it appears that they are no longer able to manage such an old-fashioned weapon. Similar changes are now observable in Africa. We find clubs, lances, and shields among all the cattle-breeding negroes on the White Nile, as well as among the Shilloos and Nuers,⁵⁶ while we find bows and arrows among the Kitsh, Dshur, Moro, and Niam-niam negroes, who still hunt. Schweinfurth found an exception among the remarkable Monbuttoos on the Uellé, who used shield and spear as well as bow and arrows, but he expressly adds that such a combination is very rare in negro countries.⁵⁷ The true Kaffirs, says Theophilus Hahn,⁵⁷ never use the bow and arrow, but fight in companies of 600 to 1000 men. Chaka, the great king of the Zulus, even abolished the five or six casting spears of the old accoutrement, and substituted a short lance for thrusting, and long shields, under the protection of which his warriors charged their enemies, striking them in the body with the short weapon. The Hottentots and Bushmen, who are akin to each other, belong to a perfectly distinct family. The Hottentots are shepherds, the Bushmen hunters; with rare exceptions, the former no longer use the bow and arrow, which is the sole weapon of the Bushmen. The Celts of Gaul, and our own forefathers, had ceased to be archers in the time of Cæsar and Tacitus.⁵⁹

To say nothing of the Chinese, it might be urged as an objection to this view that innumerable archers are depicted on

⁵⁵ Prescott, *Conquest of Peru*, vol. i. p. 67, et seq.

⁵⁶ Petherick, *Central Africa*, vol. i. pp. 98, 120, 319.

⁵⁷ *Im Herzen von Afrika*, vol. ii. p. 115. 1874.

⁵⁸ *Globus*, vol. xx. 1871.

⁵⁹ At least bows and arrows were only occasionally used by the Celts of Gaul. Strabo, *Geogr. lib. iv. cap. 4.*

the Egyptian monuments and on the sculptures of Chorsabad, Nineveh, and Babylon. But the Old Testament explains why these ancient civilized nations adhered to the old weapons of the chase. The victory gained by the Philistines over King Saul was attributed to their body of archers, and David, although the best slingsman of his nation, made the children of Judah practise archery again in order to neutralize their disadvantage, and from this time forward the art was not neglected. Again, the wars which were then waged in Western Asia centred principally round cities; but as the walls of cities were already flanked by towers, a missile like the arrow, effective from a distance, was indispensable for covering both the siege works and the besiegers themselves. Even in the Roman order of battle we find a body of archers with special duties in the fight, although the real weapons of the legions were only the sword and the javelin.⁶⁰ It was mentioned above, that the Fiji islanders still use bows and arrows in the sieges of fortified villages, as well as in the defence of their stockades. But in all these cases it is no longer the same implement as the weapon of the herdsman, indeed we might almost say it has become a scientific instrument. The monuments of the old biblical nations all show the warriors in array. The division of labour has already begun, and war is carried on either by a trained militia or by a caste, not with the implements of daily labour, but with specialized weapons. But when war is systematically practised, the nature of the locality exercises less and less influence over the choice of weapons; in modern civilized nations it is scarcely traceable. Even now, however, the people of the Cossack steppes or the Hungarian pusztas are incapable of excelling as sharpshooters, nor are mountaineers fit material for light cavalry.

V.—BOATS AND NAVIGATION.

ALTHOUGH the nautical powers of nations are among the last to reach maturity, they yet produce the most important results on the history of human society, for, however highly we estimate the creations of any people in the sphere of arts, however highly we

⁶⁰ Mommsen, *History of Rome*.

value its scientific knowledge or its religious institutions, yet when we consider merely the physical history of our world, we see that the work of a single bold and persevering navigator surpasses all others in its effects. When we speak of a strange world of nature and of strange countries on our globe, we do so in allusion to the strange plants and the strange animals peculiar to them. But if there had been no geographical obstacles to the spread of animals and plants, all climatic zones would have exhibited the same forms of animated life. The seas have been the most effectual barriers, yet the seamen who connected the Old and the New World removed them, and thus deprived America of the character of a separate region. Since its discovery, America has been invaded not only by Europeans, but at the same time by all the cultivated plants and domestic animals of Europe—by wheat, rye, oats, and barley, by cattle, horses, and sheep; and these vegetable and animal immigrants have proved so powerful that in a short time they have changed the aspect of whole regions, and even altered the climate by converting the wooded wilderness into sunny, arable land. This adds interest to the inquiry as to whether America might not have been discovered from some other part of our world, or whether the Americans themselves might not have discovered the Old World; and also what conditions in that hemisphere favoured such a chance. As these questions can be answered only by the help of historical comparison, we must turn to those regions in which seafaring nations have reached the highest development. The great rivers of the Old World have not encouraged nautical dexterity in the inhabitants of their shores, and the same may be said of America. Looking at the map of the valleys of the Mississippi, the Amazon, or the La Plata, we are impressed with the idea of an incalculable capability for civilization; we seem to see their waters covered with laden vessels and their densely peopled banks studded with towns; yet the history of our own country tells us that it was not until the days of the Romans that rivers became a requisite for the foundation of cities, and that it is only since the employment of steam that they have acquired their present value as a means of communication. It is true that in ancient times great works of civilization were caused by the presence of rivers, as by the Nile and the

twin rivers of Mesopotamia, but in both instances they mainly served for the irrigation of plains in dry countries. A favourable rainy season would have compensated for the Euphrates and the Tigris, and formed a substitute even for the waters of the Nile, though not for its mud. But the aborigines of America were by no means in a condition in which their vast network of rivers could have served to spread civilization. Broad and deep rivers are rather barriers and impediments in the first beginnings of society, as, for example, even in Cæsar's day the Rhine quite separated the Celts and the Teutons. The smaller and more tranquil currents are more fitted for the hunter in his bark canoe, and for the fisherman who has only to poison their waters in order to obtain his prey. It is for these reasons that no advance in the civilization of the wild tribes of the Mississippi district warns us of our approach towards its waters, while the neighbourhood of the Amazon is only slightly better.

This is the case also with the great chain of inland seas in North America, for the hunting tribes inhabiting their shores were in no way superior to the rest; nor need we look for nautical skill on other inland waters. In Asia, neither the Lakes Balkash, Baikal, or Aral, nor even the Caspian Sea, influenced the inhabitants of their shores to seamanship. On Alpine lakes, except where better lines have been introduced by English amateurs, we might till lately have found, and indeed we still find, boats of the most inferior and unsuitable build which have resisted all improvement during thousands of years. It is not on rivers or inland seas that we must look for the nations which connect country with country but on coasts. The words of the Eleusinian mysteries, "To the sea, ye Mystæ!" apply with unusual force to the history of civilization.

Among the nations conspicuous in antiquity for their nautical enterprises were the Phœnicians and the inhabitants of the south coast of Arabia. Profitable transmarine products are the strongest inducements to the first attempts to abandon the shore. Cyprus, the "Copper Island," attracted the Phœnicians in this way; the Arabians were tempted by the neighbouring coasts of Africa. The coasts of Syria, and of Yemen, Hadhramaut, and Oman in Arabia, extend in a more or less straight line. Beyond the narrow

strip of coast the land rises, and from this elevation stretches the so-called deserts. On coasts such as these not only is the water generally the quickest, and often the sole means of communication between inhabited places, but the land and sea winds are so regular as to ensure an easy passage. As the population of the narrow coast-line becomes more dense, fishing must contribute more and more to subsistence, and if it be not sufficient some portion of the increased population must roam beyond the sea. It was thus that the Phœnicians passed over to Cyprus, from Cyprus to Crete, from Crete to Carthage, to Spain, and even to Senegal. In this way also the inhabitants of Southern Arabia sailed along the east coast of Africa now called Ajan, but known to the Greeks as Azania, and probably in ancient times reached Kilwa at the entrance of the Mozambique Channel. From ship-owners from Aden, Claudius Ptolemæus derived his knowledge not of these coasts only, but also of the great Nile lakes which then, as now, were visited by Arabian merchants from what is now Zanzibar.¹ Arabian colonies subsequently spread from Hadhramaut and Oman to the shore of Africa as far as Sofala, a distance to a coasting vessel equal to that from a Phœnician port to the Columns of Hercules.²

If in the New World we seek coasts of similar formation, with a narrow strip of shore, backed by rising mountains, and with comparatively dense populations, we can find the Phœnicians of America only on the western coast of South America, from the boundary of Chili northwards, to the shore of Ecuador. It is well known that the greater portion of these shores never receive a drop of rain; but during the wet season mists prevail, producing a transient growth of plants on the sands and shifting dunes. It is only on the banks of the small coast streamlets, which rush down the sides of the Cordilleras, that agriculture is capable of supporting the population. Here we should expect to find that fishery and coast navigation had been developed. Unfortunately, there are no islands near the mainland to entice the natives to sea, for the Galapagos Islands are at a greater distance from the

¹ Ptolemæus, *Geogr. lib. i. cap. 17.*

² Peschel, *Geschichte der Erdkunde.*

nearest point of land than Cape St. Vincent is from Madeira. Nor is there any evidence that these were visited in ancient times, and our nearer acquaintance with them dates only from the fourteenth century. The shores of the former Inca-Peruvian kingdom are moreover destitute of trunks of trees fit to be hollowed out into canoes.

Yet along this very coast there existed a sea traffic, of a kind occurring only in few other places in the New World prior to its discovery. When Pizarro, sailing in 1526 from Panama, under the guidance of the pilot Bartolomeo Ruiz, reached the Bay of San Mateo on the shore of the present Ecuador, to the north-east of Cape San Francisco, traders of Inca-Peru fell into his hands, who were conveying jewellery and cloth of llama wool from Tumbes. Their vessel was a mere raft, on which a coasting voyage of about four hundred miles had been accomplished. No want of skill or ingenuity, but the absence of timber fit for shipbuilding,³ compelled the inhabitants of the coast to construct such clumsy vessels, with which, however, they even now undertake voyages of eight hundred miles, from Guayaquil to Lima (Callao). The natives of the desert of Atacama, where trees are yet more scarce, do not use even rafts for fishing, but employ a pole with an inflated skin.⁴ The raft from Tumbes, seized by the Spaniards, was moved by a sail and steered by a helm. At the time of the discovery, sails were very rarely employed by the aborigines of America,⁵ so that such an advance on the part of the Peruvians ranks among the highest nautical achievements of the New World.

In the Old World it is not only on coasts, such as those of Syria and Southern Arabia, that we find sea-going people. Norway, beyond all other countries, has bred the most daring seamen, who in the ninth, tenth, and eleventh centuries, while yet unacquainted with the mariner's compass, made their way to Iceland,

³ D'Orbigny, *L'Homme américain*. 1839.

⁴ J. J. von Tschudi, *Reisen durch Südamerika*. Lesson, *Voyage autour du Monde*. 1839.

⁵ Prescott, usually so accurate, terms (Conquest of Peru) the Peruvian sailors' raft, "the only instance of this higher kind of navigation among the American Indians." We shall see with what justice.

Labrador, Greenland, and the present States of New England. In Norway the severity of the climate has broken up the coast into islands and fiords.⁶ A rugged and disintegrated coast, with a sea as rough and yet as productive as the Northern Ocean, is the best school for seamen. The passage between Norway and the Shetland Islands⁷ was made even in Pliny's time: a longer distance than from any island in the Mediterranean to the nearest point of the mainland. As we must regard coasts with fiords and a fringe of islands as an excellent school of navigation, when we again examine the New World we shall find that a coast formation of this description exists there only on the Pacific Ocean, where it extends along the island-fringed shores of British and of what was formerly Russian America, from Vancouver's Island to Behring's Sea, and in the south, from the boundary of Chili to Terra del Fuego.

In the latter region we again see that the achievements of the inhabitants do not invariably correspond with the advantages of the abode, unless the inhabitants themselves are of a disposition to make the best use of the favourable circumstances surrounding them. The southern extremity of America, which is rent and cleft in every direction into islands and ravine-like sounds, where glaciers stretch down to the edge of the sea, while parrots fly about, and even colibri do not dread the snow storms, the home of evergreen fuchsias, of impenetrable forests, must, one would think, be inhabited only by sea-going tribes. As to the descent of the present inhabitants of Terra del Fuego, ethnographers can only repeat the words of d'Orbigny,⁸ namely, that their language approximates in sound to that of the Patagonians and Puelchians, but to the Araucanian in structure. We need not inquire whether the inhabitants of Terra del Fuego and the islands of Magellan are derived from the Patagonian or Araucanian nations, especially as the two are closely allied, and some genuine Patagonians are certainly to be found among the Fuegians. The Patagonians are hunters and do not possess even the simplest raft only fit to cross a river. The Araucanians are also hunters, although

⁶ Peschel, *Neue Probleme*.

⁷ *Hist. nat. lib.* iv. cap. 30.

⁸ *L'Homme américain*.

they inhabit mountains instead of grassy plains. We look in vain for bark canoes on all the great rivers of the pampas or steppes. Formerly the hide of an ox was turned up at the edges and bound together at the corners with thongs so as to resemble a flat open box. Goods were conveyed across rivers in such a pelota, as these leathern rafts were termed. The native of the steppes yoked himself by a thong to the front of the ox-hide, and dragged it after him, swimming from shore to shore.⁹ At the time of the discovery of America, no nation, from La Plata to Cape Horn, or from Cape Horn along the west coast of South America to Panama, had conceived the idea of constructing any vessel other than a raft; consequently the manufacture of canoes must have been invented independently on the waters of Magellan, by the Pesherah of Bougainville, or Fuegians, as they are now called. Yet the formation of this coast has always given rise to special customs and skill. At the Chonos Islands rudè rafts are alone in use.¹⁰ The Fuegians, again, with whom Captain Wilkes had dealings, possessed only canoes of bark stretched upon a frame and sewed together, and which required continued bailing out. Better craft were seen in other parts, and Cordova even praises their mode of caulking, and mentions canoes at Cape Providence which were cut out of the trunks of trees. In looking at these feeble attempts of the Fuegians, we must remember that they were merely beginners in boat-building, for, as Araucanians or Patagonians, they previously lived the life of hunters on the mainland, as we may infer with great certainty from the fact that they possess slings, which are otherwise rarely found among maritime tribes, and can render them but little service. But the Fuegians still hunt a little, as herds of guanacos exist on Navarin and on other islands of the Straits of Magellan. We may therefore safely conclude that the Fuegians are a feeble horde of hunters, who being driven from their hunting-grounds by more powerful neighbours, were finally compelled to hazard a passage to the nearest island on the coast, and to apply themselves to the pursuit of marine animals. Seals

⁹ Dobrizhoffer, *Geschichte der Abiponer*, vol. ii. p. 150.

¹⁰ United States Exploring Expedition, vol. i. p. 124.

of many species were once unusually numerous in Terra del Fuego, but the destruction caused by ruthless seal hunters has compelled the Fuegians, who, like so many other natives, are dying out, to content themselves with crustacea and fish.

Although but the rudiments of sea-craft have been developed in the Patagonian fiords, in the north, on the contrary, from Vancouver's Island to the Aleutian Islands, there are many small tribes of Redskins, with distinct languages, who represent the northmen of the New World, inasmuch as they inhabit a coast similar in formation to that of Norway, and are not easily surpassed in their own hemisphere as bold seamen. The slender structure and the pointed and really apt lines of the boats in the Nootka Sound have recently been praised by Catlin the artist: there are canoes there of fifty-three feet in length, and large enough for a hundred men. It is noticeable that south of the Juan de Fuca Straits, where the coast loses its fiord-like character, as far as the boundary of ancient Peru, only the rudest boats are used by the aborigines, while conversely from Nootka Sound northwards, the nearer we approach the continent of Asia, the more skilful is the construction of boats, and their management the more admirable. Even among the islands of what was formerly Russian America, inhabited by the Thlinkits, there are hunting boats of the true Eskimo build; these baidars, as they are there called, are intended only for a single person, and have closed decks, so that but one seat is left, which the boatman covers closely with his apron. These contrivances have been imitated as far as was suitable in Europe. The coast tribes from the Straits of Juan de Fuca to the Aleutian Islands are quite distinct from the so-called red hunting tribes to the east of the Rocky Mountains. It is uncertain whether they emigrated from Northern Asia in ancient times, or, having borrowed their nautical skill from their Asiatic neighbours, they spread a knowledge of it as far as Vancouver's Island. Both views seem to be admissible, and all that is certain is that the advance was confined to the fiords.

It is immaterial to us whether Asiatic people or only Asiatic culture spread along the north-west coast of America as far as the Straits of Juan de Fuca, for both were facilitated by the shape of the northern part of America, which is very significant. In

Australia, the peninsula of Carpentaria (Cape York), stretching towards New Guinea, still made intercourse with the Old World possible. We may perhaps succeed in convincing ethnologists that this tongue of land was, geographically speaking, the means of again raising the social condition of the Australian aborigines. The north-west of America possesses an analogous limb in the peninsula of Alaska, which stretches like an arm towards Northern Asia, while the chain of Aleutian Islands is suspended like a string of beads towards the outstretched arm, forming an interrupted passage to Kamtshatka. If predestination were conceivable, we should say that this was the preordained pathway for a union between the civilizations of the Old and the New World. If America had not been discovered in 1492 under the Spanish flag, and if Europe had reached its degree of maturity of 1492 only half a century later, a civilized Asiatic nation, that is to say, the Japanese, would have anticipated us, by way of the Caspian Sea, in the discovery of America. We do not in the least mean to imply that Japanese navigators would have been wafted across the Pacific as they were in 1832 and 1833 to the Sandwich Islands, and to America itself in the neighbourhood of the Straits of Juan de Fuca, for history knows of no instance in which advantageous relations with unknown regions were due to the discoveries of castaways or shipwrecked sailors.¹¹ We are rather arguing from the fact that the Japanese visited the Kuriles, occupying the southern islands before any Europeans had done so, and that no less than three times, in 1697, 1710, and 1729, did tidings come to Russia that Japanese trading vessels had penetrated as far as Kamtshatka, so that if the Russians had not anticipated them, they, as the Russians eventually were, would have been led on

¹¹ The voyage of Bjarne Herjulfson might be quoted against us. Sailing in the year A.D. 1000 for Greenland, he missed his course and discovered America, probably Labrador. But this accidental acquaintance of the Northmen with America in no degree affected the history of civilization. The case of the Portuguese, Cabral, might also be quoted, who, on his second voyage to the East Indies, discovered Brazil. But that the successors of Vasco da Gama must sooner or later have come in sight of South America on their voyages to the Cape of Good Hope, depended in no way on accident, but was a physical necessity brought about by the trade winds prevailing on the Atlantic.

by the fur trade from the Kuriles to the Aleutians, and thence to America in the course of a century.

Islands lying near a coast are especially favourable to the development of seamanship. Thus the proximity of Elba, and of Corsica to Elba, attracted the Etruscans on to the Mediterranean before the time of the Romans. Austria still mans her fleet with excellent sailors from the island-bound Dalmatian coast, and Genoa owed her former greatness not merely to the size of her natural harbour, but to the circumstance that, in clear weather, Corsica, which to the Ligurian fishing-boats is the first goal of a longer voyage, is visible from the Riviera. The British Isles in former centuries attracted various nations in succession, each surpassing the other in seamanship. Before the Northmen, Danes and Saxons, even the Celts, ventured out into the Atlantic; for we know that the Northmen who first landed on Iceland found Irish antiquities of Christian times there, indicating a previous settlement of pious Celtic anchorites.

Large portions of continents which have become detached from the mainland by the subsidence of the intervening land, become groups of islands in shallow seas. We meet with this phenomenon, in the Old World, between Southern Asia and Australia, which were formerly bound together until the land connecting them was dissolved into the Sunda,¹² Banda, and Molucca Islands. From these the Malays, a race eminent for seamanship, have ranged over the ocean to a distance exceeding half the circumference of the earth, spreading in the Pacific as far north as the Hawai or Sandwich Islands, to Easter Island on the east, and southwards to New Zealand, while in the Indian Ocean they have spread to Madagascar. Where Asia approaches so near to Europe that the basin of the Mediterranean is narrowed into the Dardanelles, the Grecian archipelago is the remnant of a former connection of the two continents. These islands trained a people surpassed in nautical skill but by the Phœnicians of all the nations of antiquity. Their colonies and markets extended in time over both the basins of the Mediterranean, in the Euxine as far as the mouth of the Don, and through the Red Sea as far as the East

¹² Peschel, *Neue Probleme der vergleichende Erdkunde.*

Indies. A similar dissolution into islands is traceable on a smaller scale between the mainlands of North Germany and Scandinavia, which is the home of the Danes, who contributed to British blood, and hence may claim a share in the nautical fame of the greatest maritime power of Europe. The Dutch also inhabit a region of islands which originated by subsidence, and did not exist at the time when the British Isles still formed part of the continent of Northern Europe.

In those regions of the New World which owe their configuration to a like cause, we may, therefore, expect to find a similar development of the inhabitants. But from physical comparisons elsewhere made, it appeared that the archipelago of the so-called North-west Passage must also be regarded as the remnant of a former connection between the small continent of Greenland and the continent of North America; and further, that where North and South America approach each other, on the Atlantic shores of the shallow Gulf of Mexico and the Caribbean Sea, the Antilles still exist as the residue of a former connection. Hence, if the development of human civilization depends on favourable local configuration, we ought to find the highest degree of nautical skill in the American Polar Sea, and in the two gulfs of Central America, which in the New World supply the place of the Mediterranean, once so highly favoured. Nor do these expectations altogether mislead us.

Archipelagoes have, however, frequently served as asylums for weak or decrepit beings, for whom the struggle for life on the continents has become too fierce, and who could only continue to exist where the sea protected them from their more hardy oppressors. Both the Lesser and the Great Antilles, as well as the Bahamas, were inhabited prior to 1492 by a gentle and extremely unwarlike race of men, whom Von Martius has named Taini. The few remnants of their language that have been preserved, chiefly names of places, do not afford any certain testimony of their origin, yet it has recently been assumed that they were related to the Arowaks of South America, who still inhabit the Guayanas. These people made no long voyages; at the most, those who lived in the south of Hayti ventured occasionally to

Jamaica, or the inhabitants of Jamaica to Hayti.¹³ But in 1492 they had already been partially driven from their islands by the Caribs, a race extraordinarily gifted, both physically and intellectually, whom we must not condemn too severely for their complete nudity, their inclination to piracy, their craving after human flesh, and the poisoning of their arrows. The Caribs of these islands, whose language was a dialect of that of the Caribs of the mainland, had even then conquered the so-called Lesser Antilles, occupied the eastern half of Porto Rico, and extended their kidnapping excursions into Hayti, where some of their adventurers had founded monarchies, and the older comers had taken possession of the country on the eastern shore. Their ships of war, or pirogues, were forty feet in length, and broad enough to afford room for a Spanish cask (pipa) lying crossways. They carried fifty seamen, and were moved either by cotton sails or by oars plied to a time set by a singer. They must not be blamed for their piracy, for Thucydides tells us how the Greeks owed their maritime power to the same trade. Piracy is in fact one of the evils inseparable from the development of national intercourse; hence maritime customs have remained extremely barbarous even up to our own century. Many of the renowned English circumnavigators and discoverers of the 16th and 17th centuries were also pirates; nay, the Dutch West Indian Company was able to pay fabulous profits to its shareholders only because their ships pursued the Spanish galleons. The customs of war at that time certainly ennobled piracy.

Just as the Caribs became pirates where the Antilles approach nearest to the South American continent, so we also find a very highly civilized people, namely, the Yucatecs, at the spot where Cuba approaches the shores of Central America. Here there is, indeed, no piracy, but Columbus, when on his fourth voyage, steering from Bay Islands towards the coast of Honduras, met with a trading vessel from Yucatan, which, if it kept along shore, had to traverse at least 400 miles before reaching the nearest native port. It was eight feet wide and as large as "a galley," and was pro-

¹³ The largest boats of the Antilles were built in Jamaica; these were 96 feet in length, and eight feet in width. Bernaldez, Reyes Catol.

vided with a roof of palm leaves for the protection of the merchandize, which consisted of woven fabrics and articles of clothing, wooden swords with obsidian blades, brass and earthenware utensils; in other words, manufactures which the merchants had exchanged for a cargo of cocoa. They were seen to stoop and gather up with care every fallen bean, for even then these seeds, or "almonds," as the discoverers called them, served instead of small coins in Mexico and in Yucatan, to which they were laboriously brought from Honduras. The Yucatecs must also have made occasional visits to Cuba, for on the 1st and 29th of November Columbus notes in his log, that he found a piece of silver and a cake of beeswax among the natives of Cuba, both of which articles could have come there only by way of Yucatan. It is unfortunately impossible to state positively whether sails were even then used by the Maya races.¹⁴

The archipelago between North America and Greenland would be peculiarly fitted for the development of maritime skill did not its sea, fast bound by the arctic winter, leave the passage by water open only during a few weeks in the year. Nevertheless the Eskimo, one of the most sea-going nations of the world, have spread themselves over this very region. In another place we shall give a more detailed account of their achievements.

Our task is accomplished if we have succeeded in showing that both in the Old and the New World the analogous formations of coast have promoted the nautical achievements of their inhabitants in a similar manner; and that in America it is only in very limited and specially favoured tracts that we find rude germs of navigation. All who know the stories of the voyages in the Pacific, from the times of Schouten and Le Maire to that of Wilkes, or even

¹⁴ Don Fernando Colombo, describing in the biography of his father (Vita del Almirante) the Yucatan galley on the coast of Honduras, makes no mention of a sail. On the other hand, Bernal Diaz, an eye-witness, relates that when Francisco Fernandez di Cordova, in 1517, first discovered Yucatan, near Cape Catoche, five large boats containing forty or fifty people approached with oars and sails—*á. ramo y vela* (Histor. verdadera). In Herrera the words are *cinco canoas con gente, que iban al remo*, that is to say, with oars. In Oviedo and Peter Martyr also there is no confirmation of Bernal Diaz's statement.

of later discoveries, are accustomed to regard boats, full of inquisitive and importunate native crowds, as always present round the European vessels off those shores ; nay, in certain favourable places in the South Sea, even where land is not in sight, the sails made of matting of Polynesian natives may be seen passing in the distance. In the records of the discoverer of America, on the contrary, instances in which Europeans meet with natives on the sea even near land are extremely rare. We have already cited the most notable cases. The comparatively small advance of the American natives in the arts of sailing and paddling may perhaps be ascribed to the absence of a Mediterranean Sea or of a coast formation such as that of our North Sea. Yet in all respects the human race has developed far more slowly in America than in the Old World. If we sum up the industrial feats of the great civilized nations of America, the Mexicans and the Peruvians of the time of the Incas, as if they had been found side by side instead of apart, the two together would still not present such a picture of a civilization as we see in Egypt under the fourth dynasty, the earliest of which we possess monuments. In other words, the American race, even in the districts of its highest development, had not attained a maturity in the year 1492 equal to that of the highest local civilization of the Old World three thousand years before Christ. But let us imagine that in the year 3000 B.C., discoverers from America had come to Europe in decked sailing vessels and with the compass in their hands, they would scarcely have found the waters on the northern shores of our continent occupied by better seamen than the Eskimo and the Kolushs, or Thlinkites, of North America, and in the Mediterranean they would probably not yet have encountered Phœnician ships of Tarshish, but perhaps trading galleys, such as went from Yucatan to Honduras, or ships such as the Caribbean sailing pirogues, and manned by the pirates of Asia Minor of whom Thucydides speaks in his first book.

VI.—THE INFLUENCE OF COMMERCE ON THE LOCAL
DISTRIBUTION OF NATIONS.

IT is not easy to overestimate the advantages arising from the interchange of local products. The merchant spreads abroad not only his goods, but with them, samples of art, inventions, knowledge, morals, customs, and poetry; and his footsteps are usually followed by the missionary. Of these facts we shall say no more, but we will rather show the extent to which valuable products of different regions have affected the distribution of nations and languages. Let us first note that commerce already existed in those ages in which we find the earliest signs of our race. It must have been by barter that the cave-dwellers of Périgord, of the reindeer period, obtained rock crystals, Atlantic shells, and the horns of the Polish Saiga antelope.¹ The obsidian blades which are occasionally met with in ancient graves to the east of the Mississippi, must have reached the places where they are now discovered by barter either from Mexico or from the Snake River, an affluent of the Columbia to the west of the Rocky Mountains.² We must not imagine that the so-called Redskins of the Union had no intercourse but that of murderous feuds. Merchant boats passed along the great rivers, and transit duties were taken by the chiefs.³ In South America, curaré, the arrow poison, the preparation of which was understood only by a few hordes, formed a valuable article of commerce among the Indians of the Amazon, so that people living near the Napo were obliged to make canoe voyages of three months' duration in order to procure it.⁴ Even where bands of hawkers and pedlars did not wander through the country, goods were bartered betwixt horde and horde, and such a system of intercourse might extend throughout an entire quarter of the world. English wares deposited at Mombas, on the eastern side of South Africa, have been recognized at Mogador, on the west coast of Northern Africa.⁵ Since from these circumstances

¹ See above, p. 37.

² Carl Rau, *Archiv für Anthropologie*. 1871.

³ Lafitau, *Mœurs des sauvages américains*. Paris, 1724.

⁴ Von Martius, *Ethnographie*, vol. i. p. 504, and above, p. 187.

⁵ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. ii. p. 101.

we may assume that commerce has existed in all ages, and among all inhabitants of the world, the circumstances of modern times serve to throw light on the dark ages of ethnology.

When, in the year 1492, three Spanish vessels were sailing westwards, striving to reach the distant lands of the Atlantic, a sort of council of war was held on board the *Santa Maria*, on the 7th of October, between the two chiefs of the enterprise, Christopher Columbus and Martin Alonso Pinzon. Until then a direct westward course had been held, the squadron lay between latitudes 25° and 26°, so that in four or five days the trade-wind would have carried it either to the most northern of the Bahamas or to Florida. The elder, Pinzon, nevertheless insisted on directing the course to the south-west, assigning no other reason than the inspiration of his heart (*el corazon me da*). From no conviction, but from conciliatory motives, the discoverer of the New World actually allowed the course to be altered 45° for a few days, so that on Friday, October 11th, the coral island of Guanahani was sighted. The great Alexander von Humboldt has stated that had this change of course not taken place, the ships would have arrived at Florida, and the Spaniards would have peopled the United States instead of Central America, so that but for the inspiration of Martin Pinzon's heart, the New World would now have had quite different ethnographical features.⁶

But in reality it made no difference at what point America was first sighted, for even before the discovery the region to be occupied by the Spanish colonists was tolerably well defined by the distribution of the precious metals. For as soon as Columbus saw the golden ornaments in the ears and noses of the harmless Lucayans, he endeavoured to ascertain by signs whence the precious metal had been procured. He felt his way from island to island as far as Cuba, going first towards the north-west, and when this direction did not satisfy him, turning towards the south-east till he came to Hayti. Here, from whence gold had been spread over the Antilles, he founded his first settlement. Much has been written of the Spanish thirst for gold, but had they not followed the traces of gold, transatlantic colonies

⁶ Kosmos, vol. ii. 1847.

could not have arisen so early as the end of the fifteenth century. All agricultural colonies which the French and English attempted to found on the shores of the United States in the sixteenth century, literally perished by starvation. Cut off from their own country, where division of labour was already practised, the settlers, when they had exhausted the outfit brought with them from the Old World, necessarily fell back into the same grade of civilization as the red aborigines, unless constant fresh supplies were conveyed to them from their old home. Such supplies required high remuneration, as the voyage to the New World still involved great perils. The consignments could not be paid for in cereals, for these were not yet worth the cost of freight. It was the discovery of tobacco, an article of commerce worth the cost of carriage to Europe which, in the beginning of the seventeenth century, made Virginia, the first purely agricultural colony of the New World, flourish. It is therefore primarily owing to tobacco, and perhaps* to the fur trade, that the present society of North America is of Anglo-Saxon origin. That Canada was once purely French, and is still half French, is due to another natural product. Round about Newfoundland lie incredibly rich cod fisheries, the produce of which, even in the beginning of the sixteenth century, repaid the cost of carriage across the Atlantic; for even in the middle ages it was brought from Iceland. Fishermen from the north of France, who gave their name to Cape Breton, have visited Newfoundland annually ever since 1503. From these well-known waters Jacques Cartier then discovered the St. Lawrence, and, following in his track, the French reached Canada. A valuable article of export is required to enable a first settlement to strike root: but if it has once obtained a footing, it grows like the mustard seed of the Gospel. The Spaniards in no way interfered with the French and English colonists in the United States as long as the two latter did not venture dangerously near their southern possessions. They had no reason to disturb the pious Puritans. The present domains of the United States bear upon the charts of the Spanish discoverers, the legend, *worthless territories* (tierras de ningun provecho), because they produced no gold. All must therefore acknowledge that it was quite indifferent to the history of civilization whether the Spanish ships

did or did not bear off from the west to the south-west on October 7th, 1492. The Spaniards went in pursuit of gold, and when they had stripped a district of its treasure they abandoned it again, as was the case in the Isthmus of Darien; but colonies of planters first grew up on tropical islands, where the cultivation of sugar by means of negro slaves yielded profits. It is certain that America became Spanish and has remained Spanish in all such districts as produce gold and silver, and that it is only later settlements that have taken root in regions where tropical agriculture or profitable cattle-breeding might be carried on.

It is strange that the Spaniards knew the richest gold district of the New World for two hundred and fifty years without suspecting its treasures. California was theirs; there their missionaries preached, there their soldiers kept watch in castles (presidios) over the rapacious Comantshes and Apatshes, yet not one among them guessed that they were in the midst of the El Dorado which they had so long sought in vain. Yet they may find some comfort in the fact that the Russians also held California for a time, and vacated it only a few years before the name of this country served as a trumpet-call to draw all the adventurers of both worlds to the Sacramento. Had the gold of California been discovered at the close of the sixteenth century, then, indeed, the course of the world's history might have taken another direction. California and Australia are the best witnesses at the present day, that the local distribution of nations depends on the existence in larger or smaller quantities of tempting treasures on or in the soil. Gold alone prompted the national emigrations to the Pacific Ocean.

Australia was affected as was California. An old map lately found in the British Museum has unexpectedly shown that the Portuguese visited a northern point of this continent in the year 1601.⁷ After them the Dutch frequently reached the western and northern coasts, and on two occasions, the southern shore; hence this part of the world is still often called New Holland. Yet these regions were to them what the United States were to the

⁷ P. H. Major, *Discovery of Australia by the Portuguese in 1601*. London, 1861.

Spaniards in the sixteenth century—*worthless territories*. The English regarded their discoveries on the east coast of Australia in the same manner when, at the end of the last century, they degraded them to a place of exile for their convicts. Thus Australia continued to be neglected by Portuguese, Dutch, and English, until the cry of gold was raised, when a new period of immigration instantly dawned.

About five years ago we heard that the Russians had sold Alaska to the United States. But how did the Russians come to Alaska? Did they go by the Baltic or the White Sea, round Cape Horn, or the Cape of Good Hope? Certainly not; they passed over the Ural mountains in the year 1577 to the Ob, not because their own country had become too small for them, but in the hope of great gains in the far East. As the Spaniards stripped the Caziques of the New World of their rings and anklets, so did the Cossacks, as the invaders of Siberia were named, with the valuable furs which they found in the possession of the chiefs of the hunting tribes. The thirst for plunder urged them with incredible rapidity eastward; and even in 1639 they had reached the shores of the Sea of Okhotsk. In Behring's Sea they found the most highly prized of all furs, that of the sea-otters, which in Steller's time were extremely numerous, but are now dying out, if not already extinct. Of course it was constantly necessary to seek for new and virgin hunting-grounds, and thus the Russian fur merchants reached the New World, where they founded New Archangel at Sitka. Up to the recent advance of the Russians across the steppes of Kirghiz, it may be said that the extension of their power in Northern Asia has been coextensive with the distribution of the animals yielding fur.

Although we have hitherto seen the destiny of great regions and great nations determined by the occurrence of valuable commodities of the mineral and animal kingdoms, yet many vegetable products have had a similar effect; this was especially the case in the earlier times when the present skill in packing and naturalizing of plants had not been acquired. Thus it was the desire for the treasures of the East Indies which first led the Portuguese on the African shore of the Atlantic to venture southwards. India (which name at that time included the whole of

Southern Asia as well as China and Japan) was erroneously considered a metalliferous country, although it is really much poorer in gold and silver than Africa itself. But the jewels of Ceylon and of the future Golconda, the pearl banks in the Gulf of Manaar, in the Persian Gulf, and in the Red Sea, were realities; and in addition to these there were various costly spices and valued drugs. The well-known fact that the various spices, medicinal and aromatic plants, were distributed within very narrow regions, produced great effects. Pepper, which at that time ranked from a mercantile point of view as the first of spices, could be procured only from the Malabar coast, India, or from the island of Sumatra. The nutmeg was as yet confined to the islands of the Sea of Banda; cloves were found only on five small volcanic islands near the Island of Gelolo, which are, properly speaking, the Moluccas. True, camphor was and still is to be obtained only in two small districts—one in Sumatra and the other in Borneo. The Portuguese were thus obliged to sail to the limits of the then known world before they reached the original habitats of these vegetable treasures. It may appear strange that such baits were requisite to allure the Dutch after the Portuguese, and after the Dutch the French and the English, to Southern Asia, but the spread of civilization is in a great measure due to the fact that these treasures were so capriciously distributed, and existed in such small quantities, for otherwise Europeans would not even yet have spread over the whole globe. The Portuguese were in all the original habitats of the spices, that is to say, on the west, but not on the east coast of Hindustan, in the great commercial centres of the Malays, and on the spice islands of the extreme east of Asia.

The cause of their settlement in Brazil is told by the very name of this empire. In 1493 the Pope had distributed the globe between the Spaniards and the Portuguese, and on the western boundary of the latter, or under the "first meridian," as it was termed, lay a large portion of the South American territory, which, after the discovery, and for a long time subsequently, was named the "Land of the Holy Cross;" but it was called Brazil, or *The Land of Logwood*, after the first and most important consignment that it was able to send home, for it was only much later that gold and diamonds were obtained behind the mountains on

the coast. Africa, hardly less than Australia, has also been looked upon as hardly civilized. Karl Ritter accounted for the inferior grade of its inhabitants by the absence of indentations of its shores in proportion to its circumference. It is indeed very boldly formed ; it is destitute of peninsulas, and its bays, such as the Gulfs of Sidra and Khabs, are but slight indentations, or are merely formed by some angle of the coast, as is the Gulf of Guinea or the shores of the Red Sea and the Somali coast ; but even the Red Sea is so difficult of navigation that, in comparison with other coast indentations, it offers very slight advantages for communication. Had great rivers, like the Mississippi, the Amazon, or the La Plata, in America, rendered Africa accessible, civilization could have made its way more rapidly into the interior, as is shown by the fact that the shores of the Nile were the site of a very mature, and probably the earliest, civilization. But in addition to the impediments to the spread of civilization which we have already mentioned, the land was almost entirely destitute of treasures such as might tempt foreign colonists. Gold is only found near the sources of the Senegal and Niger, and in a few streams on the Guinea coast, formerly also at Sofala in East Africa, and now in some districts of Kaffirland, but everywhere in very small quantities ; so that Africa, possessing no golden fleece, has never attracted Argonauts : it contains no districts equal in mineral wealth to Peru, Mexico, California, or even to Minas Geraes. Hence, even at the present day, the African colonies of the Portuguese, French, English, and Dutch have remained poor and insignificant in comparison with the settlements in South America.

The Cape districts alone have developed prosperously since the time of trans-oceanic emigrations, first as a place of call on the road to India, and subsequently as agricultural colonies. Without metals, without spices, and without drugs, or any vegetable treasures, Africa remained free from conquerors, but also untouched by civilization ; sad to relate, for three thousand years she was fain to pay for European baubles and intoxicating liquors with her own children. The slave trade was thus, not justified, but in a measure explained by the want of any important article of export. But though the slave trade connects the interior with the

coast, it does not convey a higher civilization from the coast to the interior. At last, after the lapse of ages, a treasure has been discovered in our own days even in Africa, which within a moderate period will be the means of revealing the long-preserved secrets of this continent. This is not a product of the mineral nor of the vegetable kingdom, but the tusks of the elephant. Ivory hunters roam about South Africa in all directions on the track of Livingstone, and they are followed by missionaries, merchants, and the earliest settlers. The region lying to the east and west of the White Nile has been explored, and is annually traversed by Italian ivory hunters, who are obliged to penetrate further every year, leaving exhausted hunting-grounds behind them.

Although the examples hitherto given have been derived from modern history, we might also quote from ancient times the early appearance of the Phœnicians, or their descendants, the Carthaginians, in Spain, where they were retained by the quarrying of silver ore. In the early stages of development tin promoted civilization even more than silver, for without tin bronze cannot be produced. But tin is found in but few places, and many even of these were completely unknown in ancient times. History proves that tin was not obtained from the Erzgebirgs until the middle ages, and it still seems doubtful whether tin from Crete or the trans-Caucasian tin from Georgia reached the Mediterranean. In Pliny's time, however, Spanish tin from Galicia was an article of Roman commerce. In Gaul tin was washed on the Aurence, and ancient tin mines have also been discovered in Limousin, in the department of the Loire Inférieure and in Morbihan.⁸ So skilful were the Celts in metallurgy that the Romans first learnt from them the art of tinning utensils. Celtic miners worked the most important of the ancient quarries on the Scilly Islands and in Cornwall. It must not be supposed that Phœnician travellers communicated their skill in mining and smelting to the old inhabitants of Brittany, or that they even discovered the veins of tin ore. Never before the days of Abel Tasman were voyages to unknown regions made without a special aim. The seafarers invariably had some object in view; they always

⁸ Rougemont, *Die Bronzezeit.* 1869.

endeavoured to reach the emporium or the original source of the treasures of commerce. Hence, if Carthaginian or Phœnician vessels ever reached the west coast of France or entered the Channel, they must have been in quest of known sources of tin; consequently this metal must already have been excavated, and must have reached the Mediterranean by land in the course of traffic. That such land traffic existed is proved by the early foundation and the prosperity of Marseilles; moreover, the lumps of tin ore which have been found among the Swiss relics of the bronze age, must have reached Helvetia by an inland commerce, and could have reached Marseilles as easily as Switzerland. It was also owing to the presence of tin that the Celts of Gaul and Britain were of far higher social development than the Teutons of the time of Cæsar. The Romans found an excellent system of husbandry in use among the ancient Briton, in which the yield was increased by the use of marl as a mineral manure. The Britons also used artistic war implements of their own invention, namely, the scythe cars. The possession of an article of export so indispensable, and the fact that tin was in such great request in the age of bronze, was in itself the means of promoting civilization, for commerce at a very early period brought the Britons into contact with the Mediterranean nations, and aided in hastening the maturity of their condition.

The inhabitants of the coast of the North Sea, and still more of the Baltic, possessed an analogous property in amber. At a very early period amber must have reached the shores of the Mediterranean, although perhaps it was at first only bartered from tribe to tribe. Even if the conquering Romans had not appeared at the mouths of the Ems and Weser, and if Drusus had not even then pushed on his ships to the northern point of Jutland, amber alone would certainly have been able to attract the civilization of the Mediterranean to the north; for even in Nero's time (A.D. 56) a Roman knight undertook a journey, for the purpose of exploring the continent, across the Carpathian mountains to the amber districts of East Prussia, and returned with a supply of the precious commodity to the metropolis of the world. It is doubtless to amber that the early civilization of which we find traces on the shores of the Baltic is due, for the numerous "finds" of Greek and

Roman coins as well as of bronze instruments are owing to the presence of this substance ; as these metal implements probably served the native artists as models and patterns, it is perhaps to amber that the advanced condition of the bronze age in the north of Europe is due.

We thus see how much we owe to the rare and precious products of the animal, vegetable, and mineral kingdoms, as the means by which human culture was spread, and as the baits which attracted national migrations, and we perceive that the regions which were fortunate enough to possess such treasures were the first to be drawn into the sphere of a higher culture : the direction in which civilization has moved has frequently been prescribed by this influence. We have but a very slight knowledge of the laws which direct the distribution of mineral treasures ; the treasures of the animal and vegetable kingdoms, on the contrary, are, it is true, restricted to limited climatic zones, but their local abundance, rarity, or total absence within the zones in which they might occur, is not so much a question of law as of history, for it appears to depend on the locality in which the species first occurred, and also on the power of migration of the species, and on the geographical impediments which obstructed their extension.

VII.—MARRIAGE AND PATERNAL AUTHORITY.

THE generation of successors, which is the first and highest purpose of marriage, can only be effected after the commencement of sexual maturity, which is reached somewhat earlier in the female sex than in the male : in Northern Europe it is about the fourteenth and seventeenth year, in Southern Europe somewhat sooner. In warm countries the recognized characters appear at an earlier age ; in Egypt in boys of twelve to fifteen, and in girls from eleven to fourteen years of age.¹ Klunzinger, who recently described the marriage of one of these childish couples in Upper Egypt, states that boys of from fifteen to eighteen years of age marry girls of

¹ Hartmann, Nilländer.

twelve to fourteen years, and adds significantly that in these marriages, which we should deem so premature, no evil consequences appear to affect the fecundity.² In Northern Persia the tokens of fertility appear in the female sex during the thirteenth year, and in Southern Persia even as early as the ninth and tenth years.³ In the Philippines twelve years is prescribed as the legal age for the female sex, but Jagor found the marriage of a girl of nine years and ten months entered in the church registrar of Polangui.⁴ Among the negroes of South Africa marriage is also entered upon precociously, but it is difficult to determine the exact times, as the inhabitants are too careless to be in the habit of accurately fixing their age by dates. Among the Hottentots Kolbe saw mothers of thirteen years of age.⁵ The Australians give their daughters to husbands in their twelfth year and often earlier.⁶ But it appears still doubtful whether this upparent marriage is not a preliminary ceremony of betrothal which is followed by the real marriage at a later period.⁷

These facts, but few of which are new, will not surprise any one who has studied the subject; nor is it a new fact that the polar nations also acquire the power of reproduction at an early age. As yet this has been remarked with especial reference to the Eskimo; but Adolf Erman has recently stated that on the Aleutian island of Atcha, marriage is contracted by the boy as soon as he can manage the baidar; by the girl as soon as she can sew quickly; in both cases in the tenth year.⁸ No physiological explanation has yet been given of the fact that the period of immaturity is curtailed in inverse proportion to the approximation to the equator or the polar circle. Probably the latitude of the abode has no reference to this phenomenon; it may more probably

² Ausland, No. xl. 1871.

³ Polak, Persien.

⁴ Reisen in den Philippinen.

⁵ Vorgebirge der Guten Hoffnung.

⁶ Eyre, Central Australia, vol. ii. p. 319.

⁷ On the age of marriage in different races of mankind, compare the exhaustive work of Dr. Ploss, Jahresbericht des Leipz. Vereins für Erdkunde. 1872.

⁸ Zeitschrift für Ethnologie. 1871.

⁹ Catlin, The North American Indians, p. 89.

have some connection with the darkness of the skin, for in other North American tribes the girls marry in their twelfth or fourteenth year, and occasionally as early as the eleventh.⁹ The Patagonians in the south, on the contrary, are immature till the sixteenth year.¹⁰

Beauty fades earlier when the natural desire is early aroused, so that by the thirtieth and often by the twenty-fifth year all the beauty of the female is gone. Tacitus was right in ascribing the prolonged youth of our forefathers to their late marriages.¹¹ So that we must recognize the postponement of marriage, either by habit or by law, as a great advance in the self-education of nations. In ancient Peru, the establishment of a household was only permitted to men in the twenty-fourth and to women in the eighteenth year.¹² The austere Abipones, who possessed the southern half of the Gran Chaco on the River Paraguay, also tolerated marriage only at a mature age.

We must not omit to mention that a great many races of mankind are quite indifferent to juvenile unchastity, and only impose strict conduct on their women after marriage. Yet it is unjustifiable to infer indifference to sexual purity from the want of a verbal expression to distinguish the maiden from the wife, as Lichtenstein ventured to do in the case of the Bushmen,¹³ whereas Chapman extols their modest behaviour, and adds that marriages are made among them only from inclination. Even the Abipones have no word for maiden,¹⁴ and yet Dobrizhoffer invariably eulogizes their austere morals and chastity. This deficiency of language may, on the other hand, bear an unfavourable interpretation among the Comantshes, who are in the habit of ceding their wives to their guests.¹⁵ We find this objectionable practice again among the Aleutians,¹⁶ who are in other ways also notorious for their unnatural excesses, among the Eskimo,

¹⁰ Musters, Among the Patagonians.

¹¹ *Sera juvenum Venus, eoque inexhausta pubertas, nec virgines festinantur.*
Germ. cap. 20.

¹² Prescott, Conquest of Peru, vol. i. p. 113.

¹³ *Reisen im südlichen Afrika.*

¹⁴ Dobrizhoffer, Geschichte der Abiponer, vol. ii. p. 218.

¹⁵ Waitz, Anthropologie, vol. iv.

¹⁶ *Ibid.* vol. iii.

and, lastly, Adolf Erman relates that he found the same custom in his travels through Kamtshatka.¹⁷

The most profound instance of depravity of this sort is the so-called three-quarter marriages which occur in Nubia among the Hassiniyeh Arabs, among whom married women have free disposal of themselves on every fourth day.¹⁸ History teaches us that all highly civilized nations have carefully guarded conjugal purity and chastity in general, and also, on the other hand, that every relaxation of morals has been closely followed by the disintegration of society.

We need hardly recall the fact that marriages are called polygamous when the man shares his household with several wives, and polyandric when the wife belongs simultaneously to several husbands. Polygamy extends throughout Africa; it was also permitted to nearly all Asiatic nations, but in America, on the contrary, it is very rare. The census has hitherto shown that the numbers of the two sexes are equally balanced, and the excess of one over the other is generally very slight. The greatest trustworthy difference of numbers occurs among the European Jews, among whom male births greatly preponderate.¹⁹ Although, according to the statements of travellers, among the Ladinos, or hybrids of Europeans with the aboriginal inhabitants of Central America, the number of girls is half as much again as that of boys, and in Yucatan, according to Stephens, is twice as great, and at Cochabamba is supposed to be fivefold,²⁰ yet these statements are

¹⁷ Marco Polo records the same respecting the oasis of Kamul (Hamil) in Gobi. There however, as well as in the oasis of Fezzan, also touched at by the caravans, this immoral habit is based on mercenary motives. A. Erman, *Reise um die Erde*.

¹⁸ Ausland.

¹⁹ According to Waitz, and also Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 301:—

BIRTHS IN JEWISH FAMILIES.						
			Boys.			Girls.
In Prussia	...	...	113	...	...	100
Breslau	...	...	114	...	...	100
Berlin	...	...	208 (?)	...	...	100
Leghorn	...	...	120	...	...	100
Livonia	...	...	120	...	...	100

²⁰ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. i.

not based on actual calculations, and are therefore of little scientific value. Campbell, a thoroughly trustworthy observer, asserted on the other hand that boys and girls are born in equal numbers in the Siamese harem.¹⁹ This refutes the theory so often put forward, that polygamy causes female births to predominate, polyandry the male; so that Nature as it were adapts herself to the matrimonial laws prevalent in different localities. The experiences of breeders of animals also contradict this hypothesis, for in the case of racehorses, greyhounds, and Cochinchina fowls, the equal balance of the sexes in the births is undisturbed by the strict polygamy which prevails.²⁰ German statistics, however, afford good evidence of the preponderance of boys at the first birth.²¹

But as social beings, we are subject to a moral order, and this is decidedly unfavourable to polygamy. The history of oriental dynasties teaches us that the brief duration of the governing races is always to be traced to the intrigues of ambitious wives; that the ennobling sentiment of brotherly love is totally wanting there, and that every son of a royal house is apt to hate his half-brother as his most inveterate enemy. Even in ordinary families envy and jealousy estrange the children of different mothers.

Polyandry is less widely spread; it must not be confounded with the community of wives of the military castes to whom celibacy was prescribed as a vow of the order, such as the Naiars of Malabar,²² and formerly certain Cossacks.²³ The true form of

¹⁹ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 268.

²⁰ *Ibid.* vol. i. pp. 304-306 :—

		BIRTHS.				
Number of Cases.			Male.			Female.
25,560 Racehorses	99.7	...	..	100
6,878 Greyhounds	110.1	...	...	100

Of 1001 Cochinchina chickens hatched, there were 487 cocks and 514 hens.

²¹ Welcker, *Bau und Wachsthum des Schädels*. According to the birth registers of Halle, in the case of first births there were 114 boys to every 100 girls, and in the genealogical pocket calendar of German princely families, there were 116 male births to 100 female, while in the total births of Germany the numerical proportion is 106 : 100.

²² Grauf, *Ostindien*.

²³ C. von Kessel, *Ausland*, No. xxxvii. 1872.

polyandry occurs among the nations connecting Asiatics and Americans, namely, the Eskimo, the Aleutians, the Koniaks, and the Kolushs,²⁴ among whom the sexual relations are abnormal in other ways. In America the Iroquois and certain tribes on the Orinoco are also accused of polyandry by Sir John Lubbock. It is also said to have been found in the South Seas, among the Maori of New Zealand, and on several small islands. It occurs more frequently in Southern India, among individual tribes of the Nilgherri hills, among whom custom allows all the brothers as they grow up to become the husbands of the eldest brother's wife; and, conversely, the younger sisters of the wife become the wives of this conjugal community. The aborigines of Great Britain, in the time of Cæsar, had the same habit.²⁵ Community of wives is limited to brothers and other relations in Thibet, where this unnatural habit is attributed to motives of economy.²⁶ Poverty is also the cause of the occasional occurrence of polyandry among the Herero of South America.²⁷

The origin of the custom of avoiding marriages among blood relations is one of the most obscure but instructive problems of ethnology. Recent experience enables us to infer that such admixture of blood is injurious, for if both husband and wife suffer from the same bodily defects, they will transmit it in an enhanced form to their progeny. Deafness, short sight, sterility, idiocy, and mental derangements make their appearance early, or break out with violence, in the children of parents who have transmitted the germs of these diseases.²⁸

²⁴ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. iii.

²⁵ *De bello gallico*, lib. v. cap. xiv.

²⁶ Von Schlagintweit, *Indien*.

²⁷ G. Fritsch, *Die Eingebornen Südafrika's*, p. 227.

²⁸ Even this hypothesis is not free from all doubt. In the community of Batz, 3300 inhabitants, situated on a peninsula to the north of the mouth of the Loire, and where the emptying of natural saltpans is the only occupation, intermarriages among relations have been customary from time immemorial. Thus in the year 1865 no less than fifteen ecclesiastical dispensations for marriages between cousins were procured. Voisin, who spent a whole month there, did not find, as the result of forty marriages between blood relations, respecting which he collected complete pedigrees, a single case of the diseases which usually threaten such alliances. *Anthropological Review*, vol. vi. London, 1868.

But this knowledge, which can only be gained by lengthened observation, is unattainable by unsettled and childish heedless races, so that it is exactly among such that a horror of incest is developed most strongly. According to this theory, we should most especially avoid marriage with a sister, who, as regards blood, is the same as ourselves, and stands as near again to us as mother or daughter, with whose organism our own only half agrees as to descent; yet this particular marriage was prescribed to the Inca of the kingdom of Peru,²⁹ nor could the Pharaoh of Egypt select a more fitting consort than his own sister.³⁰ In ancient Persia marriage with a sister or a mother was not merely allowed, but the intermarriage of relations was looked upon as a meritorious act,³¹ and it is known that the Greeks, at least, allowed marriage with half-sisters even if they did not actually approve of them.³² While these highly civilized nations did not recoil from such alliances, the less civilized felt a terror of them which was probably salutary: it is quite exceptional that the Veddahs of Ceylon allow the brother to espouse his younger sister.³³ It is less surprising that every form of incest is considered permissible³⁴ among the Aleutians and Koniaks, and probably among other nations on the shores of Behring's Straits, for they are all notorious for their licentiousness.

The Australians, on the contrary, adhered strictly to the rule that no man was allowed to marry a woman who even bore the same family name as himself.³⁵ Marriages among people of the same surname were also strictly avoided among the Samoyeds and Ostiaks.³⁶ The Hurons and Iroquois tolerated no marriages between relations.³⁷ The Kolushs, who are divided into the two branches of the Crows and the Wolves, forbid all marriages

²⁹ Garcilasso, *Commentarios reales*. Only in default of a sister were the other female relations taken in succession.

³⁰ Ebers, *Durch Gosen zum Sinai*.

³¹ Duncker, *Gesch. d. Alterthums*.

³² Martin Haug, *Allgem. Zeitung*. 1872.

³³ Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 51.

³⁴ Von Langsdorff, *Reise um die Welt*.

³⁵ Captain Gray as quoted by Eyre, *Central Australia*, vol. ii. p. 330.

³⁶ Castrén, *Vorlesungen*.

³⁷ Charlevoix, *Nouvelle France*, vol. iii.

between members of the same tribe.³⁸ In the same spirit the Arowaks of South America permit no espousals within their own clans ;³⁹ and in their carefully kept pedigrees it is the rule that the children belong to the tribe of the mother. We may cite instances from Africa also. The Hottentots punish incest with death ; and among the Kaffirs loss of property is the penalty of marriage with the most distant relations, although they permit of a double marriage with two sisters.⁴⁰ The Fan negroes, in the west of Equatorial Africa, although they are notorious cannibals, regard marriages between those of the slightest consanguinity as a crime, invariably obtaining their wives from another tribe.⁴¹ The Batta of Sumatra, who are also cannibalistic, punish marriages between members of the same horde with the death of both the guilty parties.⁴² Among the Hindoos the prohibition extends to the sixth degree of relationship ; and with them also identity of name is regarded as a sufficient impediment to marriage.⁴³ The same is the case with the Chinese,⁴⁴ who, as a nation, call themselves Pih-sing, or the *hundred families*. Nevertheless, in modern times, there are four hundred family names which are inherited not from the mother but, as in Europe, from the father. An American missionary of the name of Talmadge knew a village of 5000 inhabitants who nearly all bore the same surname, and are therefore unable to form alliances among themselves.⁴⁵ Traces of these wide-reaching ideas of incest have been preserved among the nations which practice wife-stealing, for as the different tribes were usually separated by enmity, forcible abduction was the only means of effecting a marriage. Hence ethnographers betray an imperfect knowledge of the subject when they speak of this custom as practised by the Australians as a barbarism, although the Australian women regard this ancient practice not as maltreatment,

³⁸ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. iii.

³⁹ Martius, *Ethnologie*, vol. i.

⁴⁰ Ausland. 1859.

⁴¹ Du Chaillu, *Ashango Land*, p. 427.

⁴² Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 359.

⁴³ Colebrooke, *Essays on the Religion and Philosophy of the Hindus*.

⁴⁴ Huc, *Das chinesisches Reich*.

⁴⁵ Morgan, *Systems of Consanguinity*.

but as a homage, and it is a favourite game of their boys and girls.⁴⁶ The same custom prevailed among the extinct Tasmanians,⁴⁷ among the Papuans of New Guinea, the Fiji Islands,⁴⁸ the Aino on the Kurile Islands,⁴⁹ and among the Fuegians.⁵⁰ Every Ostiak or Samoyed,⁵¹ every Lapp, even in the present day, must by craft or force seize a girl of another tribe, as was formerly the habit of the Finns (Suomi).⁵² Ethnologists will agree with us in interpreting Livy's account of the rape of the Sabines as a faint tradition of an ancient Roman custom, by which they were prohibited from marrying within the tribal community. In later and quieter times wife-stealing survived only as part of the wedding festivities. One evening in Khondistan, Campbell saw a lad who was carrying on his shoulder a burden wrapped in a scarlet cloth, pursued by a crowd of women and girls, pelting him with stones, bits of bamboo, and other missiles. It turned out afterwards that the victim was on his wedding journey, and was carrying his young wife in the scarlet wrapper, while the whole affair was only intended as a representation of the pursuit of a wife-stealer.⁵³ In its last stage the capture becomes a mere game between the bridegroom and the bride, of which the result is always prearranged; yet it is said that among the Maori, a girl who, on such an occasion, has an earnest desire to escape, is able to evade an unwelcome suitor.⁵⁴ Kennan, who witnessed a similar wedding game among the Koriaks, affirms that the bride must always give a tacit consent to her own capture. Even in Europe a feigned attack is often enacted as a marriage ceremony. Among the Slovaks the bridegroom and his companions actually arm themselves to approach the bride's house, which is closed as if awaiting a siege.⁵⁵ In old

⁴⁶ Dumont d'Urville, *Voyage de l'Âstrolabe*, vol. i.

⁴⁷ Waitz (Gerland), *Anthropologie*, vol. vi.

⁴⁸ Williams, *Ausland*. 1859.

⁴⁹ Mittheilungen der Wiener geog. Gesellschaft. 1872.

⁵⁰ W. Parker Snow, *Off Tierra del Fuego*, vol. ii. p. 359.

⁵¹ Castrén, *Vorlesungen*.

⁵² J. A. Frijs, *Wanderungen in der drei Lappländern*. Globus, 1872.

⁵³ Campbell, *Khondistan*.

⁵⁴ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. i.

⁵⁵ Klun, *Die Slovenen*. *Ausland*, 1872.

Bavaria the custom of abduction still continues as a marriage sport, termed "Brautlauf" (bridal run), which in old northern was called "Quânfang" (wife capture).⁵⁶ Among the Patagonians, with whom Musters spent some time, purchase-money is secretly paid to the parents, while the bride herself is suddenly stolen.⁵⁷

Where too great consanguinity is not avoided, and wife-stealing is not encouraged, the suitor was obliged to purchase the bride from the parents; the woman then becomes the property of the husband, and may be left by him to a legal successor. Among the Caribs of Venezuela,⁵⁸ and in equatorial West Africa, the eldest son inherits all the wives of his deceased father, with the sole exception of his own mother.⁵⁹ Schweinfurth asserts the same of Munza, the sovereign of the remarkable kingdom of the Monbuttoos on the Uellé.⁶⁰ On the Gold Coast the vacant throne was occupied by the prince who gained possession of the paternal harem before the other brothers.⁶¹ This throws light on certain incidents in the Old Testament history. Absalom took possession of his father's wives in the sight of all Jerusalem, in order to proclaim to the whole people that he had expelled David from the throne.⁶² In the same spirit Solomon orders the execution of Adonijah, because he begged to have Abishag, David's last favourite, as his wife, thus betraying designs upon the throne.

Where the purchase of the bride is still a reality, as among the Kaffirs, comparatively high prices are paid,⁶³ nor is the inclination of the chosen bride at all consulted. Among more advanced people, on the contrary, as, for instance, the Abipones and the Patagonians, the purchase becomes invalid or is cancelled if the girl refuses her assent.⁶⁴ Marriage was originally a purchase among the Germans, the suitor paying over the price to the individual

⁵⁶ Sepp, *Die Schimmelkirchen*. Alleg. Zeitung, 1873.

⁵⁷ Ausland. 1872.

⁵⁸ Gumilla, *El Orinoco ilustrado*. Madrid, 1741.

⁵⁹ Du Chaillu, *Ashango Land*, p. 427.

⁶⁰ *In the Heart of Africa*.

⁶¹ Bosman, *Guineë Goud-Tand-en Slavekust*.

⁶² 2 Sam. xvi. 22.

⁶³ Gustav Fritsch, *Die Eingebornen Südafrikas*.

⁶⁴ Dobrizhoffer, *Gesch. der Abiponer*. Musters, *Unter den Patagoniern*.

in whose power the maiden or the widow chanced to be, to the father, brother, or guardian.⁶⁵ As the wife thus fell under the guardianship (*vormundschaft*) of the husband, this legal act was also termed a *mundkauf*.⁶⁶ Again, in Iceland and in Norway the wife was purchased;⁶⁶ and the English, as late as 1549, in their marriage ritual, preserved traces of this ancient legal procedure.⁶⁷ It is a long-known fact that in ancient Rome the ceremonial form of marriage contract (*confarreatio*) was customary only among patricians, while the plebeians effected their marriages by a merely formal purchase (*coemptio*). Where Islam prevails the wife must even now be bought.⁶⁸ Manu's law, which abolished the customary bridal gift of a yoke of oxen, indicates a great refinement and softening of manners.⁶⁹ The bridegroom is instead welcomed as a guest in the house of his father-in-law on the wedding day, and receives the bride with the forms usual in the case of ceremonial gifts.⁷⁰ Divorce is open to the husband at his own will wherever polygamy prevails.

Sir John Lubbock has ventured to maintain that in the primitive state mankind did not live together connubially, but that the women of a tribe were the common property of all the men. For this barbarous idea he has also invented a barbarous word, for he speaks of this condition as "hetarism." He recognizes traces of it even now in Australia, appealing to statements made by John Eyre.⁷¹ He could certainly have no better testimony, for Eyre is inspired with such sympathy for these perishing races, that he would certainly not have recorded unfavourable facts concerning them, either maliciously or recklessly. He does say that the Australians with whom he became acquainted did not value conjugal fidelity in their women; but his statements refer

⁶⁵ J. Grimm, *Deutsche Rechtsalterthümer*. 1854.

⁶⁶ Paul Laband in *Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie*. 1865.

⁶⁷ Friedberg, *Das Recht der Eheschliessung*. In the Netherlands, in Spain, according to West Gothic law, and in Lombard law, traces of the purchase of brides still exist.

⁶⁸ Warnkönig, *Juristische Encyclopädie*.

⁶⁹ Duncker, *Geschichte des Alterthums*.

⁷⁰ Colebrooke, *Essays on the Religion and Philosophy of the Hindus*.

⁷¹ Central Australia. 1845.

only to the tribes in the vicinity of the Murray River, who were already in frequent intercourse with European settlers. Such intercourse has nearly everywhere corrupted the manners of the natives. The supposed habit of hetarism is moreover contradicted by Eyre's own statement,⁷² that paternal authority is entirely unlimited, and, on the other hand, by the traits which he gives of the passionate tenderness of fathers for their children. Other observers attribute jealousy in a special degree to the Australian men, and it is asserted that they take bloody vengeance on the adulterer.⁷³ Neumayer, moreover, who spent many nights among the natives, never noticed any breach of propriety or morality.⁷⁴ When we remember that, from a horror of consanguinity, the Australians marry only women with a different family name, the hetaristic state appears very unlikely, and we may regard the facts communicated by Eyre as a local degeneration of manners, confined to the southern portion of the continent, where there really are tribes in which the husband's brothers call the wife by a like name.⁷⁵

The hypothesis that at a remote age marriage was unknown to the human race is hardly credible. Even among animals we sometimes find a strict pairing, that is to say, among monkeys,⁷⁶ predatory animals, ungulates, ruminants, and among song birds, chickens, and birds of prey. Darwin has also disputed the probability of a community of wives among prehistoric man, on the grounds that the males of many mammals are extremely jealous, and are furnished with weapons with which to fight for the possession of the females. The Veddahs of Ceylon, whom we should expect to find most primitive, have, as we have already seen, a beautiful proverb that death alone can part man and wife.⁷⁷

In the fact that the chase, which is the most primitive means

⁷² Central Australia. 1845. ⁷³ Waitz (Gerland), *Anthropologie*, vol. vi.

⁷⁴ *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*. 1871. # ,

⁷⁵ Waitz (Gerland), *Anthropologie*, vol. vi.

⁷⁶ In Borneo, between the Padass and the Papar, Lieut. C. de Crespigny came upon a family of Mias (Orang-outang), consisting of the male, female, and two young ones of different ages. Their connection must therefore have lasted some time. *Proceedings of the Royal Geogr. Society*, vol. xvi.

⁷⁷ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. ii. p. 318.

of obtaining a subsistence, is rarely followed by women, we find a reason why the rearing of children could succeed only when both the father and mother supported them in their tender years. The statistics furnished by modern society show, in the case of illegitimate children who are provided for by a mother only, and by her insufficiently, that the mortality is far greater than among legitimate children brought up in the parental house.

An American scholar, Lewis Morgan, has recently published an excellent work on the terms used to express relationships in no less than 139 different languages, chiefly American, but also including Asiatic, Malay, and European tongues.⁷⁸ By this new scientific expedient Morgan thinks it possible to raise in a slight degree the veil which shrouds the sexual life of dim past ages. Among the Mongoloid people of Asia, among the Dravidas of India, among the aborigines of America, and the nations of the Malay family, we find a system of names for blood relationships entirely differing from our own. The descendants of a common ancestor or ancestors, if they are of the same generation, give each other the name of brother or sister; they call all male members of the previous generation fathers, and of the following one, sons. A man will therefore designate as his brothers, not only all the sons of his father, but also all the sons of his father's brother, and all the grandsons of his great uncle. He will address as his sons not only his own children, but all the sons of his brothers, all the grandsons of his father's brother, and all the great grandsons of his great uncle. The children of his sister, on the contrary, he speaks of as his nephews or nieces; the brothers of his mother as uncles. Conversely, a woman will address as mother, not only her parent, but also her mother's sisters, as well as the daughters of her grandmother's sisters. All the children of her sister, all the grandchildren of her mother's sister, all the great grandchildren of her grandmother's sister, she calls her children; the children of her brother, on the contrary, are her nephews and nieces.⁷⁹ But we must not forget that in all these

⁷⁸ *Systems of Consanguinity and Affinity in the Human Family.* 1871.

⁷⁹ Lefitau describes carefully this system among the Iroquois and Hurons. *Mœurs des sauvages américains.* 1724.

languages no proper terms exist for brother or sister, but specific words must be used for the elder and younger brother, for elder and younger sister. Even Hungarian has no proper name for brother and sister, but must have recourse to circumlocution.⁸⁰

The great majority of nations made less distinction in speech between various degrees of consanguinity than between the different generations, and between the various ages in the generations indicated. This simplest form of things, as it prevails among the Iroquois and Seneca, as well as among the Tamuls, was susceptible of various refinements and modifications, so that this branch of knowledge has thrown a new light on to the mental relationships of the several races of kindred. It is a pity that this American scholar believes himself to have discovered, in this unusual method of viewing the degrees of kindred, traces of past times in which marriage was unknown. He, too, supposes that hetarism was once habitual, and that a state occurred later, in which the sons of the mother lived in common with all their sisters. The duty enjoined on the Hebrew brother-in-law, of raising offspring to his brother's widow, may perhaps be regarded as an inheritance from these early ages, for we have found this ordinance amongst a great number of other nations, to which we must add the negroes of the Gold Coast.⁸¹ On the other hand, we should remember that the patriarch Jacob leads home two sisters one after the other, and that, as we stated above,⁸² in Southern India marriages are concluded between a number of brothers and several sisters. Among the Kanaks of the Hawai Islands it was customary, under the name of Pinalua, for brothers to have their wives in common, and sisters their husbands.⁸³ We can scarcely venture, however, to designate these peculiar customs as invariable preliminary stages of actual marriage; we should rather, perhaps, regard them as local variations. That at any time and in any place the children of the same mother have propagated themselves sexually, for any long

⁸⁰ Steinthal, in the *Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie*.

⁸¹ Bosman, *Guinese Goudkust*. Utrecht, 1704.

⁸² See above, p. 22.

⁸³ Morgan, *Systems of Consanguinity*.

period, has been rendered especially incredible, since it has been established that even in the case of organisms devoid of blood, such as the plants, reciprocal fertilization of the descendants of the same parents is to a great extent impossible. The theory gains no weight from the fact that Malay, Asiatic, and American Mongoloid nations, the Dravida of India, and some few negroes, in their speech distinguish peculiar relationships, for there cannot possibly be any allusion to sexual procreation when a man calls the great grandson of his great uncle his son, or when a woman speaks of the great granddaughter of her great aunt as her daughter. It is also noteworthy that of the eighty American languages examined by Morgan, two only have no specific expressions by which the woman designates the brother of her husband, and the husband of her sister, as her brothers-in-law,⁸⁴ so that in the great majority of cases no community of wives among brothers, and no community of husbands among sisters existed. It is precisely nations in the most primitive stage which have the greatest abhorrence of incestuous marriages. Neither could community of wives nor polyandry exist in those races among whom the *couvade*, or paternal child-bed, was customary.⁸⁵ Moreover, when we consider that all the languages in which the titles, father, brother, son, are attributed to the various members of the family according to whether they are descended from a common ancestor in a nearer, equal, or more remote degree, have proper names to distinguish the elder or younger brother, or father's brother, and the elder or younger sister, or mother's sister, it is evident that it is not the degree of consanguinity that is denoted, but the succession of the generations and the rank in the family, because these grades involve important consequences in domestic intercourse, such as the superior dignity of the elders, and yet more probably, more or less imperative duties of "*vendetta*." It is also a well-known fact that the aborigines of the present United States carried on sanguinary wars, and concluded formal treaties, to decide which nation was to bestow upon the other the title of grandfather, uncle, or elder brother. In other places the descendants of a common ancestor or ancestors formed a corporation reciprocally bound to

⁸⁴ Morzan. Systems of Consanguinity.

⁸⁵ See above, p. 223.

one another. Among the negroes of the Gold Coast, when a culprit was condemned to pay a fine which he was unable to raise, the father and the uncle, or other relations, were liable, and if necessary were sold as slaves.⁸⁶ In the same way, on the Palawan Islands, each head of a family, who is also the eldest, was held accountable for his kinsmen.⁸⁷

At present the progenitor almost everywhere has paternal power over his descendants; while among the more barbarous people he generally exercises over the wife the rights of a proprietor. Yet there are many nations in which all family rights are derived from the mother. Bosman affirms of the natives of the Gold Coast, that all children take their position from the mother, whoever the father may be. They are considered free or slaves, according as the mother was free or a slave.⁸⁸ The same usage existed among the ancient Lycians, who took their names not from their father but from their mother.⁸⁹ In the same manner the Australians always inherit family name and caste from the maternal side.⁹⁰ The habit is common also to the Fijians,⁹¹ the Maori of New Zealand, and the Micronesians of the Marshall Archipelago, among whom nobility or rank is inherited from the mother.⁹² The same principle is observed where the young husband enters the house of his father-in-law and passes into his family. This occurs among the Dyaks of Borneo, and it is very significant that there the father-in-law is more highly revered than the actual father.⁹³ Likewise, among the Itelmes of Kamtschatka, the husband belongs to the Ostrog of his wife.⁹⁴ These family institutions were also widely spread in America. In Guayana the child followed the

⁸⁶ Bosman, *Guinese Goud-Tand-en Slavenkust*. 1704. Winwood Reade, *Savage Africa*. 1863.

⁸⁷ C. Semper, *Palau-inseln*.

⁸⁸ *Guinese Goud-Tand-en Slavenkust*.

⁸⁹ Herodotus, lib. i. cap. 173.

⁹⁰ Waitz (Gerland), *Anthropologie*, vol. vi. There are some other instances in A. Bastian, *Rechtsverhältnisse*. 1872.

⁹¹ *Ausland*. 1859.

⁹² D. G. Morrad, *Das alte Neuseeland*. 1871. *Journal des Museum Godeffroy*. 1873.

⁹³ Spenser St. John, *Life in the Far East*. 1862.

⁹⁴ G. Steller, *Kamtschatka*.

mother in all social respects, so that the offspring of a Macushi Indian woman and a Wapishiana would be considered to belong to the Macushi tribe.⁹⁵ These views of rights were yet more decidedly marked among the Iroquois and Hurons of North America. The relationship to the father was regarded as very slight, and the children were dependent on the mother.⁹⁶ She alone possessed the right of adoption to supply the place left vacant when a son had been murdered. Hence the women decided whether the prisoners of war should die at the martyr's stake or be received into the tribe.⁹⁷ They were even honoured with the right of decision as to war or peace, as the former might give opportunity of gaining prisoners of war; this was not, however, done in earnest, for in reality they were kept from all knowledge of important political enterprises.⁹⁸ Though the young husband during the first years of his marriage owed his parents-in-law certain services, the wife, on the other hand, was bound to work in the fields of her parents-in-law, and to provide their household with wood.⁹⁹ The clear conception of such domestic institutions as these has been by no means aided by the fact that the Jesuit Lafitau applied to them the word "guneocracy," used by Strabo,¹⁰⁰ as if at any time, or in any place, however barbarous, women ruled in the house, and the men were under their control. J. J. Bachofen has indeed written a comprehensive work to spread the scarcely credible opinion that, in the earliest stages of human society, the mothers were considered the heads of the family, as if the so-called children of nature had recognized, not the right of the strongest, but the right of the weakest. Bachofen was only able to prove his assertion by adducing ancient myths, on which he put a forced interpretation. He holds the existence of female supremacy to be sufficiently established by the fact that, in ancient Egypt, the men occupied the weaver's stool; and, regardless of the exhaustive researches of

⁹⁵ Appun, in the *Ausland*. 1872.

⁹⁶ Charlevoix, *Nouvelle France*.

⁹⁷ *Ibid*.

⁹⁸ *Ibid*.

⁹⁹ Lafitau, *Mœurs des sauvages*. 1724.

¹⁰⁰ Strabo, *Geogr.*, lib. iii.

Martius, he yet maintains that the Amazonian communities of South America existed outside the imagination of Spanish explorers.

The custom that the children belong to the mother in all social respects does not necessarily indicate that the paternity was regarded as uncertain, but that the bodily relation to the mother was held to be incomparably stronger, just as, until quite recent times, physiologists have adhered to the opinion, that in the generation of offspring the function of the father must be considered quite subordinate. The strange ideas of procreation which are held by the so-called savages, are illustrated by the superstition of the Saliva Indians on the Orinoco, that every woman who gives birth to twins must necessarily have been guilty of adultery.¹⁰¹ The view of the subject to which we have alluded explains the occurrences of the heirship of nephews, that is to say, the right of inheriting from the brother of the mother to the exclusion of his own offspring. Thus among the Tuaregs the dignity of chief is always transferred to the sister's sons.¹⁰² On the Gold Coast the son inherited from his maternal uncle, the daughter from the mother's sister,¹⁰³ and even now the throne of Ashanti does not pass to the next heir of the body, but to the son of the brother or sister.¹⁰⁴ Heirship of nephews was also found by Livingstone among the Kebrabasa negroes on the Zambesi.¹⁰⁵ In the Antilles, the sister's children, as the nearest relations, at least excluded the brother's children from the succession.¹⁰⁶ The heirship of nephews is also customary in America among the Kolushs and other coast tribes in the north-west,¹⁰⁷ among the Montagnais in Labrador,¹⁰⁸ and also among the Hurons and Iroquois.¹⁰⁹ This social institution was formerly far more widely diffused and perhaps prevailed in all those nations in which the children followed the tribe of the mother. When Europeans, in Africa and America,

¹⁰¹ Jos. Gumilla, *El Orinoco ilustrado*. 1741.

¹⁰² *Bulletin de la Soc. de Geogr.* Paris, 1863.

¹⁰³ Bosman, *Guinese Goud-Kust*. 1704.

¹⁰⁴ Winwood Reade, *Savage Africa*. p. 43. . ¹⁰⁵ Zambesi, p. 162.

¹⁰⁶ Oviedo, *Historia general*, lib. v. cap. 3.

¹⁰⁷ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. iii.

¹⁰⁸ Youle Hind, *Labrador*. 1863.

¹⁰⁹ Charlevoix, *Nouvelle France*.

inquired into the cause of this family arrangement, they were invariably answered that no doubt could exist as to the relationship to the sister's children, whereas that on the father's side might be questioned. This certainly sounds as if conjugal fidelity was wanting, and as if very loose morals had prevailed; yet it is more probably due to an erroneous apprehension of the physiology of paternity, as the heirship of nephews occurs among so many nations of the strictest morality, such as the Kolushs above mentioned. Winwood Reade, who draws unfavourable pictures of the negroes of Western Africa, yet says that, notwithstanding the fact that the nephew is regarded as heir both in Dahomey and among the Adiya of Fernando Po, the first or, at any rate, the second commission of adultery is punished by death; nay, he even admits that in West Africa, if a girl disgraces her family by a false step, expulsion from the tribal community ensues.¹¹⁰ The heirship of nephews is also habitual among nations such as the Iroquois and Hurons, who are examples of severe self-restraint. Young couples were obliged to live together as brother and sister for an entire year to prove that higher motives than the gratification of sensual pleasure had brought them together.¹¹¹ Joseph Gumilla says similarly of the Red Indians, "They are all highly sensitive to the infidelity of their wives, though the Caribs alone inflict exemplary punishment upon them; the whole community aiding to slaughter the guilty individuals in public." At another time he mentions an Indian woman who poisoned herself that she might not break her marriage vow. Uncertainty with regard to paternity cannot have led to the heirship of nephews in those races which observe the custom of the male child-bed.¹¹² Hence, until strong evidence is adduced, preference of the sister's children before the actual bodily heir, and the reverence for the mother's brother, ought not to be regarded as a sign of conjugal immorality.

As no other suitable place may be found, we must be allowed here to add that kissing is not everywhere the custom. Darwin

¹¹⁰ *Savage Africa*, pp. 48-61. 1863.

¹¹¹ Lafitau, *Mœurs des sauvages*. Charlevoix, Nouvelle France.

¹¹² *El Orinoco ilustrado*. 1741. There were, however, even gross breaches of conjugal fidelity.

has already informed us that in the South Seas this expression of affection is unknown to the Maori of New Zealand, the Tahitians, the Papuans, and the Australians, and also, in America, to the Eskimo and Fuegians.¹¹³ Winwood Reade terrified a negro girl by kissing her, for in Western Africa such caresses are not usual; Bayard Taylor likewise found among the Lapp women a decided aversion to this form of contact. It is of course impossible in the case of all those nations which slit open the lips and insert small pieces of wood, such as the tribes on the coast of Behring's Sea, the Kolushs, the Botocudos of Brazil, and the negroes of Central and Southern Africa.

VIII.—THE GERMS OF POLITICAL LIFE.

THE germs of civil life exist in the family. The Chinese, more than any other people, have strengthened this tie; among them reverence for parents is developed into a kind of religious worship. One of the most sacred duties which unites the members of the family is the "vendetta," an institution not entirely deserving of our abhorrence, for we ought to respect it as the first attempt at legal protection. In past ages all the nations of the world observed this duty, which has been retained to our own days in Corsica and Albania. Confucius imposed upon a son the duty of carrying arms until he had taken and slain his father's murderer. The extinct Tasmanians also regarded such vengeance as a duty.¹ In like manner among their kinsmen, the Australians, all the members of a tribe were responsible for every sanguinary act committed by any of their number.² Martius describes this custom as common to all nations of Brazil, and notices it also among the Macushi and Arowaks of Guayana.³ Among the Fijians the duty of vengeance was transmitted from father to son, and from the latter to the nearest relations.⁴ This duty of defence

¹¹³ This caress is despised by the Marquesas Islanders (see Langsdorff, *Reise um die Welt*), and probably by all Polynesians; perhaps all nations among whom the Malay kiss is customary.

¹ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. vi.

² *Ibid.* vol. vi.

³ *Ethnographie*, vol. i.

⁴ H. Greffrath, in the *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*. 1871.

serves a useful purpose, even if the chastising hand does not overtake the malefactor himself, but falls only on one who belongs to the same confederation.

It may seem strange that the sympathy of the ethnologist should be enlisted in favour of this doctrine of duty, but the following event, which happened in Arabia, will be sufficient explanation. In the year 1863, an Italian named Guarmani was sent to Nedshd by the Emperor Napoleon to buy thoroughbred horses. In the beginning of March, 1864, as he was wandering about with the Beni Ehtebe, a horde of Bedouins, they were attacked by their enemy, Emir Abdallah Ibn Feisal ibn Sa'wd. The conflict lasted several days, until at last an unexpected ally came to the aid of the Beni Ehtebe. Among the auxiliaries of the Emir were the Beni Kahtan who, during the successive days of hostilities, from the 9th to the 14th of March, had constantly skirmished with the Beni Ehtebe, but at the same time remained at a prudent distance. When the victors examined the field of battle they did not find among the slain a single individual of the Kahtans, whose entire party had seized the first available opportunity to fly. When we remember that the law of vengeance requires an accurate account not only of all deaths but of all bodily injuries, it is significant that, on the other hand, none of the Beni Ehtebe ascribed his wounds to any of the Beni Kahtan.⁵ The Kahtan horde had always lived in peace with the Ehtebe, and had only followed the Emir to the battle on compulsion. In this instance, in which these two tribes by mutual consent had only pretended to fight, the law of vengeance showed its beneficial influence, for if any wounds had been inflicted, they would have given rise to a series of acts of violence descending to distant generations. We thus see that the "vendetta" was a protection to life. Hence, if an Arab kills his own relation no avenger pursues him, for he has injured himself, nor does the murder of an outlaw or one expelled from his tribe involve consequences of any kind.⁶ Where vengeance is

⁵ Guarmani, *Itineraire au Neged septentrional*, in the *Bulletin de la Société Geogr.* Paris, 1865.

⁶ Von Maltzan, *Sittenschilderungen aus Südarabien*, vol. xxi. p. 123. Globus, 1872.

regarded as a duty, he who does not execute it is regarded with contempt.⁷ As retribution has thus been developed into an affair of honour, it is very difficult for these sanguinary feuds to end. They are most easily ended by the equalization of the number of deaths and wounds on both sides. The balance in any other case must be made up in money's worth. The Aneze Bedouins require for the life of a freeman, fifty female camels, a dromedary, a mare, a black slave, a coat of mail and a gun;⁸ some tribes demand money to the value of £50, and others only half as much.

As manners become gentler, compensation in money's worth becomes the practice, and hence is developed the custom of weregild, or blood-money. Wherever such penalties were imposed, the "vendetta" formerly prevailed. In Guinea, in Bosman's⁹ days, that is, in the beginning of the eighteenth century, the death of every freeman was atoned for by heavy fines, which were paid to the relations. In Siam, contrary to our ideas of justice, a smaller sum is paid for the killing of an old man than for that of men in the prime of life.¹⁰ The old Germans paid the weregild partly to the family of the slaughtered person, partly to the community.¹¹ Among the Kaffirs justice has so far advanced that the fines are paid to the chief instead of to the injured parties, as if the wrong had been inflicted on the society or the person who represents it.¹² They justify the fact that the kinsmen are left without compensation, by the beautiful saying, that one cannot eat one's own blood.¹³ The "vendetta" demands an equivalent retribution, according to the scriptural words,

⁷ Among the Kuki, a tribe in Southern Asia, the kinsmen of a man killed by a tiger looked upon themselves as dishonoured until they had slain a tiger. Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 282.

⁸ Burckhardt, *Notes on the Bedouins*. London, 1830.

⁹ Guineese Goud-Tand-en Slavekust.

¹⁰ Brossard de Corbigny, in the *Revue maritime et coloniale*, tom. xxxiii.

¹¹ Tacitus, *Germ.* cap. 12. *Pars multae regi, vel civitati, pars ipsi, qui vindicatur, vel propinquis ejus absolvitur.* Comp. J. Grimm, *Deutsche Recht-alterthümer*, and G. Geib, *Lehrbuch des deutschen Strafrechtes*. Leipzig, 1861.

¹² Fritsch, *Eingeborne Südafrika*, p. 97.

¹³ Maclean, *Kafir Laws and Customs*. Mount Coke, 1858.

an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth, a life for a life. The Roman system of penal justice was also founded on this conception. At the time of the laws of the Twelve Tables, retribution was still exacted, at least for severe bodily injuries, unless the person wronged preferred a compromise.¹⁴

In every part of the world where man has taken possession of a thing either for use or pleasure, he has considered himself its proprietor. Even animals exhibit some apprehension of the rights of possession; birds seem to feel this in regard to the nest which they have built. A monkey which was in the Zoological Gardens in London, and which had weak jaws, made use of a stone to open nuts, always hiding it in the straw after using it, nor would he allow it to be touched by any other monkey.¹⁵ The Pomeranian dogs of our carters watch the goods of their masters, and evidently behave as guardians of the property. Appun, who spent many years among the natives of Guayana, assures us that the property of the individual is held sacred by the other inhabitants of his hut.¹⁶ At a very early stage the conception of rights of property even in immovable objects arises. Hunting tribes always regard the hunting-ground as the property of the tribe collectively. The Brazilians avail themselves of rivers, waterfalls, mountains, rocks, and trees, as boundary marks.¹⁷ A fight between two hordes of the Botocudos, at which the Prince of Wied was present, was the consequence of an invasion by one tribe of the hunting-ground of another tribe.¹⁸ Among the Australians, whom ethnology was wont to look down upon as the most degraded people, property in soil and territory was strictly respected. Benilong, a native of New South Wales, had inherited Goat Island from his father, and intended to leave it to a friend.¹⁹ Divisions of the inheritance during the lifetime of the owner occur among them, and the rights of the proprietor

¹⁴ Si membrum rupit, ni cum eo pacit, talio esto; Table VIII. H. E. Dirksen, Uebersicht der Zwölftafel-Fragmente.

¹⁵ Darwin, *Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 44.

¹⁶ Ausland. 1872.

¹⁷ Martius, *Ethnographie*, vol. i.

¹⁸ Reise nach Brasilien. 1820.

¹⁹ Dumont d'Urville, *Voyage de l'Astrolabe*.

were so rigidly respected that no one was allowed to fell trees or kindle fire on the territory of another without his leave. A state of society in which ownership is not recognized is therefore unknown.

Where stationary populations have fields under cultivation, the boundaries of the land are carefully and clearly marked out. Boundary stones are to be seen on the northern Nicobar Islands, which are densely peopled, while there are none in the southern islands, in which there is still sufficient space.²⁰ Among the old inhabitants of Cumaná on the Caribbean Sea, the Spaniards saw the field marked off by cotton strings, and to tamper with these was looked upon as a crime.²¹ The inhabitants of the Venezuelan shores regarded theft as the most reprehensible offence, and punished it by a cruel death.²² It is a most arbitrary act on the part of a despotic government when, in districts so densely peopled as British and Malayan India, the Crown exalts itself into the sole proprietor of soil and territory, farming out the land to the subjects. The same state institution existed in ancient China.²³ In Peru, during the time of the Incas, private property was impossible, for a strict community of goods prevailed, or rather, there was one sole proprietor, the Son of the Sun, who through his officials imposed the statute-service on his subjects, and divided amongst them all the produce of their labour. Nor was this system confined to Peru; the Caziques of the Antilles²⁴ and the chiefs of the Otomaks in the modern Venezuela used it also. Where a divine origin is ascribed to the chiefs, and they are regarded as superior beings, property can only be held by them. Among the true Polynesians, and the hybrid Polynesian nations, all that the prince touches or treads upon becomes *taboo*, or not lawful for any one to touch. The troublesome precautions to which the chiefs were obliged to submit in order to avoid the unwished-for consequences of the law have often been told; how, for example, they are carried across tracts of land to prevent tabooing them.

²⁰ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. i. p. 440.

²¹ Petrus Martyr, *De orbe novo*, Dec. viii. cap. 6.

²² Gomara, *Historia de las Indias*, cap. 28, 68.

²³ Plath, *Gesetz und Recht im alten China*.

²⁴ Peschel, *Zeitalter der Entdeckungen*.

The organization of the national life is most closely dependent on the mode of gaining a livelihood. Where man associates with his fellow-men, a governing authority springs up. The loosest of all social bonds are those of the nomadic hunting tribes of Brazil, which consist of a few families or often of only one. But even these have their hunting-grounds to protect, and require a leader, at least in times of war. Among all hunters and fishermen the power of the chiefs is very limited, and often not even hereditary. The Indians of North America, the Australians, the Bushmen, and the Eskimo, allow their chiefs very slight authority: for hunting and fishing are the employments in which the individual least requires the aid of his fellows. "In an ant's nest," exclaims Peter Gumilla,²⁵ with reference to the Indians of the Orinoco, "there is more order and authority than in the nations concerning which I have been writing." Another Jesuit, Charlevoix,²⁶ judges more favourably of the North American Indians. "Without any visible ruler," he says, "they enjoy all the advantages of a well-regulated government."

Pastoral tribes are usually found under patriarchal leaders, for the flocks generally belong to a single master who is served by the other members of his tribe in the capacity of domestics, or by former flock-owners once independent and subsequently impoverished. In the northern parts of the Old World, as well as in Southern Africa, great national migrations are nearly if not quite peculiar to pastoral life; the history of America, on the contrary, tells only of the invasions of barbarous hunting tribes into the civilized territories of prosperous populations. That entire nations should desert their former dwellings, press onwards, and wander over vast regions of the world, is inconceivable, unless they are accompanied by flocks yielding the requisite sustenance on the march. Cattle-breeding on steppes necessitates a change of abode. When nations become stationary, and husbandry commences, the desire for slave labour at once arises. Hunters who support themselves and their families only by constant exertion, can find no employment for bondsmen in their household. It is different even where fishing is practised, for in that case we some-

²⁵ El Orinoco ilustrado.

²⁶ Nouvelle France.

times find slavery, as on the north-west coast of America, among the Koniaks and Kolushs, and among the Ahts of Vancouver's Island²⁷ who, we may remark in passing, cut the hair of their bondsmen. Sooner or later slavery invariably leads to despotism, for he who possesses the greatest number of slaves is apt to use them to oppress the weaker. Slavery prevails throughout the whole of Central Africa, and therefore, whichever way we look in those regions, we see nothing but despotisms growing up on the ruins of other despotisms.

By the distinction of freemen from bondsmen, society becomes organized into ranks: an order of nobility is found even among negroes, although but rarely, as on the Gold Coast or in Congo.²⁸ The same occurs where a conquering race subjugates an alien nation. Physical characters are then usually regarded as tokens of superior descent; indeed, the Indian expression for caste, *varna*, is equivalent to *colour*,²⁹ alluding to the colour of the skin. When the kings of Spain raised a native American to the nobility, the formula was "that he might henceforth consider himself as a white man." It is difficult to explain how distinctions according to descent arise in hunting tribes. Yet among the Australians there are three castes which allow no intermarriages,³⁰ although it has nowhere been observed that any members of a tribe enjoyed a preference over the others. Our information concerning the supposed order of nobility among these races is still very imperfect.³¹ If it is confined to the Coburg peninsula in the north,³² it is probably due to an immigration from the islands to the north. For among the Malays, as well as among their kinsmen the Polynesians, there is an order of nobility which is generally subdivided into many grades.³³ Among the Tongans Mariner found, besides

²⁷ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. iii. and Sproat in the *Anthropological Review*. 1868. Even among the Botocudos, slaves made prisoners in war are said to have been seen. Prinz zu Neuwied, *Reise nach Brasilien*.

²⁸ Antonio Zucchella, *Missione di Congo*, ix. 1712.

²⁹ Adalbert Kuhn in Weber's *Indischen Studien*.

³⁰ Earl, in the *Journal of the Royal Geographical Society*, vol. xvi.

³¹ *Reise in der Fregatte Novara*, *Anthropologie*.

³² Waitz (*Gerland*) *Anthropologie*, vol. vi.

³³ For instance, in the district of Holontalo, in the Northern Celebes. Riedel, *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*. 1871.

the princes, a higher and lower nobility, and two classes of plebeians.³⁴ Aristocratic privileges and the institutions of caste are rampant also among the Papuan-Polynesian hybrid nations as well as among the inhabitants of the Fiji group or the Palau Islands. As we possess very inadequate information respecting the true Papuans of New Guinea, and the power of the chiefs is described as very dubious, and as the New Caledonians (who are, however, probably not pure bred) seem to recognize no distinctions of rank, save the dignity of the chief, it is probably due to Polynesian influence alone that so many Papuan hybrid races have organized themselves into castes.

In America we find aristocracy of birth among the Kolushs on the coast of Alaska, and among their neighbours the Haidahs of Queen Charlotte's Island. In both these places families bear the figures of animals as crests.³⁵ Among the more southerly tribes on the north-west coast of America, those of noble birth were distinguishable by the artificial flattening of the head, for this mark, as we have seen, was conferred only on the free-born.³⁶ The Iroquois made no differences of rank; the Algonkins and their southern neighbours, on the contrary, separated themselves into nobles, commons, and slaves.³⁷ In South America the Peruvian children of the sun founded a twofold nobility in their empire; for, in addition to the numerous Incas or descendants of the blood royal,³⁸ they established the curacas, or local chiefs, in the vanquished provinces, and these were allowed to pierce their ears like the children of the Sun.³⁹ Among the Guarani tribes and the Abipones there is also a marked distinction between people of high and low descent. Old women, as Dobrizhoffer relates, whose wealth consisted solely in the wrinkles of their faces, boasted loudly that they were not descended from plebeian

³⁴ Tonga Islands. Edinburgh, 1827.

³⁵ Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. iii. Ausland, 1868.

³⁶ See above, p. 21.

³⁷ Lafitau, *Mœurs des sauvages américains*. 1724.

³⁸ Clements Markham is of opinion that the title of Inca was originally given not only to the ruling house, but to all the tribal heads of the Inca nation. *Journal of Royal Geographical Society*, vol. xli.

³⁹ Garcilasso, *Commentarios*, lib. i. cap. xxi.

parents. In conversing with nobles, the syllables *in* or *en* were appended to all verbs and nouns, according to whether the person addressed was a man or woman.⁴⁰

IX.—THE RELIGIOUS EMOTIONS OF UNCIVILIZED NATIONS.

IN all stages of civilization, and among all races of mankind, religious emotions are always roused by the same inward impulse, the necessity of discerning a cause or an author for every phenomenon and event. Those nations which have remained child-like combine with this an incapacity of conceiving the objects of sensory perception as inanimate. We shall shortly show that they attribute voluntary acts and human sensibility even to stones and rocks. The Dyaks of Borneo ascribe a psychical nature, called *semungat*, or *semungi*, not only to animals but even to plants. They regard unhealthiness in a plant as a temporary absence of its invisible *ego*, and when the rice perishes, its soul is said to have flown away.¹ When Philips the missionary complained of the heat on a sultry day to a young Fuegian, the boy anxiously exclaimed, "Do not call the sun hot or it will hide itself, and the wind will blow cold."² As the objects of the visible world are conceived as animated, volitional, and emotional, they may be deemed the originators of those misfortunes of which the true cause is unknown. The process of thought which results in these feelings among uncivilized races in intellectual obscurity is clearly illustrated by a frequently quoted anecdote given by the African traveller, Lichtenstein.³ The chief of the Amaṡosa, a Kaffir tribe, had given orders that a piece should be broken off a stranded anchor. Soon afterwards the man died by whom the order had been carried out, and as the Kaffirs, in common with many other nations in all parts of the world, ascribe the death of every man to supernatural causes, the injured anchor from that time received

⁴⁰ Geschichte der Abiponer. 1783.

¹ Spenser St. John, Life in the Far East, vol. i. p. 176. 1862.

² Ausland. 1861.

³ Reisen im sudlichen Africa. Berlin, 1811.

marks of veneration from the Amazosa. The Australians of New South Wales think it a crime to whistle in the vicinity of rocks, for, as they told Dumont d'Urville, some of their tribe who once whistled at the foot of a precipice were therefore killed by falling blocks of stone.⁴ The proverb that avalanches are loosened by the sound of the bells on the mules' backs is certainly not founded on experience, but points to some old superstition of the same type as the Australian instance already given. We may here mention that the Wuka or Papuan hill people of New Guinea take their oaths near a high mountain, under the impression that it will fall upon them in case of perjury.⁵ Near the Attar river in Pegu, about forty years before the visit of the Countess Nostiz,⁶ a huge thingan tree, which was to be cut down and made into a war canoe, in its fall chanced to kill more than a hundred people; the spot was at once regarded as bewitched, and a chapel for the Nat, or wood spirit, was erected on the stump of the tree. The King of Coomassie having died in 1698, and his bitter enemy, the Dutch superintendent of the Fort of Elmina, soon afterwards following him to the grave, the negroes who worship their dead as divine beings, looked upon the death of the latter as the work of their prince who had gone before him.⁷ In all these cases we easily detect the weakness in the intellectual powers by which the temporal sequence of events is deemed necessarily to imply causal connection. Thus the Itelmes of Kamtschatka worshipped the water wagtails as the authors of spring, because a more propitious season set in at the time of their arrival:⁸ a similar logical fallacy is indicated by the old proverb that "one swallow does not make summer." It was invariably the originators of alarming or desired events which attracted religious veneration. A native Mexican historian⁹ tells us that the renowned king

⁴ It is remarkable that on the Tonga Islands all whistling is avoided as being disrespectful to the gods. Mariner's Tonga Islands.

⁵ O. Finsch, Neu-Guinea.

⁶ Helfer, Reisen in Vorderasien und Indien. Leipzig, 1873.

⁷ Bosman, Guinese Goud-Kust. 1704.

⁸ G. Steller, Kamtschatka.

⁹ Ixtlilxochitl, Histoire des Chichimèques. Prescott, Conquest of Mexico, vol. i. p. 194.

Tezucos Netzahualcoyotzin worshipped an unknown god under the name of Cause of Causes. This craving after an invisible author or cause is the inducement to attribute a divine control over the destinies of mankind to lifeless objects, which are, however, regarded as animated. This is the obvious explanation of the origin of fetishism.

Every object that attracts the glance of the savage, who espies a ghost in every corner, may become in his eyes the abode of a deity. Fragments of plants, snake-skins, feathers, claws, shells, stone pipes, living beings, whole species of animals, in short, whatever first presents itself to the mind of the Red Indian, excited by long fasting, he thenceforth recognizes and worships as his guardian spirit.¹⁰ The selection of the objects worshipped is however important, for by neglecting the commonplace for the sublime, it may transform fetishism into the belief in a supreme and morally perfect Being. Man remains ignoble only so long as his worship is given to portable objects, for these, together with their supposed divine power, are liable to become the property of a possessor. The services of these guardian spirits are then enjoyed by an owner. Laban, when he missed his household gods, pursued the patriarch Jacob; and Rachel, who had stolen them, was able by her cunning to conceal them from his search. Long subsequent to the Mosaic legislation, down to David's times, the Hebrews kept their Seraphim or Penates in their houses.¹¹ Even where the intellect has attained the purest conception of God, the heart still clings tenaciously to the old objects of its childish veneration: no nation has yet completely purified itself from superstition, that is to say, from the remnants of earlier religious notions.

Sekedshket, who built cities in Turkistan in the lazy past ages, received several fetishes as part of the dowry of his Chinese wife; and idol fairs were occasionally held in Bokhara.¹² When the fetish belongs to the movable properties or, as it were, to the household of the master, it is punished for its supposed obduracy

¹⁰ Charlevoix, *Nouvelle France*.

¹¹ 1 Sam. xix. 13-19, and Ewald, *Israelitische Geschichte*.

¹² Vámbéry, *History of Bokhara*.

or malignity whenever it does not grant the wishes of the supplicant. When a misfortune befalls the Ostiak, he throws his idol on the ground, beats and ill-uses it, or breaks it to pieces.¹³ About twenty years ago, Rastus, the last pagan Lapp in Europe, on some occasion deprived his divine bauta stone of its customary offering of brandy. When shortly afterwards two of his reindeer were killed by lightning, he angrily threw the pieces of the dismembered animals to his idol, exclaiming, "Take that which thou hast slain;" he then immediately embraced Christianity.¹⁴ Before every great enterprise the negro of Guinea, if no old and tried fetish is at hand, selects a new one; whatever his eye falls upon as he leaves his house, be it a dog, a cat, or any other creature, he takes as his deity and offers sacrifices to it on the spot. If the enterprise succeeds the credit of the fetish is increased; if it fails, the fetish returns to its former position.¹⁵

In all parts of the world stones have attracted the devotion of man. It is not surprising that worship was often offered to meteorolites which, falling red hot, penetrated into the ground. A stone which fell near Chicomoztotl, or the Seven Caves, an important spot in the mythological topography of the ancient Mexicans, was worshipped by them as the son of the divine couple, Ometeuctli and Omecihuatl.¹⁶ The black stone, the chief object of worship of Mohammedans in Mecca, is said to have shone brightly at first, but very soon to have turned black on account of the sinfulness of mankind.¹⁷ It is undoubtedly a remnant of the fetish worship of the pre-Islam Arabs, as is also the stone now built into the Mosque of Omar at Jerusalem, which carried the prophet heavenwards and then fell down, or rather still hovers in the air.¹⁸ Owing to other conceptions easily interpreted, phallic-shaped stones, which are perhaps single pillars left standing out of a row of basalt columns, are worshipped in the Fiji

¹³ Pallas, *Voyages*. 1793.

¹⁴ *Globus*. January, 1873.

¹⁵ Bosman, *Guinese Goud-Tand-en Slavekust*.

¹⁶ J. G. Müller, *Amerikanische Urreligionen*.

¹⁷ Sepp, in the *Allgem. Zeitung*. 1872.

¹⁸ Baierlein, *Nach und aus Indien*.

Islands.¹⁹ Only recently Theodor Kirchhoff was shown a fragment of rock in Oregon to which the Umpkwa Indians are wont to make pilgrimages. The prophets of Israel and the devout kings of Judah contended incessantly against the worship of the "high places," which were probably tall, pointed stones symbolical of the Most Holy.²⁰ Even Jacob anointed the stone at Bethel on which he had rested. In Celtic Europe we find stone circles as places for worship, and also trilithic cromlechs or stone tables, which served either as places of sacrifice or for the faithful to crawl through. Even in A.D. 567 a Council at Tours was obliged to threaten excommunication against stone worship; and in England similar interdicts were issued in the seventh century by Theodoric, Archbishop of Canterbury, in the tenth by King Edgar, and again in the eleventh by Canute.²¹ This error is more pardonable in our eyes when the objects worshipped are the mountains' crests.²² We do not allude to the consecration of particular summits, such as Olympus, as the seat of the epic deities, or of Sinai as the mountain of legislation, although with reference to the latter we will observe that, on the heights of Sērbāls, there is a stone circle which the Bedouins only enter without their shoes. There is also one on which they lay gifts on the adjacent Jebel Munādshāt, called by the Arabs "the mountain of the dialogue" (that, namely, of Moses with Jehovah).²³ The veneration of footprints, such as that of the god Tezcatlipoca which the ancient Mexicans showed at Quauhtitlan,²⁴ or that of Tiiti at Samoa, in the group of Navigator's Islands,²⁵ and, finally, the footprint of Buddha on Adam's Peak at Ceylon, does not belong to this category, but is a form of relic worship. On the other hand, we may mention the Shaman stone of the Mongolian Burats, a rock on the peninsula of Olchon on Lake Baikal, and the mountain of Tyrma, or Tirmak, on which the Guanches,

¹⁹ Williams, *Fiji and the Fijians*.

²⁰ Ewald, *History of the Children of Israel*.

²¹ Sir John Lubbock, *Origin of Civilization*, p. 209.

²² Rüppell, *Reise in Abyssinien*.

²³ G. Ebers, *Durch Gosen zum Sinai*.

²⁴ J. G. Müller, *Urreligionen*.

²⁵ Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 143.

the aborigines of the Canary Islands, took their most solemn oaths, and from which enthusiasts voluntarily cast themselves as sacrifices.²⁶ Pausanias found stone worship established among the inhabitants of Phara, and on another occasion states that in old times all Greeks worshipped stones instead of images,²⁷ adding that they gave them the names of the different forces of nature; but it is doubtful whether this was a genuine stone worship, or only the remains of one that was genuine.

There is perhaps something alien to the German mind in stone worship, but the old pagan blood which is in us makes us more sympathetic on hearing that trees or groves were regarded as deities, or the abodes of deities: even now we understand the emotions of our forefathers when St. Boniface felled the Saxon oak. The murmur of the quiet wood, the roar of the forest during a storm, the crashing and creaking of the timber, the apparent struggle of a leafless tree with its gnarled branches rent by the storm, give us the impression of standing face to face with an animated being, and only too readily do we give way to the illusion of the actual presence of the supersensual powers. Tree worship formerly extended over all the world. On Loch Siant, in the Isle of Skye, there is even now an oak wood of such sanctity that no twig may be broken.²⁸ Wherever a solitary cedar springs up in a forest of fir trees, or there is a clump of seven larches, the Samoyed approaches the spot with awe. The Ostiak deems a tree sacred on which an eagle has built its nest for several successive years.²⁹ No twig of the groves of the Mundakhol, a Dravida tribe in India, may be injured.³⁰ On the other side of Jordan trees may still be seen from which are suspended sacrificial gifts, especially tresses of hair.³¹ On his march to Sardis in Lydia, Xerxes adorned a sacred plane tree with ornaments of gold, and left a guardian to protect it.³² In Africa, again, the huge monkey bread-trees, or

²⁶ Peschel, *Zeitalter der Entdeckungen*.

²⁷ Pausanias, vii.

²⁸ Sir John Lubbock, *Origin of Civilization*, p. 192.

²⁹ Castren, *Vorlesungen. Pallas, Voyages*.

³⁰ *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*. 1871.

³¹ Wolff in the *Ausland*. 1872.

³² Herodotus, lib. vii. cap. 31.

Adansonia, receive the offerings of the devout. Adolf Bastian observed the same custom in Burmah.³³ Tylor speaks of a sacred cypress worshipped in this manner in Mexico; Möllhausen of an oak on the western Colorado; and at the outlet of Lake Superior stands the great ash tree to which the Red Indians bring offerings, as they do to the solitary Wallitschu tree on the pampas near Patagones (*Carmen*), visited by Darwin.³⁴ Other instances are the grove of Dodona, the Homeric plane-tree at Aulis, of which Pausanias³⁵ saw the remains; the veneration accorded to the pepal (*Ficus religiosa*) and the Indian fig-tree (*F. indica*) by the Brahminical Hindoos and the Buddhists; the sacred aspen of the Kirghiz,³⁶ the pear-tree lately felled in the Walser Feld, and the great ash Yggdrafil of our myths. A different form of tree worship is connected with the sojourn of holy personages, as was the case with the grove of Mamre because Abraham dwelt there, or the sycamore at Matarieh, under the shadow of which the Madonna is said to have rested in the flight to Egypt. The meaning of tree worship varies with the species of gift which is offered. The Arabs, who in pagan times offered sacrifices to trees, hanging their weapons on them,³⁷ regarded the trees as the seat of a god, or even as a god itself. Where, on the other hand, as Mungo Park saw³⁸ in the Mandingo country, the trees are laden with rags and shreds, Bosman³⁹ had already observed that in Guinea the sacred groves and trees were more assiduously visited in times of pestilence. Tylor mentions the existence in Europe of a superstition that a disease may be taken from the house of the sick person with a piece of his property, and conveyed to some other object—a tree or, better still, to another man. In Southern Europe young girls frequently offer to sell nosegays to the travellers which come from the house of a sick

³³ Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie u. Sprachwissenschaft. 1868. Bowers, Bhamo Expedition. Berlin, 1871.

³⁴ Journal of Researches, p. 68. 1845.

³⁵ Pausanias, lib. ix.

³⁶ Nöschel, Reise in die Kirgisen Steppe.

³⁷ L. Krehl, Die Religionen der vorislamitischen Araber.

³⁸ Reisen im Innern von Afrika. 1799.

³⁹ Guinees Goud-Tand-en Slavekust.

person.⁴⁰ The author remembers being carefully warned in his boyhood never to pick up a flower lying on the road, "for one cannot tell what disease the person may have who threw it away." It must be understood that this prohibition extended only to flowers. The Suaheli in Eastern Africa offer food to the demons of disease: they do not eat it themselves, but place it in some footpath that a passer-by may consume it, and thus take the pestilence upon himself.⁴¹

Of all animals serpents have been most frequently worshipped. Snake worship, or the Naga religion, has spread most widely in India, as is testified by names of places such as Nagapoor, Widshanagara, and Baghanagara. Even now the cobras or hooded-snakes are publicly worshipped by the Brahmins at the Feast of Nagapanshmi. Moses in a weak moment allowed the brazen serpent to be made, which was afterwards transported to Jerusalem with other sacred objects, and was only removed from the Temple in 720 B.C. by the pious King Hezekiah. Even within the limits of Christianity we find the sect of the Ophites, who continued or renewed snake worship, unless the greater part of what is imputed to them is untrue.⁴² The worship of serpents still continues in full vigour in the negro kingdom of Dahomey,⁴³ and has spread with slavery to the New World, where it is said to have recently taken firm root in Hayti.

Besides the world-wide veneration for wells, and for mineral springs in particular, running water has been regarded as divine, especially by the Hindoos. On the magnificent mountain heights where the Ganges and the Jumna issue from glaciers, and in the plains over the pool which forms the source of the Nerbudda, sanctuaries and places of pilgrimage have been erected.⁴⁴ Bathing in the holy rivers is supposed to have a sanctifying influence; there are devout Hindoos who carry the water of the Ganges from Benares to Ramesseram, near the southern point of India, to wash their

⁴⁰ Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. ii. p. 150.

⁴¹ *Journal of the Anthropological Institute*, vol. i.

⁴² Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. ii. p. 243.

⁴³ Bosman, *Guinese Goud-Kust*.

⁴⁴ H. von Schlagintweit, *Indien und Hochasien*.

native idols,⁴⁵ although the distance is little less than that between Madrid and Berlin. The ancient Persians also regarded running water as sacred; but in contrast to the Hindoos they endeavoured to guard it from pollution, so that the erection of bridges, which put a stop to wading through the rivers, was considered a work of piety.⁴⁶ Although even the divinities of the ocean were not quite secure against the chastisements of barbarians, for a Persian king flogged the Hellespont with rods,⁴⁷ yet a better state of things dawned when men raised their eyes to seek the unknown Creator in the starry skies. The worship of sun, moon, and constellations, which is common among the Mongolian nations of Northern Asia, has spread from thence over both parts of America. Although religious emotions appear in human societies far earlier than the distinction between good and evil, and therefore have nothing to do with the subsequent laws of morality, yet as soon as intercourse between the members of the same confederation is regulated by strictly observed customs, human institutions are believed to be derived from the commands of the Deity, and from this time religion becomes the most effectual means of education and improvement.⁴⁸ In the endeavour to glorify the morality of the Deity, the religious impulse unconsciously advances the refinement of human society. When the conception of the fetish is extended to all visible objects, the sun, as the symbol of all that is pure and bright, seems capable of exerting the greatest influence in exalting the dignity of human intercourse. We refer especially to the government of the Peruvian Incas, who claimed descent from the day-star, and by means of conquest extended their strict laws and an admirable semi-civilization from Quito to Chili. But even the Apatsh points to the sun, and says to the white man, "Do you not believe that this deity sees

⁴⁵ K. Graul, *Reise nach Ostindien*.

⁴⁶ Duncker, *Geschichte des Alterthums*. 1853.

⁴⁷ Herodotus, lib. vii. cap. 35.

⁴⁸ Fritz Schultze similarly says (*Fetischismus*. 1871): "The fact that the savage is so absolutely under the dominion of his Mokisso (fetish) and of his oath, constitutes an important educational element of fetishism. The savage imposes duties on himself—he controls himself."

our actions, and chastises us if they are wicked?"⁴⁹ A Huron woman hearing the perfections of God extolled by a Christian priest, exclaimed, "I had always pictured to myself our Areskui" (by which she meant the sun and the Great Spirit) "as of the nature which you ascribe to your God."⁵⁰

As the sun is not merely a visible object, but is also a source of the forces of nature, sun worship leads to the adoration of phenomena only indirectly perceptible by their effects. This advanced form of the demand for causality marks a great and happy chapter in the history of the evolutions of every nation that has attained to it. Tree worship sooner or later necessitated the experience that the decay caused by old age or, even earlier, by the devastations of wood-eating parasites, or by a stroke of lightning, destroyed the plant-god. In the last case especially, it was evident that humbler and perishable powers are controlled by still higher forces. Nations worshipping the forces of nature must necessarily have reached a higher intellectual maturity, for divine interposition is traced only in those phenomena of the material world, natural causes of which are as yet inconceivable to the human understanding; hence there must have been a previous attempt at explanation, whereas thoughtless minds make no such researches. It is only in certain agricultural nations that we find the worship of the forces of nature. To such atmospheric changes are of supreme importance, for on these depend superfluity or want. The deification of Force, that is, of something imperceptible to the senses, can be maintained in its purity only in a priestly caste or as an esoteric doctrine; but the uninitiated, who did not understand the meaning of the enigmatical language of the worship of nature, and received the allegories as literal realities, necessarily invested the invisible with flesh and blood. From an adjective applied to Force arose a proper name for the Deity; from the name again originated a conception of a Being, which was thought of as male or female in accordance with the grammatical gender of the customary appellation; the imagination, once thus called into play, added fresh dreams to this romance of things divine. It is at

⁴⁹ Froebel as quoted by Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 286.

⁵⁰ Lafitau, *Mœurs des sauvages américains*, vol. i. p. 127.

once evident that the type of the language greatly influenced these creations. Hence languages which make a distinction of grammatical gender, such as those of the Aryan, Semitic, and Hamitic nations, are especially adapted for the fabrication of myths. Yet the functions of language must not be over-estimated, for we find myths of gods and goddesses among nations such as the Polyne-sians and the people of Central America, whose grammar is destitute of genders. Thus even Bleek ⁵¹ has made the mistake of looking for the worship of ancestors only in nations using the prefix-pronominal languages, although it exists among the Chinese whose language has no grammatical forms.

Delbrück has ingeniously employed the heroic fable of Hippolytus and Phædra to illustrate the manner in which language, as it were, automatically evolves myths. It had originally no other foundation than the phenomena visible in the evening sky from the first appearance of the crescent until the disc of the moon has become full. We may venture briefly to repeat his explanation. Any Greek scholar can perceive that the name Hippolytus indicates one who drives with loose or unharnessed horses. In the world of poetry this is done by the sun-god alone. The moon, on the other hand, is glorified as Phædra, the lustrous or brilliant, for the great majority of nations have thought of the sun as masculine and the moon as feminine, and only a few, among which are the Germans and the Hottentots, have reversed these genders. It is well known that on every succeeding day the crescent moon is retarded by a considerable span behind the sun as it hastens on its western course. After twelve days at most, the sun is just sinking as the full moon rises on the opposite side of the horizon. Thus the waxing moon apparently pursues the sun, but is unable to catch up the quicker traveller. But, according to the growing myth, Hippolytus is flying from Phædra. Now, when a generation grew up which applied other adjectives to the sun and moon, and who had forgotten the original signification of Hippolytus and Phædra, although a proverb was perhaps still preserved concerning Hippolytus flying before the pursuit of Phædra, the question might well arise, why should Hippolytus fly from Phædra

⁵¹ Ueber den Ursprung der Sprache.

if, as her name suggests, she shines in all the beauty of her sex? In this stage of the conception, as Delbrück adds, the legend was completed by the notion that perhaps Phædra was the step-mother of Hippolytus. When the myth had once acquired this form, it was woven into the story of the house of Theseus, forming an admirable subject for a tragedy. Euripides, Racine, and his translator, Schiller, would probably have been surprised had it been shown them that their heroes were the sun and moon. Perhaps it may be said that it was unnecessary to suppose fear of incest as a motive for the flight of Hippolytus from Phædra: it would have been more natural to suppose that he already loved some other maiden; hence it is very remarkable that other nations give exactly the same interpretations to these natural phenomena. The Khasia in North-western India relate that at every fresh change the moon is inflamed with love for his stepmother the sun, who throws ashes in his face as a mark of abhorrence, and that for this reason the moon's disc is spotted.⁵² The Eskimo say that the sun, which they regard as feminine, smears the face of her brother, the moon, with soot when he presses his love upon her. The inhabitants of the Isthmus of Darien also maintain that the so-called "man in the moon" was guilty of incest with his sister.⁵³

The action of myth-making must in the course of time, especially while writing was not in use, have entirely obscured the original meaning of any form of nature worship, so that it was at last necessary to deify the same power under another name, only to reinvest it with an anthropomorphous shape. This is probably the reason that among Aryan nations so many deities play the same part, and that the functions of the atmosphere in particular are represented under so many forms. But every system of gods indicates a craving for a Supreme Being to whom all other powers must sooner or later be subordinate. For instance, it is impossible that a people undergoing intellectual development should persevere in worshipping the sun, for soon or later there must arise the doubt which was expressed by the Inca Huayna Capac

⁵² Hooker, *Himalayan Journals*, vol. ii. p. 276.

⁵³ David Cranz, *Historie von Grönland*. Petrus Martyr, *De orbe novo*.

(+ 1525 A.D.),⁵⁴ namely, that the day-star cannot possibly be the creator of all things, for the progress of life proceeds without interruption during the night. This case again corroborates our proposition that all religious emotions proceed only from the desire for acquaintance with the Creator, and that the worship of a deity is extinguished the instant that it ceases to satisfy the requirement of causality. The divinity of the sun was not so long or so successfully tenable as that of the changeless, self-moving heavens, which were always regarded as masculine in contrast to the feminine fertile earth. The heavens and the earth were worshipped by the Hurons, and are still worshipped by the Chinese. Sky worship occurs also among the negroes of the west coast of Africa.⁵⁵ The Latins employed the same word for God and the heavens;⁵⁶ and that the heavens and the Supreme Deity were one, in ancient times, amongst the Germans also, may be inferred from the pagan idioms, "Heaven help you!" or "Heaven preserve this child."⁵⁷ Even in ancient Mexico we perceive that a multiplicity of gods makes a classification according to rank necessary, and that this involuntarily tends towards a monotheistic conception. In the celebrated admonitions of an Aztec mother to her daughter, reference is made to a single God, "who sees every secret fault."⁵⁸ Sahagun, who preserved this remarkable contribution to moral history, has indeed been accused of colouring ancient Mexican paganism with Christian views; but Waitz has justly defended the trustworthiness of his account, saying that Spanish priests were more disposed to give adverse representations of the pre-Christian state of the Americans as the work of the devil than to say too much in their favour.

If the value of religion be estimated solely by its effects as a means of education, the worship of the forces of nature is capable of raising human society to high grades. Among nations of austere morals we also find austere deities and the conception of a just regulation of the world, whereas, in the other case, liber-

⁵⁴ A. von Humboldt, *Ansichten der Natur*.

⁵⁵ Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 321.

⁵⁶ *Sub divo* or *sub dio* was equivalent to "under the open skies."

⁵⁷ "Der Himmel behüte dich" and "der Himmel erhalte dir dieses Kind."

⁵⁸ Sahagun. See Prescott's *Conquest of Mexico*, vol. iii. p. 424.

tinism and vice are perceptible in the creations of religion, which are invariably related to the moral level of the social condition, as are the dark lines in a spectroscopic image to the source of light. The Polynesian Tongans, or Friendly Islanders, firmly believe that their gods approve of a life of virtue and resent vice, so that the guardian spirits watch over men only so long as they behave honourably, and at once abandon the reprobate.⁵⁹ But worship of the forces of nature is of little permanent service in the social education of nations. When the object contemplated as divine has once been invested in the imagination with human traits, the representative arts are nearly always employed at the very first fabrication of the myths; and however the sculptor or painter may exalt the human form in his representation of the deity, in the eyes of the multitude, eager for objects of veneration, the material image immediately becomes an idol performing miracles, and, as a movable chattel, becomes the property of a community, and, by the folly of the majority, ultimately sinks into a fetish.

Religious veneration takes another direction when it involves belief in a future life. This belief has been found almost without exception among the aborigines of America as well as among the Polynesians, Papuans, and Australians, among the greater number of Asiatics, among the ancient inhabitants of Europe, and all the Hamites of Northern Africa from the Nile to the Canaries. When direct evidence is wanting, belief in immortality may be inferred from the mode of burying the dead. If we had no better information as to the notions of the Egyptians respecting a future life, we could still clearly recognize their expectations in the circumstance that they provided their mummies with wheat in order to supply them with seed-corn after the resurrection. In the same way the ancient Babylonians evinced a hope of another world by placing date stones in their tombs;⁶⁰ the same remark applies to the people dwelling on the shores of the Caribbean Sea, who place maize seeds in the hands of their dead. The sacrifice of human beings at the graves of chiefs or kings, such as that prescribed by

⁵⁹ Mariner, *Tonga Islands*.

⁶⁰ Rawlinson, *The Five Great Monarchies*.

the Adah, or "great custom," testifies a belief in immortality in Dahomey, and the strangling of the wives at the death of a prince affords like evidence of a similar belief in the Fiji Islands. Again, if we knew no further details as to the opinions of the intellectually gifted Hottentots, formerly so greatly underrated,⁶¹ it would be enough that, previous to burial, they place the body of the deceased in the same position which it once occupied as an embryo in the mother's womb. The meaning of this significant custom is that the dead will mature in the darkness of the earth in preparation for a new birth. As uncivilized nations, as we have seen, regard all objects as animated, they do not restrict the future life to human beings. The Itelmes of Kamtshatka believed in a renewal of all creatures, "down to the smallest fly." The Jesuits Acosta, Lafitau, and Charlevoix assert that the Inca-Peruvians,⁶² the Iroquois, and other North Americans imagined, exactly after the fashion of the Platonic visions, the existence in the invisible world of a sort of prototype or essence for every living being.⁶³ The Fijians go still further, for they not only believe in a paradise for men and animals, but they hope that every cocoa-nut will there be made anew.

It is only among negroes that a denial of immortality has yet been found. "Can a dead man come out of his grave unless he is dug up?" said the chief Commoro in the Latuka country to the east of the White Nile, when Sir Samuel Baker in vain attempted by cross questions to force him to acknowledge his belief in a future. The first idea of immortality has probably been always evoked by the apparitions of dreams. As long as a negro dreams of a dead person, fear is inspired by his memory; the spirit which has apparently come back demands food, and holds out threats of misfortunes to those still on earth, but the memory of a grandfather has long been extinguished and excites no further uneasiness. If, in Equatorial Africa, says Du Chaillu, inquiries are made after a person long since deceased,

⁶¹ Kolbe, *Vorgebirge der guten Hoffnung*.

⁶² Clements Markham, *Journal of the Royal Geographical Society*, vol. xli.

⁶³ Lafitau, *Mœurs des sauvages*, p. 360. Charlevoix, *Nouvelle France*. Also Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. ii. p. 245.

the answer is that it is all over with him.⁶⁴ One of the current sayings then is, that at death all is past. It is possible that in the last case the witness quoted had not succeeded in gaining the confidence of the negro. Sproat, an excellent ethnologist, who had nearly fallen into errors such as we suspect in the case of Du Chaillu, very strikingly observes: "A traveller must have lived among savages for years as one of themselves before his opinion of their intellectual condition is of any value."⁶⁵ In Central and Southern Africa especially the idea of immortality is the source of great uneasiness. The negroes of the Gold Coast sacrifice slaves at a burial that they may serve the deceased in the other world.⁶⁶ In the Congo land Winwood Reade⁶⁷ assures us that a son killed his mother merely because he expected that as a glorified spirit she would render him more powerful assistance. Wherever the Bantu languages are spoken, that is to say, throughout Southern Africa, the souls of deceased parents are invoked for aid.⁶⁸ Rebmann has noted down a prayer of this sort from the lips of a negro in the Tshagga country on the East Coast; and another of the Kaffirs in Natal to a deceased chief runs literally: "O Mossé, son of Motlanka, look upon us! Thou, whose breath (fumée?) is seen by every one, turn thine eyes upon us this day and shield us. Thou our god!"⁶⁹ The Bushmen also prayed in Livingstone's presence at the grave of an ancestor.⁷⁰ As divine descent is attributed to the chiefs in Polynesia, it is not surprising that sanctuaries are erected to them after their death, as Mariner frequently relates of the Tongans. It is due to Polynesian influences that at Tanna, an island of the New Hebrides, the deceased chiefs are thanked for the blessings of the harvest.⁷¹

Permanent worship of the dead has been very appropriately

⁶⁴ Explorations and Adventures in Equatorial Africa.

⁶⁵ Anthropological Review, vol. vi. 1868.

⁶⁶ Bosman, Guineese Goud-Tand-en Slavekust; and Tylor, Primitive Culture, vol. ii. p. 116.

⁶⁷ Savage Africa.

⁶⁸ Krapf, Reisen in Ostafrika.

⁶⁹ Casalis, Les Basoutos.

⁷⁰ South Africa.

⁷¹ Turner, quoted by Tylor, Primitive Culture, vol. ii. p. 114.

described as ancestor worship. Thus the Caribs of the West India Islands saw their immortal heroes in the constellations. Worship of the dead has been developed with peculiar strength among the Chinese, who built special temples for the deceased emperors. When their moral philosopher, Confucius, was canonized, he received the first sacrifice from the hand of an emperor in 194 B.C., and in A.D. 57 festivals were established, and sanctuaries erected in his honour. Hero worship is also apt to be extended to founders of religions, and thus Buddhism has been gradually alienated from its original purity and has degenerated into relic worship.⁷² Even Napoleon III. who, like the old kings of France, was so eager to play the part of the eldest son of the Church, paid homage to ancestor worship, if the recently published will of April 14th, 1875, is genuine. "We must remember," writes the Emperor, "that those we love look down upon us from heaven and protect us. It is the soul of my great uncle which has always guided and supported me. Thus will it be with my son also if he proves worthy of his name."⁷³

To the question, whether in any part of the world a nation has ever been found utterly destitute of religious emotions and ideas, we will venture to give a decided negative. In every stage of his mental development man feels a craving to discover an agency for every phenomenon, and an author for every event. As long as the powers of the understanding are small a fetish satisfies the demand for causality, but as the intellectual sagacity of nations increases, the powers of credence are diminished, and the conception of God acquires dignity, until it finally becomes the noblest and highest product of the human mind. Similarly, while the intellectual faculties are advancing, the first crude attempts to discover the unknown Creator constantly tend to the rejection of the first solutions, and ultimately to the hypothesis of a supreme incomprehensible Being. Yet history and ethnology tell of innumerable races of men who never raised themselves to such a height, and even of many who fell back from the nobler notions which they had acquired into gross errors of the understanding,

⁷² *Justi in the Ausland.* 1871.

⁷³ *Alleg. Zeitung.* 1873.

which they have been unable to shake off for hundreds, nay, for thousands of years. These superstitions we shall speak of as Shamanism, and we will attempt to examine their origin.

X.—SHAMANISM.

WHEN in future we speak of Shamanism, this word must be understood in a comprehensive sense to include magic and ritualism of every description. The name itself originated from a corruption of Cramana, as the Buddhist anchorites and penitents are called in India. The term Shaman, however, has been hitherto applied only to the magicians of Northern Asiatic races. Their functions consist chiefly in working cures by magic, for among all barbarous nations, in present and past times, sickness and death are ascribed to witchcraft,¹ which the Shaman has to counteract by his secret remedies.

In Siberia and both continents of America the magician usually sucks the part of the body which is paining the invalid, and then produces from his mouth a thorn, a beetle, a stone, or some other unexpected object, which he shows to the anxious bystanders as the cause of the evil which he has detected and conquered by his intervention. The Shamans among the Dyaks of Borneo² and those in South America on the Orinoco,³ operate in the same way. A priestess of the Fingo Kaffirs—for there are female operators also—who had pretended to extract a number of magic seeds from the body of the patient, was unmasked by the wife of a missionary. Previous to the operation she had swallowed some tobacco leaves as an emetic.⁴

Another branch of the business of a Shaman depends on their power of communicating with the invisible powers, occasionally

¹ This is the case among the Australians (Latham, *Varieties*), the Kutshin or Loucheux Indians of Hudson's Bay territory (Ausland, 1863), and the Hottentots (Kolbe, *Cap der guten Hoffnung*).

² Spenser St. John, *Life in the Far East*, vol. i.

³ P. Jos. Gumilla, *El Orinoco ilustrado*.

⁴ Tylor, *Early History of Mankind*, p. 355.

with departed spirits, and receiving from them revelations as to the future. On these occasions the performer is able to put himself into a state of nervous excitement, in which his mouth foams and his limbs are convulsed.⁵ Hence Shamans in all parts of the world like to select, as their pupils, boys of epileptic tendencies.⁶ Dwarfs or albinos are preferred by the negroes.⁷

The proceedings of the Siberian priests and of the so-called medicine-men of the North American Indians are so similar, that the similarity constitutes one of the evidences in favour of the hypothesis that the New World was peopled by races once belonging to Northern Asia. The sole difference between the Siberian Shaman and the North American medicine-man⁸ is, that in his operations the former uses a magic drum, the latter a magic rattle; both wear fantastically decorated cloaks. The North American medicine-man reappears in South America under the names of Piaye, Piaï, or Paye, and he also carries a magic rattle (maracca) formed of a hollow gourd filled with hard seeds.⁹ Lastly, separated from their fellow-craftsmen by the entire breadth of the Atlantic, there are the Mganga in South Africa, who carry neither drum nor rattle, but a magic horn, and who devote themselves to the work of calling down the much-desired rain on those dry countries.¹⁰

As illness is ascribed to the influence of a magician, death also, even when caused by the debility of old age, is believed to be due to the operations of evil powers. Hence, in every part of

⁵ See an example among the Kares in Burmah, in A. Bastian's *Völker des östlichen Asien*, and with regard to the Kaffirs, comp. Fritsch, *Eingeborne Südafrika's*.

⁶ It is so among the Tatars on the Southern Yennessei (*Globus*). Other examples in F. Schultze, *Der Fetischismus*.

⁷ Winwood Reade, *Savage Africa*, p. 363.

⁸ Catlin, *North American Indians*.

⁹ P. Gumilla, *El Orinoco ilustrado*; Dobrizhoffer, *Geschichte der Abiponer*; Appun in the *Ausland*, No. 29. 1872.

¹⁰ Among the Natchez of Louisiana, in America, the Shamans busy themselves with conjuring the weather. Charlevoix, *Nouvelle France*. It has been suggested that the word *maracá* is derived from the Spanish *matraca*; but, independently of the difference of accentuation, the word *maracá* exists in the Tupi language. See *Lexicon in Martius' Ethnographie*, vol. i. p. 513.

the world in which Shamanism has carried on its malpractices, there is the strange delusion that man might indefinitely prolong the duration of his bodily existence, were it not curtailed by the malice of a wizard. This superstition is prevalent not only among races such as the Australian,¹¹ though this has been unjustly ranked too low; but even the Abipones assured the Jesuit Dobrizhoffer,¹² that deaths would cease if the magicians would renounce their deplorable arts. The Patagonian Casimiro confessed to Lieutenant Musters¹³ that, after the death of his mother, he had caused a woman to be murdered to whose bad influence he did not hesitate to attribute this calamity. Let us now pass far away from the Patagonians to the island of Tanna, one of the New Hebrides in the South Seas, peopled by Papuans, a race of men having nothing in common either physically or in language with Northern Asiatics, Americans, or South Africans. Here, again, Shamans are to be found. They, too, make it their business to procure rain, and are believed to be the creators of flies and mosquitoes. Their special interest for us, however, is their power of inflicting diseases and death whenever they can procure a Nahak from any individual. This word properly signifies refuse, but is more specially applied to neglected remnants of food; these ought not to be thrown away but carefully and secretly burnt or buried. If a Papuan magician finds a banana rind which has been thrown aside, he rolls it up in bark with a leaf, and when night falls he sits down by a fire and slowly burns the Nahak. If the whole is transformed into ashes, the spell has taken effect, and the person to whom the refuse belonged will certainly die. But news of the nocturnal deed spreads immediately and rapidly. Hence, if there is any one in the neighbourhood whose conscience accuses him of neglecting the remains of his food, or who is already prostrate with illness, he gets his friends to blow a blast on the shell trumpet as a sign that the Shaman is to cease his work of destruction. The next morning money is offered for the restitution of the Nahak. The missionary Turner¹⁴ relates that

¹¹ Eyre, *Central Australia*, vol. ii. 1845.

¹² Dobrizhoffer, *Geschichte der Abiponer*.

¹³ *Unter den Patagoniern*.

¹⁴ *Nineteen Years in Polynesia*.

he was deprived of many a night's rest by the unearthly sounds of the shell trumpet, for several of these plaintive signals were sometimes audible in different directions. It is unquestionable that the Papuan Shamans seriously believe in their own arts, for whenever one of the craft is overtaken by illness or the fear of death he also sends out a shell trumpet. It is only against the illnesses introduced into the island by Europeans that the natives confess that all counter charms have proved "ineffectual. The Nahak ceremony reappears with little variation on the Marquesas island of Nukahiva,¹⁵ which is inhabited by pure-bred Polynesians; it exists also in the Fiji Islands under the name of an "act with leaves,"¹⁶ and even in Australia the death of a sick person is considered certain if a malevolent Shaman has burnt the Pringurru, a sacred piece of bone which is also used for letting blood.¹⁷

Passing round almost a third part of the world, from Australia to South Africa, we find that the Kaffir princes, before they go out to war, raise the courage of their followers by displaying a fragment of clothing, the shaft of a spear, a snuff-box, or any other property of their opponents which they have been able to procure. The court Shaman has a magic liquid ready prepared, in which in the presence of the assembled community he steeps and dissolves some portion of the captured treasure. The chief has only to swallow this draught to possess irresistible power over his antagonist. This explains the fact that a Kaffir king, whenever he moves to a new hut, has the old one carefully swept out, and that, as Theophilus Hahn relates, an entire kraal (village) has been burnt down, only to prevent the enemy from obtaining any household implement by means of which to exercise a spell.¹⁸

Let us dwell a little longer on the unquestionably strange uniformity of such superstitions. We might perhaps account for it by supposing that Papuan and Kaffir races once inhabited a common home, and then separated by a series of migrations. But this would imply periods which must be reckoned by thousands of years, for the differences between these races are very great, and

¹⁵ Langsdorff, *Reise um die Welt*.

¹⁶ According to Williams in the *Ausland*. 1858.

¹⁷ Eyre, *Central Australia*.

¹⁸ Theophilus Hahn in the *Globus*. 1871.

such alterations take place as slowly as geological processes. Nor must we satisfy ourselves by fancying that these superstitions are only due to the yet inexperienced intellects of so-called savages. It is but lately that the superstition flourished among ourselves that the parings of nails, and hair which has been cut off, ought to be carefully destroyed. An Italian scholar, Caroline Coronedi,* has lately stated that even now, at Bologna, combed-out hairs are carefully burnt, as they are particularly liable to be employed in the arts of witchcraft.¹⁹ Tylor even gives full credit to the report that a witch was burnt in 1860 at Camargo, in Mexico.²⁰ The similarity of these superstitions almost forces us against our will to believe that the intellectual powers of man are a mechanism, which, under the influence of like excitations, necessarily performs the same acts.

Of all nations the South African Bantus suffer most from this mental malady of Shamanism. Whenever a death occurs, inquiries are made of the Mganga, or local Shaman, as to its author. He has the credit of possessing superior knowledge. To Shamanism must also be referred all interpretation of signs, the institution of oracles, and also the spirit-rapping of modern days. When the seer indicates a suspected person, a trial by ordeal takes place. Here we at once encounter a new form of necromancy, for faith in decision by ordeal is based on the illusion that there is an invisible regulating power which, when properly interrogated, cannot fail to declare infallible verdicts. Trial by ordeal is still habitual among the Dravida races in India,²¹ and among Brahminical Hindoos, and in Southern Arabia it was maintained among our own ancestors long after the Christian era.²² In the persecution of witches, the water ordeal was still in use until the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. Jacob Grimm thought that the last traces of the superstition occur in the modern duel.²³ The Papuans of New Guinea also hold it possible to ascertain the guilt or innocence of an accused person by the process of immersion,²⁴ and a similar

¹⁹ Ida von Düringsfeld in the *Ausland*. 1872.

²⁰ Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 138.

²¹ Jellinghaus in the *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*, vol. iii. 1871.

²² Maltzan in the *Globus*, vol. xxi. 1872.

²³ *Deutsche Rechtsalterthümer*.

²⁴ Otto Finsch, *Neu-Guinea*.

method is employed by the negroes of the Gold Coast.²⁵ Otherwise in South Africa (where it extends from the Atlantic tribes to the Masai), trial by ordeal generally takes the form of swallowing a goblet full of Mbundu juice. If the poisonous beverage does not at once act as an emetic, the guilt of the accused is proved.

* When the small-pox broke out on the Rembo in Mayolo (2° south lat., 11° east long.) in 1865, Du Chaillu saw victims of this Shamanistic deception perish by the side of the victims of the pestilence.²⁶

The judicial trials, accompanied by the torture of the accused, of the Amaxosa Kaffirs,²⁷ have been strikingly described by Maclean. Belief in the efficacy of the black art is all the more difficult to eradicate, owing to the fact that the accused sometimes confesses that he has worked charms. It is beyond question that such attempts at magic actually take place, for Martius²⁸ the traveller caught a revengeful slave in a Brazilian hut in the act of performing her nocturnal incantations. It is difficult to see how this vicious practice is to be done away, for although the miracles of the Shamans frequently fail, this, in the eyes of the prejudiced, affords no proof of the nullity of the means employed, but merely that the medicines or incantations were too weak to counteract the evil work of some distant Shaman. All observers of foreign races of mankind unanimously assure us that the wizards themselves are among the deceived, and firmly believe in their own arts.²⁹ The Siberian Shamans, the North American medicine-men, the Brazilian Piaï, the South African Mganga, the Australian and Papuan magicians, live apart from their tribes, educate their disciples by fasts and self-mortifications, and only thus reveal to them the treasures of their occult knowledge.

The ultimate idea of Shamanism, which, under all its numerous names and guises, is always fundamentally the same, is based on the superstition that man is able to communicate with the invisible

²⁵ Bosman, *Guineese Goud-Kust*.

²⁶ Du Chaillu, *Ashango Land*, p. 175.

²⁷ *Kaffir Laws and Customs*. Mount Coke, 1858.

²⁸ *Ethnographie*, vol. i.

²⁹ So says Dobrizhoffer of the Abipones (*Geschichte der Abiponer*), and Mariner (Tonga Islands), of the Polynesian inhabitants of the Friendly group.

powers, and to force them to obedience. In either case symbolical practices and incantations are employed, and these have preserved their efficiency because human reason is so weak that one affirmative instance, irradicably impressed upon the memory, completely outweighs nine negative instances, which are speedily forgotten.

In its highest refinements this self-deception is able to insinuate itself into the purest minds. It attaches itself to symbolism and ritualism, and is in operation wherever a definite but not necessarily inevitable effect is expected from a symbolical act. When pious people in Protestant countries wish to obtain a revelation to guide them in the difficulties of life, they open a psalm book, expecting a divine answer in the first psalm or verse on which their eye may fall. They thus unconsciously make a covenant with the God within them that, when interrogated in this manner and with full faith, he is bound to bestow an answer.

Nothing is more capable of Shamanistic abuse than prayer, for it becomes a magic spell the instant that the words of the supplicant are supposed to have any sort of influence on the divine will. That such errors have taken root in some places is easily seen in the fact that repetitions of prayers are employed in an extreme degree ; and the Buddhists are so deeply sunk in this self-deception that they have invented prayer machines, which are revolving cylinders, on which is rolled a paper with the prayers inscribed upon it. The intention is to outwit the Deity by this apparatus at each revolution of the cylinder, for he is supposed to accept the prayers as though spoken. Ingenious Mongols have even set such prayer-rolls in motion by wind and water-wheels, and thus endeavoured to gain the rewards of piety.

Sacrifice tends to lead men into yet greater error. The purest motives, an overflow of gratitude, the avowal of a fault and the desire for its expiation may lead the believer to the altar. Imperceptibly, and almost inevitably, another aspect of sacrifice introduces itself behind this purer view. The Deity is then regarded as the recipient, and the donor expects a return for his benefits.³⁰

³⁰ Tylor (*Primitive Culture*, vol. ii. p. 400) justly calls to mind that in English, and, we may add, in German, sacrifice signifies a self-inflicted loss.

Thus the Homeric heroes, invoking the aid of their invisible protectors, reminded them of the many libations which they had offered up to them.³¹ But the superstition is most evil in its effects when symbolism is associated with the sacrifice. Nowhere has self-deception of this sort obtained such complete mastery over intelligent and even sagacious thinkers as in India; for the Brahmins are the chief of all Shamans—systematically educated, refined by depth of thought, and supported by the practice of a thousand years. Their most powerful charm is the juice of the Soma plant (*Sarcostemma viminalis*) with which they reinforce their sacrifices. Like the Mganga, or South African rain-makers, they summon the desired wet weather; for only when invigorated by their sacred rites is the thunder-god Indra able to open the clouds and extract from them the fertilizing shower. A creative power is attributed to the sacrifice, for Brahma is supposed to be omnipresent in all offerings.³² According to their doctrine, penances, if prolonged for an unlimited period, as were those of Vishvâmitra, at last confer such mighty power on the sufferer that the epic gods fear lest he may destroy both heaven and earth. But as, according to the Shamanistic hypothesis, by means of prayers and hymns, and above all by sacrifice, accompanied by effectual symbolical acts, the gods may be forced to perform the desired services, the logical conclusion is that penances, prayers, and sacrifices are stronger than the gods. Thus the Indians obtained the conception of Brahma, a spiritual power existing in the ritualistic mysteries and predominating over the gods. The Brahmins themselves, as the initiated to whom alone were known the occult meaning and the efficacy of the practices and sayings, were ultimately obliged to lay claim to superhuman qualities, and exalt themselves into incarnate deities. According to their doctrine, all success depended on the proper performance of sacrifice. To this act they owed their rank and prosperity. The sacrifices themselves, simple at first, became more and more complicated. Before long they required more than one day, then weeks, months, and years, and at the same time,* by constant quadrupling, the number of officiating priests rose to sixty-four, according to Martin Haug, who

³¹ Iliad, i. 37-42.

³² Martin Haug, Alleg. Zeitung. 1873.

was the first European to penetrate the deepest secrets of the Brahmins.³³

If the essence of Shamanism consists in the performance of some form of sorcery which rules the powers held to be divine, and extorts from them the fulfilment of a desire, or the disclosure of future events, it is obviously indifferent whether the method employed consists in shaking a rattle, in sacrifice, prayers, fastings, penances, or in the interrogation of the entrails of animals or the flight of birds. All nations have succumbed to this illusion; few have entirely shaken it off. It survives in full strength in America, in Siberia, in Buddhist Asia, in Brahminical India, under the various forms of the Amulet of the Mahommedans, the trial by ordeal, the rain-making of the Africans, and the Nahak tricks of the Papuans. We, ourselves, have only lately abolished trials for witchcraft. The great Kepler was obliged to return to his Suabian home in order to rescue his aged mother from death by fire, with which Protestant Shamanists were threatening her. From all this it is manifest that the moral education of mankind by means of religion has nowhere encountered greater dangers than from Shamanistic delusion. When any symbolical act is supposed to possess a supernatural effect, the rite is placed, like Brahma, higher than the deities.

XI.—THE DOCTRINE OF BUDDHA.

THE Aryans spread themselves over the Punjaub and the plain of the Ganges at the expense of a barbarian aboriginal population, which they excelled in mental endowments and physical beauty. The possession of these advantages characteristic of the race, led to the prohibition by Manu's legislation of mixed marriages, and to the most uncharitable regulations of caste. The priests, as the initiated, had, as we have seen, exalted the knowledge of the Shamanistic practices, of prayers and sacrifices, into a power superior to the old gods, who were reduced to the subordinate.

³³ Martin Haug, *Brahme und die Brahmanen*.

office of guardians of the world. Brahma, in its oldest historical sense, means prayer,¹ and the Brahmins were originally called the people who pray. Brahma subsequently appeared, in an anthropomorphic aspect, as the god of prayer, and later still as the creator of the world. The priest had now the task of distorting the doctrines of the Vedas by skilful interpretation into conformity with the tenet of the transmigration of souls, taught by religious philosophy in the Brahminical books of ritual.²

Brahma, or the universal soul, was proclaimed to be the only real existence, while the world perceptible to the senses was an illusion, the work of Maja, or deception, and unsubstantial as the image of the moon reflected by calm waters. To see through this illusion, to proclaim that the world is nothing, to hail Brahma as the only existence, as Thou, to acknowledge Self as one with him, implied the liberation of the Ego from the illusions of the world of the senses, and reabsorption into Brahma. Like this doctrine of the Vedântâ, the Sâmkhja philosophy looked for the release of the human soul from its incarceration in the body, and regarded all objects of perception as illusions, but it expected liberation not by absorption into the Deity, but by a withdrawal of the soul into itself, and an alienation from the world of matter. The great maxim of the Vedântâ was, I am the The, I am Brahma; the Sâmkhja school, on the contrary, said, I am not the The (Nature).³

The people of India held, and still hold, to the conception of the indestructibility of the soul. A tendency to melancholy and weariness of life has existed in them from the earliest times. A never-ending series of transmigrations of the soul threatened them at every step. There are very few among ourselves sufficiently happy to care to begin their own lives anew with their disillusion and hours of dejection. In the words of the apostle, the creature groaneth for deliverance. The Hindoo was tortured and oppressed by the idea of a perpetual and unavoidable renewal of his present existence; the eternally revolving wheel could never

¹ J. Muir, Sanscrit Texts. London, 1872.

² Duncker, Geschichte des Alterthums.

³ Köppen, Die Religion des Buddha. Berlin, 1857.

stop, and with his imagination disturbed by weird, numerical expressions, he looked out into an eternity, the horizon of which receded with each step which he himself took. Even the highest castes yearned for deliverance of the soul, but to the oppressed eternal existence seemed eternal torture.

According to the traditions handed down, Siddhârtha, the son of Cuddhâdana, king of Kapilavastu, of the tribe of Gautama and the house of Sâkja,⁴ appeared in the sixth century B.C., bringing a hope of salvation to the Indian people.⁴ The sight of bodily evils, of sickness, age, and death, caused him to meditate how man could escape the misery of earthly existence. The doctrines of the Brahminical school did not satisfy him. He recognized the powerlessness of prayer, sacrifice, and penance. Even this destruction of Shamanistic errors would give him a high rank among the founders of religion. But it was not only to the initiated and as a mystery that he declared his doctrine, but, in complete contrast to the Brahminical system, he preached publicly and in the language of the people:⁵ it was not to select castes, but to mankind in general that he addressed himself. Buddhism was at no time restricted to one nation, but has remained open to the whole world to the present day. Sâkjamuni, which was the nickname given to the founder of a new religion, proclaimed, on the contrary, that his doctrine was a law of grace for all.⁶ The beautiful legend of his favourite scholar Ananda, closely resembling the story of the woman of Samaria, mentioned in the fourth Gospel, is well known. He asks for a draught from a girl of Chandâlâ, who is drawing water, and when she hesitates, fearing she might contaminate him by her touch, he says, "My sister, I do not ask what is thy caste or thy descent, I beg for water if thou canst give it me."⁷ Another of the stories of Christ was foreshadowed in the legend of the poor man, who filled the alms-box of Buddha with a handful of flowers, though the rich could not accomplish it with ten thousand bushels; and again, by the story of the lamps which kings and chancellors had lighted in

⁴ Chr. Lassen, *Indische Alterthumskunde*.

⁵ Bournouf, *Introduction au Bouddhisme indien*. 1844.

⁶ *Ibid.*

⁷ *Ibid.*

honour of Buddha and which were extinguished, while the one brought by the poor woman burnt alone all through the night.⁸

Buddha's life, as we know it, was somewhat monotonous. By the renunciation of worldly power and the pleasures of the senses, bearing his alms-box in his hand, the Indian prince proved the sincerity of his doctrine of duty. He lived to an advanced age, and saw his ancestral city of Kapilavastu devastated by the enemy of his house. With Ananda he wandered in the starlight among the still smoking ruins, and stepping over the corpses of the slain, and the bodies of mutilated maidens in the streets, administered consolation to the dying. From thence he endeavoured to drag himself also to Kuçinagara, a distance of seventy miles, but, unable to reach the town, sank down under a çala tree not far from it, overcome by violent thirst. The death struggle soon set in, and he expired with the words, "Nothing is durable."⁹

The salvation contemplated by Buddha refers solely to the superstition of the transmigration of souls; salvation can therefore be found in this doctrine only by those who share in this superstition. Transmigration always results from criminality in a previous existence, so that sin is the origin of all earthly misery. By its adhesion to existence and its craving for it at death, the soul is forced into a new sphere. For on the extinction of life nothing remains of the soul but the sum of its good and evil works, and of the latter a new birth is the normal consequence.¹⁰

The Buddhist view of the world, as it was taught by Sâkjamuni himself, or perhaps only by his disciples, seems almost due to mental malady. Life itself appeared as the greatest of burdens, and to escape from its renewal, "to break through the eggshell," to escape the necessity of perpetual transmigrations, seemed salvation in the highest degree. The fundamental idea of Buddhism was comprised in the so-called four truths: that our misery is derived from existence; that this misery arises only from

⁸ Köppen, *Die Religion des Buddha*.

⁹ O. Palladius, *Das Leben Buddha's*. Arbeiten der russ Gesandtschaft zu Peking. Berlin, 1858.

¹⁰ Köppen, *Die Religion des Buddha*.

continued connection with the world of the senses ; that by shaking off this connection release from existence is obtained ; and, lastly, that there is a way to such a release. This way to the heights of Buddhism requires self-denial and unresisting absorption in one's self. The last and highest state which the righteous can attain is called Nirvâna, though it has always been disputed whether Nirvâna can be called a state. Buddha himself reached the Nirvâna by degrees. First, he experienced the sensation of liberation from sin, next, he destroyed the satisfaction of this feeling by a longing for the highest goal, then this longing was also reduced to complete indifference, with which however was mingled a satisfaction with the indifference itself. But this satisfaction was to disappear likewise, and happiness, pain, and memory were to be lost in infinite space or nothingness ; but in nothingness he still preserved the consciousness of nothingness ; finally, this also was extinguished in complete repose, undisturbed either by nothingness or by anything other than nothingness. The Nirvâna, or highest goal of Buddhism, as to the meaning of which the various sects are not agreed, was therefore originally and literally an extinction, a total annihilation which precluded any new birth. Hence the northern or neo-Buddhists went so far as to consider thought itself the root of ignorance, the admission of an idea as an obscuration of the intellect, and they looked for liberation from ignorance in the absence of thought.¹¹

The moral doctrine of Buddha was thoroughly pure and chaste, in many ways harmonizing with the Christian system. First stands the prohibition against killing any living thing. This led to the abolition of capital punishment in India, at least, at the period at which Buddhism held the reins of government, but at the same time it prevented the extermination of predatory and parasitic animals. Respect for property, conjugal fidelity, truthfulness, avoidance of calumny, insult, or contempt, resistance of all covetous and envious emotions, of anger and vengeance, are enjoined on all believers. As in Christianity, the highest duty of the Buddhist is love to one's neighbours, but this term extends to all creatures, so that the erection and maintenance of refuges

¹¹ Fr. Spiegel on Wassiljew's Researches. Ausland, 1860.

and hospitals for animals are regarded as good works, equal to the institution of almshouses for needy men. Self-conquest, says an old proverb, is the best of all conquests.¹² Mankind is to be trained to gentleness, mercy, and consideration, and Buddhism itself set a good example of religious toleration, and by scarcely ever disgracing itself by the persecution of those who held different opinions.¹³ The humility which was also to distinguish the priests was in contrast to the arrogance of the Brahmins. It is therefore hard to over-estimate the favourable effects of Buddhism in the softening of manners. The religion has been extolled for having educated mankind without having recourse to the conception of a deity, without prayer, without bribes or threats of another world, and yet in spite of this gained four hundred millions of votaries. The Buddhists had apparently shaken off the gods, or rather the gods were degraded into the willing auxiliaries of Buddha, at whose wish, even if unexpressed, they were supposed eagerly to assemble. But as their Shamanistic knowledge of wisdom, prayers, and the power of rites and penances, placed the Brahmins above the gods, so Buddha, by his virtuous life and by the strength of his devotion, acquired a nature far above that of the Vedic gods : he worked miracles and saw into the past and the future.¹⁴ The distressed may therefore confidently cry to him ; he will listen to the mariner and rescue him from the storm.¹⁵ Buddhism, in the form it necessarily assumed before it was accepted by four hundred millions, is not recognized by ethnology as an ethical atheism, but merely as ancestor or hero worship. Soon after the death of the founder, and not without the instigation of his disciples, began a relic worship, which may be described as a reversion to fetishism. The ashes of the deceased were distributed between eight cities, and over these relics arose sanctuaries to which pilgrimages were made.¹⁶ As Buddha, before

¹² Köppen, *Religion des Buddha*.

¹³ Comp. the rock inscriptions of King Açoka with regard to tolerance. Max Müller, *Essays*. Leipzig, 1869.

¹⁴ Bournouf, *Introduction*.

¹⁵ *Ibid*.

¹⁶ Stanislas Julien, *Histoire de la vie de Hiouen-thsang*. Paris, 1853. Lassen in *d. Alterthümer*.

his glorification, had passed through previous careers, not only as man, but also in various animal forms, in many temples even hairs, feathers, or bones were worshipped as having been derived from the animal bodies which he had formerly abandoned.¹⁷ Not only the founder himself, but a host of sanctified Bodhisattvās received homage, so that we see the highly revered Chinese pilgrim Hiouen-thsang visiting the images of these patron saints, and in devout rapture imploring oracular signs in answer to his questions asked with due rites.¹⁸ Prayer, that is to say, Shamanistic invocation, was certainly alien to the mind of Sákjamuni or Gautama, but it was in the midst of his four hundred million votaries that rosaries and prayer cylinders were invented. It sounds strange that enthusiastic admirers extol Buddhism because it holds out neither bribes nor threats. In the eyes of Buddhism this world is itself a purgatory, a wheel that has revolved from eternity; and birth into the blissful regions of the gods or into the horrors of hell, the unclean body of the animal, or, lastly, into lower or higher castes, enticed or terrified the righteous or the sinner. The Buddhist doctrine has not disdained using the fear of an infallible retribution as a means of discipline.

Nor has Buddhism done anything to cure the natives of India of the superstition of the transmigration of souls; on the contrary, it maintained this dogma, and has even infected other nations with it as with a disease. It did not upset the distinctions of caste, but allowed them a social existence, although it showed a preference for the oppressed and despised in its promises of a speedy deliverance. Its boasted tolerance towards other religions is moreover of doubtful value, for it did nothing to raise alien notions of the Deity from their debased condition. Buddhism retained the Vedist heaven of the gods, and was contented to leave untouched the love of Shamanistic sorcery of the Mongolian tribes. Purer and riper conceptions can only gain the mastery by expelling the less pure and the less ripe. The estimate of the adherents of Gautama's doctrine as four hundred millions, includes the whole Chinese people, who, though worshipping heaven and earth as well

¹⁷ Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. i. p. 408.

¹⁸ Stanislas Julien, *Histoire de la vie de Houen-thsang*. Paris, 1853.

as the dead, yet venerate Confucius as a moral legislator, and have in fact accepted from Buddhism only the figure of Buddha, adding one more false god to other false gods.¹⁹

The Buddhist doctrine was not preached to an elect people but to all mankind, and its history is like that of Christianity among the Jews; for it enjoyed many centuries of undisputed sovereignty, and was then extinguished among the natives of India, or has at least been expelled from the continent, and is now to be found only in Ceylon. In the west, in Kabool, Taberistan and Kurdistan, Buddhism has been driven out by the sword of Islam. At an early period it was divided into a northern and a southern school. Ceylon, Burmah, Siam, and the Malayo-Chinese countries in general, belong to the southern and older school, the writings of which, composed in Pali, were in all probability established at the third Buddhist council in the third century B.C. In Java, where Buddhism had successfully expelled Brahminism, it succumbed to Islam in the fifteenth century. The writings of the northern school which, although in Sanscrit, are more modern, only received their final form at the fourth council, about the time of the birth of Christ. New Buddhism is adopted in Nepal and other Himalayan districts, in Thibet by the Mongolian tribes, and in China and Japan. The first missionary is said to have reached China as early as 217 B.C.; but it was not till A.D. 65 that the emperor Ming-ti established the doctrines of Gautama as an authorized religion.²⁰ The new believers worship a large number of Bodhisattvās, beings who, though only a grade lower than Buddha, and equally able to enter into the Nirvāna, yet through compassion, and to obtain the deliverance of their fellow-men, renounce this privilege in order to assist pious souls who call on them in prayer. Since the time of the Mongol emperors, the head of the church of Thibet, who resides at Lása, is held to be an incarnation of the Bodhisattva Padmapáni. His title, Dalai Lama, or Ocean-Lama,²¹ first originated in the fifteenth century, when the northern church was divided on the question of the

¹⁹ Max Müller, *Essays*.

²⁰ *Ibid.*

²¹ Thibetan *bla-ma*, superior, from *bla*, above. Friedrich Müller, *Reise der Fregatte Novara*; *Anthropologie*.

celibacy of the priesthood. The supreme head of those who permit the marriage of the priests lives at Taschilhúnpo, under the title of Bogda Lama. This Lama is also considered to be the incarnation of a Bodhisattva, namely, of Amitábha, or, in Thibetan, ODPAGMÉD, and he bears the title of Pan-tshen-rin-po-tshe.²² The two heads of the church are now reconciled, and with true Buddhist tolerance each sends his benediction to the other.

XII.—THE DUALISTIC RELIGIONS.

MAN views in its relation to himself every phenomenon which he encounters, and hence regards as animated whatever disturbs his comfort, whether it is heat or cold, drought, hunger, pain, disease, or death. An inexperienced mind can hardly conceive that good and evil proceed from the same hand. In history, as in creation, we see contradictions which are hard to reconcile with the hypothesis of a benevolent and just system of the world. The same God who created the sublime firmament with its glorious luminaries, the beautiful earth, the flower, the dewdrop with its resplendent colours, the innocent eye of the child, filled his own world with fever, with poison, with vermin, with war, with barbarous cruelty in the animal kingdom, in which it commonly happens that one animal is incapable of development without torturing and destroying another, devouring its very intestines. Long and difficult is the progress to the conception of a Leibnitz, that, with all its dark sides, the world perceptible to the senses is not only the best according to human standards, but the best of all possible worlds.¹ Men of undisciplined intellect never attain to the perception that evil is but a limitation of the pleasures of existence, and, insatiable in enjoyment, they ask why the joys of life should be in any way hindered, limited, or ended. Still less do they see that even bodily pain is usually nothing else than an unasked but true warner against dangers, the approach of which threatens our lives or our health.

²² Von Schlagintweit, *Indien und Hochasien*, vol. ii. p. 86.

¹ Tentam Theodic. Pars ii.

Unable to trace comfort and discomfort to a single source, all races of mankind in the earlier phases of intellectual development have employed the expedient of assigning these opposite effects to invisible beings, and have fancied themselves surrounded and watched by a host of mischief-makers as well as by benevolent protectors. As soon as this work of the imagination was accomplished, mankind was able to pass through various phases of improvement. In the first and lowest stage a reconciliation with the invisible tormentor is attempted. In a hymn of the Madagascans, Zamhor and Niang are addressed as creators of the world; and it is added that no prayers are offered to Zamhor, as the good God does not require them.² Among the Africans of Congo³ and the Hottentots⁴ we find worship of the evil combined with the neglect of the good Spirit. The negroes of the Slave Coast say God is so glorious and so great that he does not trouble himself about the base human world.⁵ In America precisely the same ideas prevail among the Patagonians, for they also worship only the malicious Gualitschu.⁶ Dobrizhoffer described the Abipones, who served only the gods of darkness, as worshippers of the devil.⁷ Appun,⁸ who gives the names of the good and bad spirits recognized by the Arowak, Warrau, Arecuna, Macuschi, Carib, and Atorai tribes of Guayana, adds that the Creator himself is deemed such an infinitely exalted being, that he does not concern himself with individuals. Among the Botocudos the sun and moon represent the two natures of the Godhead.⁹ The ancient Egyptians assigned the parts of their dualism to Hesiri (Osiris) and Set; the Chaldeans to the planets, Jupiter and Venus being the propitious, Saturn and Mars the pernicious stars; the vacillating Mercury always adhered to the rulers for the time being of the astrological heavens. The worship of the horrible Siva may also be regarded as an attempt at conciliation,

Roskoff, *Geschichte des Teufels*, vol. i. p. 47.

Winwoode Reade, *Savage Africa*, p. 250.

Kolbe, *Cap der guten Hoffnung*.

Bosman, *Guinese Goud-Kust*. 1704.

Musters, *Among the Patagonians*.

Geschichte der Abiponer.

⁸ Ausland, 1872.

Von Martius, *Ethnographie*, vol. i. p. 327.

and a so-called devil worship has continued to exist in Western Asia among the Yesidi, in the midst of purer religions which have obtained the mastery everywhere else. A great moral improvement must have taken place in man before he offered his homage to the well-disposed divinity, for he is then no longer influenced by fear, but by an impulse of gratitude. To our surprise, it is in this stage that we find the Australians of New South Wales, who offer their sacrifices not to the malignant Potoyan, but to a good power under the name of Koyan.¹⁰ With regard to many Indian tribes in the neighbourhood of the Orinoco, who believed in a bad spirit under various appellations, Father Gumilla¹¹ states positively that that they paid him no honours.

Although races intellectually immature describe the disposition of the invisible powers as good or bad, they do not mean to distinguish between moral and immoral. Good and bad is nothing more than agreeable and disagreeable. The answer of the Bushman is sufficiently well known, who, in reply to the Christian missionary, gave as an instance of a bad action that some one should steal his wife, and, as an instance of a good one, that he should steal some one else's wife.¹² But as a gregarious being, man very soon perceives and understands in lapse of time, with increasing keenness, that social life imposes upon him duties to his neighbour. Even in the lowest stage the infraction of social enactments is looked upon as an offence. But the social laws are only recorded in the customs of the horde, the tribe, or the nation. The employment of the vendetta is certainly a moral action wherever it has not been replaced by better institutions. The Brazilian Tupinamba hope that the virtuous will be gathered to their fathers in the happy gardens of the other world; but by virtue they mean brave defence of the property of the tribe, slaying many foes, and devouring the slain.¹³ Moral commandments only attain their highest perfection when their relation is extended to the whole of mankind, when the rights of man are respected in foreign

¹⁰ Dumont d'Urville, *Voyage de l'Astrolabe*.

¹¹ *El Orinoco ilustrado*.

¹² Waitz, *Anthropologie*, vol. i.

¹³ Lery, quoted by Tylor, vol. ii. p. 86.

nations, and the duties of man are fulfilled towards alien races. Whatever may be his distance from this goal, which though recognized by Christianity is still unreachèd in the Christian world, man is everywhere tempted to value his own pleasure and advantage more highly than the social commandment laid upon him. But in proportion as the moral conceptions amplify the conception of the Deity, so does religion operate as the most powerful lever of improvement: the invisible author of existence appears as the legislator, and as the judge of right and wrong. The Erânians in Persia were the first to connect religion with morality.

Search among their antiquities has invariably indicated that the Persian and Indian Aryans, at a date not yet determined, inhabited a common home, and shared the same religious conceptions. They imagined the invisible world to be filled with beings exercising an influence over the destiny of mankind, and these beings they named Deva and Ahura. Whether a religious division took place in consequence of the separation, or the separation in consequence of a religious division, the Erânians afterwards regarded the Ahura as benevolent, the Deva (in modern Persian, *div*, English, *devil*) as inimical powers. Conversely, among the Indian Aryans the Deva (Latin, *deus*) are considered the beneficent, and the Erânian Ahura evil powers.¹⁴

Among the Erânians there was a consecrated caste, called Soschianto in the oldest sacred writings, in ancient times exactly corresponding to the Indian Atharva, for both consisted of priests of fire.¹⁵ In Media the Magi, whose name first occurs in the inscriptions of Darius, performed the functions of the Soschianto and Atharva.¹⁶ They wore white raiment, refrained from animal food, and worshipped the forces of nature personified, or the highest forms of fetish, the sun (Mithra), the moon, the stars, the earth, running water, and especially fire. Among these priests rose

¹⁴ In the oldest portions of the Rigveda Samhitâ, the expression Asura is still used in a good and elevated sense. Martin Haug, *Religion of the Parsees*.

¹⁵ From the latter is derived the Atharva Veda. Atharva means provided with fire.

¹⁶ Fr. Spiegel, *Das Leben Zarathustra's*. 1867.

the founder of a religion, Zoroaster, or more correctly Zarathustra.¹⁷ He is first mentioned in Greek literature about 470 B.C. by Xanthus the Lydian, who dates his appearance at hundreds or thousands of years before Xerxes. He is certainly of very high antiquity.¹⁸ Difficulties also occur in assigning the place of his birth, and although it is generally said to have been Ragha or the present Rai near Teheran, it must be added that he subsequently lived in Bactria, and that it was probably there that his doctrine first took root.¹⁹

Zarathustra proclaimed that among the many benevolent Ahura, there was a Mazdão, or creator of the world,²⁰ who rewarded good and evil. This supreme being combined in itself a white or holy (*spento mainyus*) and a dark or evil spirit (*angro mainyus*), so that the division into Osmazd and Ahriman did not form a part of the pure doctrine of Zoroaster; ²¹ according to his tenets, both good and evil proceeded from the same creative power. In an old hymn in the Parsee liturgy, the soul of Nature is represented as appearing before God, and complaining that the world is devastated by the oppression of the evil one. It also begs for the creation of a being powerful enough to release it for ever from its affliction. But it did not seem good to God to exempt mortals from the conflict with the evil one, which tends to fortify the power of good with which they were endowed. But, at the request of the soul of Nature, he showed it the prototype of Zarathustra, by whose appearance the champions of good should receive such support that the victory of light would be secured for ever.²²

But this more profound doctrine became obscured in the

¹⁷ The name is translated variously by Windischmann (*Zoroastrische Studien*), by Fr. Spiegel (*Leben Zarathustra's*), and by Martin Haug, who explains it as the title of a high priest, and gives the founder the name of Spitama.

¹⁸ M. Haug (*Lecture on the Original Speech of Zoroaster*) does not think it permissible to place it earlier than 2300 B.C. Rapp, on the contrary, has adduced many reasons for fixing the period between the eleventh and thirteenth centuries B.C.

¹⁹ Rapp has skilfully set forth the evidence in favour of Bactra.

²⁰ Haug, *Religion of the Parsees*.

²¹ *Ibid.*

²² Ferdinand Justi in the *Ausland*. 1871.

course of time. The light side and the dark side of the Divine will were separated. Since then the lords of light and of darkness struggle for the victory which is, however, decided from the beginning. Ormazd alone knows of the existence of Ahriman, and has three thousand years in which to form an army of immortal fellow-helpers before the latter moves. When Ahriman at length rises to the conflict, he encounters a well-prepared antagonist. The struggle lasts three thousand years without a decision. Only in the next and final period of three thousand years is Ahriman reduced to impotence.²³ In this conflict mortal man is to partake; he is to choose between light and darkness, to conduce to the victory of the Good by the influence of his works, and not increase Ahriman's prospect of success by bad actions. It was certainly not easy to invent anything more influential in fostering the better impulses of man than the promise of being regarded by God himself as a contributor to the victory. Connected with this was the doctrine of the resurrection from the dead, a genuinely Zoroastrian dogma, of which the earliest notice reached the West at the end of the fourth century B.C., through Theopompus.²⁴ The dead were supposed to rise to an eternal life in bodies needing no change of substance, casting no shadow, and requiring no sustenance. For three days after the last dying breath the soul still hovers near its bodily shell. But at the fourth dawn an angel of death drags it to the bridge of the soul-catcher (Tshinvat Peretu) and before the judge Straoscha, who tests the good and bad works in the balance. The righteous man is met with celestial greetings by an embodiment of his virtuous life in the form of a maiden in the full beauty of youth, slim and broad-bosomed, with white arms and noble countenance. To the godless the embodiment of his conduct appears as an ill-favoured girl, the sight of whom recalls to his remembrance all his lies and acts of injustice. According to the verdict, the soul either passes over the bridge to the sphere of hymns of praise (*garô demâna*) or is cast down by evil spirits into the gulf of destruction.

Similar ideas respecting the trial of the soul after death are diffused over the whole world. We need not dwell on the judg-

²³ Wendischmann, Zoroastr. Studien.

²⁴ Ibid.

ment of the dead as conceived by the Egyptians, as it is sufficiently well known. But according to the creed of the Badagas in Tamul India, the souls are obliged to pass by a column of fire which consumes the sinful, and it is only after perils that they reach the land of the blessed by a bridge of rope.²⁵ Jesuit missionaries record that the Hurons believe that the souls of the departed are obliged to pass over the river of death on the trunk of a tree; during the passage many are seized and thrown over by the guardian of the bridge, or by a dog.²⁶ Tylor, who has sedulously collected other examples of the myth of the bridge of the soul, found it also in an old English dirge, in which the words "The brig of dread no brader than a thread" occur.²⁷

The striking Erânian conception of a moral dispensation of the world did not prevent the continuance of an old fetishistic superstition, which was, however, skilfully reconciled with the fundamental idea of the Mazdayasna, or the doctrine of Zoroaster. Thus Mithra, or the sun, was adored as the eye of Ormazd, although created by himself. The Shamanistic drinking of the Haoma likewise preserved its magic influence. But, above all, fire is even now worshipped as the son of Ormazd; hence no conflagration may be extinguished save with earth; no light blown out, for every breath is a pollution, for which reason the priests in their sacred functions and other Parsees while engaged in prayer cover their mouths. Fire is contaminated by cooking and smith's work, and the moral law of the Parsees everywhere insists on cleanliness. Running water enjoys the same protection from pollution. For this reason it was meritorious to build bridges in order to obviate wading through the rivers. As the dead could neither be burnt nor thrown into the water, nor can the equally sacred earth be defiled by them, the bodies were exposed as a prey to birds in circular places, surrounded by walls, which were called *Towers of Silence*.²⁸

²⁵ Baierlein, *Nach und aus Indien*.

²⁶ Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, vol. ii. p. 92.

²⁷ *Early History of Mankind*, p. 451.

²⁸ In Media also corpses were not laid in the ground before they had been covered over with melted wax; or they were buried, as in the royal vaults at Persepolis, when the flesh had been stripped from the bones. That Cyrus,

Among the followers of Zarathustra the notion of sin was very variable, for it might consist in an offence against Shamanistic precepts, in other words, in contamination, or else in an action morally reprehensible. Of the latter sort, lying was regarded as a heavy disgrace,²⁹ deceit as worse than robbery. Theft was a crime, if only because it is done in secret; to lend money seemed culpable, because it was liable to result in the deception of the creditor.³⁰ The moral law of Parseeism insisted and still insists on probity and purity; even to our own times no other religious organization has enjoyed an equal degree of respect from those of other creeds. The first Gospel also makes kindly mention of the Magi who came from the East.

XIII.—THE MONOTHEISM OF ISRAEL.

NOTHING is more significant in the moral history of the human race than the development of a monotheistic conception of God. In the legends and narratives so ingenuously and undoubtingly related in the Old Testament, we may see, as in an entirely correct mirror, the slow ripening of this conception, which was so often in danger of annihilation. Because in early childhood we all imbibed the truth that the Holy and Eternal must be indivisible, we overlook the difficulties which necessarily encountered the diffusion of this idea when it was novel, hesitatingly and vaguely held by few, and rejected by the majority for the sake of other and older conceptions. Before reaching a belief in the Divine unity, a people must have passed through long periods of intellectual and moral development, for, as Tylor¹ truly remarks, monotheism has never been met with in a tribe of so-called savages. Implicit reliance

who was a fire-worshipper, should have condemned Croesus to the stake is scarcely credible; it would be less incredible that the Lydian king wanted to burn his god Sandon (F. Justi). Rapp, on the contrary, supposes that the funeral practices above mentioned were not customary in Western Eran, but were peculiar to the East alone.

²⁹ Herodotus, i. 138.

³⁰ Duncker, *Gesch. des Alterthums*.

¹ *Primitive Culture*, vol. ii. p. 333.

can, however, be bestowed on biblical history only from the date at which the people of Israel adopted the art of writing, that is, from the time of the exodus from Egypt, or not much before.²

In their earlier days the Hebrews made use of other names than Jahveh for the Supreme Being, and it is a suspicious fact that one of these (Elohim) is in the plural form, and that in swearing a solemn oath three Gods were successively addressed.³ It has already been mentioned that household gods (seraphim) still received worship even in David's time.⁴ Shortly before the Babylonian captivity, Josiah ordered the destruction of two altars of sacred stones before the gates of Jerusalem.⁵ The Scriptures themselves expressly testify that in the earliest ages the Jews did not adhere to the pure religion of God. Hence, if the Egyptians worshipped a Supreme Being under the name of *I am that I am*,⁶ the conjecture is not entirely to be rejected, that Moses, being initiated into the mysteries of the Egyptian worship, was the first to attain monotheistic views; yet, owing to the obscurity which surrounds the early history of the people of Israel, an assertion such as this can neither be strictly proved nor strictly refuted. But it seems hardly credible that a single mind, however ardent and highly gifted, could have converted an entire nation completely unprepared for such a change to a totally novel interpretation of the world. The conception of an indivisible God must, in common with all processes of this world, have been of slow development. In the Old Testament story we frequently see this conception on the point of extinction, or obscured like the sun by a passing cloud on a gloomy day. Even Moses was not unshaken, or he would never have set up the brazen serpent in the desert as a protection against the snakes in the peninsula of Sinai. This fetish was only destroyed by the devout King Hezekiah, at a time when a far purer and clearer conception of God had become general. Traces of Shamanism are also retained in the trial by ordeal in accusations of adultery. The suspected woman is to

² The mention of signet rings in Joseph's time (Gen. xxxviii. 18, 25) would point to a somewhat earlier date.

³ With Gen. xxxi. 53, comp. Ewald, *Israelitische Geschichte*, vol. i. p. 371.

⁴ See above.

⁵ Ewald, vol. iii. p. 757.

⁶ G. Ebers, *Durch Gosen zum Sinai*.

drink water in which has been soaked a paper inscribed with curses,⁷ just as the Mohammedan priests of the present day pretend to cure sick people with water in which written texts of the Koran have been washed.⁸ That women also attempted to conjure up the dead is proved by Saul's secret visit to the witch of Endor : even in Josiah's time an oracle which existed at Jerusalem was held in much esteem. Immediately after Joshua's death a deplorable license had taken possession of the public mind, and Jahveh worship was polluted with human sacrifices, which were continued in use up to the time of the kings.⁹ In old days Jahveh was considered only as the shield of the Hebrew race exclusively, as a tutelary spirit of greater powers than the deities of the hostile tribes.¹⁰ Thus Jephthah sends word by his messenger to the king of the children of Ammon : "Wilt thou not possess that which Chemosh thy god giveth thee to possess? So whosoever the Lord our God shall drive out from before us, them will we possess."¹¹ Jahveh's power was even considered to be locally restricted, for God undertook to "go down into Egypt" with Jacob.¹² The sensuous view was sometimes carried so far that the forces of nature are regarded as vital manifestations of God, and the conception of God is almost reduced to a monotheistic worship of nature. The extreme beauty of the language employed must not obscure the significance of the fact that an audible voice was perceived in the thunder, and the cold or warm breath of Jahveh in frost and thaw.¹³ Undoubtedly, the limitations to our intellectual faculties always compel us to reinvest the incomprehensible essence of God with the nature of man ; even the Gospels speak of the paternal emotions of God ; but it is a different thing when we are constantly aware that we are using anthropomorphic terms, in default of truer, just as even in the exact sciences we are not

⁷ Numbers v. 19.

⁸ The way in which Shamanistic notions had taken root may be seen from Job vi. 6-10.

⁹ No sophistry can diminish the shock to humanity which we experience in reading the narrative of Jephthah's daughter (Judges xi). Respecting the human sacrifices under Saul and David, comp. 1 Sam. xiv. 23, 45, and 2 Sam. xxi. 6.

¹⁰ Exod. xv. 11, and xviii. 11.

¹¹ Judges xi. 24.

¹² Gen. xli. 4.

¹³ Job xxxvii. and xxxviii.

always able to avoid figurative expressions. But when the Bible represents Jahveh as being gratified by the savour of sacrifices,¹⁴ it uses language such as Homer would have used. The conception of the Jahveh to whom Moses on Mount Sinai is obliged to recall the promises given, and who, in firm of purpose, withdraws his threats,¹⁵ is childish, and therefore destitute of sublimity. Here, again, we are reminded of scenes such as were enacted on Olympus in the epic periods of the Greeks. Even the dress of the priests with its ornaments and embroidery is traced back to Divine ordinances,¹⁶ and we are sorry to read that Jahveh suggested and abetted the embezzlement of vessels of gold and silver borrowed by the Israelites.¹⁷ The conception of the Supreme Being remained long thus meagre, corrupt, and human in its weakness.

The deep significance of the history of Israel consists in this : that by its experiences and sufferings this nation was driven to a conception of God, ever increasing in profundity and purity. Of all the nations of antiquity the Jews alone possess a history, which strives to recognize the control of a moral dispensation of the world in earthly events. It was written in exile¹⁸ in a sorrowful mood, where the priesthood no longer existed, so that no hierarchical craft came into play, as has sometimes been supposed. The preceding period of the kings had given the experience that religious license was nearly always followed by worldly ruin, but the Scriptures did not conceal the fact that pious rulers sometimes fell into adversity, or fortune smiled favourably on recreants to the end. By their misfortunes during the time of the kings, the Jews acquired their firm trust in God. "With the Assyrians," exclaims Hezekiah, according to the Scriptures, "is an arm of flesh, but with us is the Lord our God to help us, and to fight our battles."¹⁹ Thus Eliphaz admonishes the despairing Job how many that "plow iniquity and sow wickedness" are consumed by the blast

¹⁴ Lev. i. 9.

¹⁵ Exod. xxxii. 9-14.

¹⁶ Exod. xxviii. 33, 34.

¹⁷ Exod. xi. 2.

¹⁸ According to Ewald (*History of Israel*), the Book of Kings was written in the middle of the Babylonian captivity.

¹⁹ 2 Chron. xxxii. 7, 8.

of God.²⁰ The Jews had distinctly recognized that the strength of a nation can only be founded on a firm reliance on the moral dispensation of the world. From their own history they had derived the lesson that they had always been victorious as long as morality prevailed amongst them, and that departure from the law resulted in their being carried away into captivity.²¹ The consolation and light which they derived in the hour of their affliction from this knowledge is echoed in the verses of the psalm, "Though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil, for Thou art with me."

There are individual traits which show that before, during, and after their exile, in their religious views they discarded their former childlike crudeness. Ezekiel no longer recognizes the God of the Old Testament who never forgave, but always revenged the sins of the forefathers on the third and fourth generations. "The father shall not bear the iniquity of the son, nor the son the iniquity of the father." Even the man overburdened with sin, if he turns away from his sins in true repentance may hope for forgiveness, "for," as the prophet represents the Lord saying, "Have I any pleasure at all that the wicked should die? and not that he should return from his ways and live?" In a psalm ascribed to David,²² compassion as of a father is promised to all who fear God. The maxim of the son of Sirach that²³ we must forgive our neighbour before asking forgiveness for ourselves is among the foreshadowings of Christianity. The Israelites were indebted to the prophets for their liberation from Shamanistic errors. As we have already noticed the dangers with which all sacrificial worship threatens the moral tendencies of the religious emotions, we will recall the much-admired warning of Isaiah,²⁴ "Your country is desolate, your cities are burned with fire: your land, strangers devour it in your presence, and it is desolate, as overthrown by strangers. And the daughter of Zion is left as a cottage in a vineyard, as a lodge in a garden of cucumbers, as a besieged city. Except the Lord of Hosts had left unto us a very small remnant, we should have been as Sodom, and we should have been like upon

²⁰ Job iv. 7-9.²¹ Ezech. xviii. 20.²² Psalm ciii. 13.²³ Ecclesiasticus xxviii. 2.²⁴ Isaiah i. 7.

Gomorrah.²⁵ Hear the word of the Lord, ye rulers of Sodom; give ear unto the law of our God, ye people of Gomorrah. To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices unto me? saith the Lord: I am full of the burnt offerings of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight not in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of he goats. When ye come to appear before me, who hath required this at your hand, to tread my courts? Bring no more vain oblations; incense is an abomination unto me; the new moons and the sabbaths, the calling of assemblies, I cannot away with; it is iniquity, even the solemn meeting. Your new moons and your appointed feasts, my soul hateth: they are a trouble unto me; I am weary to bear them. And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide mine eyes from you: yea, when ye make many prayers, I will not hear; your hands are full of blood. Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do evil; learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow. Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool."

Even Samuel is represented as saying that Jahveh is better pleased with obedience than sacrifice.²⁶ The prophets explicitly denied that sacrifice in any way binds the Deity as in a sort of reciprocal covenant, and guarded against the error that the slightest coercion was exercised upon the Divine will by any kind of ritual. As soon as inward moral purity and the avoidance of social crimes are insisted upon as a Divine law, the province of ethics coincides with that of religion. When strict and righteous conduct is regarded as the proof of reverence for the Supreme Being, the exaltation of the Divine will induces man to strive, consciously or unconsciously, to raise the value of his own existence by the fulfilment of higher duties.

The conceptions of God himself become more and more re-

²⁵ On this passage Steinthal observes, "The transition from the comparison of misfortune to the equality in wickedness of Judah and Sodom has always appeared to me of such overwhelming force, that I doubt whether in all rhetorical literature there is another such striking passage."

²⁶ 1 Sam. xv. 22, and Ewald Hist. of Israel. Psalm li. 18, 19.

moved from crude sensuousness. It was as a nomad that Jahveh went down to Egypt with Jacob, but on the other hand we read that no one can escape from the omnipresent God of the Psalmist, even "with the wings of the morning."²⁷ God, unlimited in space, is also recognized as eternal. He is conceived of as existing before the visible world of matter; nor do human ideas of time affect one to whom "a thousand years are as one day, or as a watch in the night."

Thus, without observation, and not suddenly but by gradual transitions, a constantly new and newer God is revealed, purer and more moral, corresponding to the purer and more moral views to which the Jewish people were matured, when they had been educated to greatness and purified by sore trials.

The Scriptures lie open to every one, and in them we can pass through in history what the Hebrews experienced in their own persons.

As the monotheism taught by the prophets was a true gain, it necessarily proved its worth in the hour of unspeakable calamity, when the inhabitants of Judea were led into captivity at Babylon, as the ten tribes had previously been by the Assyrians. Of Zion and the temple there remained only the bare walls, and a garrison was quartered in the desolate spot to warn away any who might come to perform their secret devotions in the sacred places. The future was completely dark; there gleamed no ray of the most distant hope that this once strong and envied people, who were now dispersed and scattered over the great kingdom of Babylon, should ever be reunited. When, to use the words of their singer, they wept by the waters of Babylon, and hung their harps upon the willow trees, because they could not sing the Lord's song in a strange land, their deeply troubled minds answered their self-inquiries as to the future with the cruel words, "All is over." It was over with Judah and Zion even as the kingdom of the ten tribes had already passed away.

When the period of their kings, during which they ruled from the sea to the desert, had passed away with its terrible conclusion like a vanished dream, and when fully restored to consciousness,

²⁷ Psalm cxxxix. 9.

they found themselves transported into the midst of the Asiatic marvels of Babylon and surrounded by sensual pleasures, where it was possible for any one of them to stifle his yearnings after his home in rocky Palestine, by abandoning himself to the enjoyable realities of the moment—to the varied luxuries and revelries of the voluptuous capital beneath the groves of the Euphrates, and to the superfluity of artificially irrigated gardens. This was done by the greater number : they employed their exile in earning a better livelihood, and perhaps thought it a fortunate dispensation that they had been delivered from the poverty-stricken monotony of their former lives. Had all accommodated themselves to their new position in a manner so spiritless and worldly-wise, nothing would now have remained of Judaism but the name of a people in cuneiform writing, which modern erudition would decipher as *hebr* or something similar : one name more among the other meaningless names.

But the uncorrupt nucleus of the Jewish nation did not forget, but transmitted to the following and succeeding generation the yearnings after the places where its higher emotions had been imparted to it. The exiles closely observing their new masters, seeing a nation stronger and more wisely governed, favoured by nature and enriched by skill and technical dexterity, yet degrading itself daily by the absurdities of idolatry, acknowledged to themselves that they still remained the chosen people. To us, who are able to survey the subsequent course of history, the exile seems most like the curve of a parabola round its focus. Judaism had not ended, for the very thing to which it owed its highest value, the conception of the unity of God, was destined merely to alter the direction of its course to a higher enlightenment. Misfortune did not harden the Jews, but when they ate their own bread with tears they were softened towards all the suffering that they beheld around them. Each of us who has striven to obtain clear ideas, has attained some explanation of the world, which is not merely the sum of what he has discerned for himself or gained from the experience of others, but of all that has happened to him or before him. The historical adventures of a nation greatly affect such results as the creation of a religion of its own, the adoption of a strange one, or the maintenance of an adopted one. Emmanuel

Deutsch²⁸ was thus enabled to show that even in the earlier writings of the Talmud, the same tendency to gentleness and humanity appear, which rendered Christianity preëminently the ideal religion of the heavy-laden, and whence for more than eighteen centuries it has derived its best strength. These Talmudical passages belong to the period of the Babylonian captivity, the time of woe and oppression, and it is to this purifying school of misfortune that the tone of justice and softness, of tenderness and charity to others is due.

XIV.—THE DOCTRINES OF CHRISTIANITY.

THE Hebrews who had known the cosmical views and the theistic conceptions of the Erânians more or less correctly before the captivities, but learned them with full accuracy during the captivity itself, could not remain entirely unaffected by this mental contact and impregnation. To this we must primarily ascribe the fact that in scattered portions of the Old Testament, an incarnate instigator of evil suddenly appears, although the already vigorous conception of the unity of God does not allow conception of the devil as an Ahriman equal in rank to the Deity, but only as the minister of the Lord and an instrument in his designs.¹ But far more important in its effects than the acquisition of Satan, of which little use is made, was the acquaintance with the Erânian opinions of the immortality of the soul as well as the doctrines of the resurrection of the dead, and of a judgment of their course of life. These ideas were originally so alien to the Israelites that in the time of Christ the Sadducees² still rejected a future life as contrary to the

²⁸ Quarterly Review, October, 1867.

¹ Ewald (Hist. of Israel) attributes the book of Job to the time of the last kings of Judah, but he also shows that the knowledge of the Zarathustrian dogmas made itself felt in the religious conceptions of the Hebrews in the 10th, and more plainly in the 8th century, especially in the more liberal apprehension of the opposition betwixt good and evil. As to the few passages in the Old Testament besides Job, in which Satan appears, comp. Roskoff, *Geschichte des Teufels*.

² Matt. xxii. 23.

Scriptures. Even to the disciples the doctrine was so new that they questioned what the rising from the dead should mean. Many passages in the Old Testament actually deny every hope of another world. The righteous is rewarded with promise of a long life and a numerous offspring, or else actual worldly abundance in garner and cellar is held out as a recompense for religious reverence and strict worship. "What profit is there in my blood when I go down to the pit?" cries the Psalmist to the Lord. "Shall the dust praise Thee? shall it declare Thy truth?" In Job we find the entirely desponding expression that there is hope of a tree if it be cut down that it may sprout again, but that when the sons of men lie down they shall not be raised out of their sleep.³ The conclusion of this dramatic poem is unsatisfactory. The glimpse which we should have expected into a world of glory does not open on the trials of the sufferer, but Job is restored to health, supplied anew with flocks and progeny, and dies full of years. The Old Testament, indeed, speaks repeatedly of an abode of the dead, which in our translation is termed hell, but which must not be regarded as a place of moral atonement, but as Job portrays it, as a dark region full of everlasting terrors. Moreover, this Sheol, which corresponds to the Hades of the Greeks, is nowhere mentioned in the legislative ordinances of the Old Testament. The germs of other and more elevated views appear only in the later portions. The consolatory doctrine is taught that man was God's idea, and therefore had existed from the beginning. As this doctrine is otherwise to be found only in books of less consideration, it is an important fact that it occurs in Jeremiah also (i. 4). If another beautiful chapter in the Book of Wisdom, in which the expectation of a Nirvâna is rejected as a doctrine of the wicked, is not received on account of its apocryphal origin, on the other hand, we have the doctrine of the preëxistence of man, as God's idea, in Psalm cxxxix., which Ewald ascribes to Zerubbabel.⁴ In the Proverbs⁵ the same view is expressed in

³ Job xiv. 7-12.

⁴ The doctrine of the preëxistence of man before birth is, according to Schrader, of Assyrio-Babylonian origin.

⁵ Prov. viii. 22-31.

poetic words, and by elevated similes, which sound like a foreshadowing of our modern cosmogonic science. "The Lord," it is said, "possessed me from the beginning of his way, before his works of old. I was set up . . . or ever the earth was. When there were no depths . . . when there were no fountains abounding with water. Before the mountains were settled, before the hills was I brought forth. While as yet he had not made the earth, nor the fields, nor the highest part of the dust of the world. When he prepared the heavens I was there : when he set a compass upon the face of the depth : when he established the clouds above : when he strengthened the fountains of the deep : when he gave to the sea his decree, that the waters should not pass his commandment : when he appointed the foundations of the earth : then I was by him . . . rejoicing always before him."

From these passages we learn that a well-calculated scheme of creation was assumed, in which individuals were already taken into consideration. But, as God's idea, man must also continue to exist to all eternity. Before briefly stating what is the main distinction by which ethnology separates the essential nature of the Christian doctrine from the religious impulses of other times, or of paganism, we must first emphasize the fact that the embodiment of the forces of nature in God which is found in the Old Testament,⁶ is set aside by the maxim that God must be contemplated as a spiritual being.⁷ The Gospels, indeed, attribute anthropomorphic language to the founder of their faith, inasmuch as God is spoken of as a father, but this is vindicated by the limits of the human intellect. We are incapable of imagining a spirit—for that which we choose to call by that name always resembles a thinking being like ourselves—inseparable from the functions of an organism. As long as we remain men, we shall always be forced to imagine the Divine in human form, but this is accompanied in the Gospels by a restriction of language. If God is to be addressed as Father we are told to apply to God alone the paternal name thus consecrated.⁸

⁶ Job xxxvii., xxxviii.

⁷ John iv. 24, πνεῦμα ὁ Θεός.

⁸ Matt. xxiii. 9, καὶ πατέρα μὴ καλέσητε ὑμῶν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς· εἰς γὰρ ἐστὶν ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν, ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς.

But there is one doctrine in particular which makes its appearance first and solely in Christianity, namely, the hypothesis of a benevolent Providence. To speak after the manner of Leibnitz, the plan of the best possible creation has been thought out to the smallest detail, to the number of hairs on the head of man, and the existence of the weakest creatures.⁹ In proportion as the recognition of such an idea is established, Shamanism of all sorts, the most dangerous error of mankind, is set aside. Although human reflection may perhaps overcome the grosser attempts to assume a feigned power over the course of nature by means of incantation and sorcery, there nevertheless remains much longer a reliance on symbolical actions, sacrifice, abstinence, penance, and prayer. The Indian Brahmins, as we have seen, by ingenious self-deceptions, deluded themselves into the belief that they, as possessors of such means, acquired a Divine nature. Although it was during the captivity that prayer first gained importance and power among the Hebrews,¹⁰ even Zechariah was obliged to bid them beware of the enforced fasting and mourning by which they fancied they could alter the counsels of God. The true Christian, while assuming the existence of a benevolent Providence, must not require any Divine interference with the normal course of natural events. The Founder of our religion even distinctly forbade supplications for earthly objects, for before the request was offered provision was already made for all the real wants of man.¹¹ This necessary corollary of the doctrine of a benevolent Providence distinguished Christianity from all other religious creations. Christianity does not promise the realization of any wish, however small, intense, or pure. It is therefore impossible to stray further from the original and pure religion than when, on the supposition that earthly desires no longer reach the heavenly Father, a number of polytheistic intermediate beings are invented as intercessors, and by this circuitous course a reversion is made to Shamanistic prayer.

The form of prayer which Christ taught to his disciples is nothing

⁹ Matt. x. 29, 30.

¹⁰ Ewald, *Hist. of Israel*, vol. v. p. 23.

¹¹ Matt. vi. 8, οὐδε γὰρ ὁ πατήρ ὑμῶν ἔν χρείᾳ ἔχετε πρὸ τοῦ ὑμᾶς αἰτεῖσαι αὐτόν.

more than an injunction to observe, as in a mirror, the moral and religious state of our *ego* at the moment, to fortify ourselves in holiness by the thought of God, by the desire that the kingdom of Christian opinions may penetrate into our minds, as well as by the remembrance that whatever may befall us is the will of a benevolent Providence. It brings home to us the warning 'to forgive those who may have done us wrong,'¹² and, finally, the petition that the Christian faith may not be shaken, and that doubt may be more and more thrust out. The only earthly sound in this prayer is the petition for daily bread, if indeed this be not an exhortation that gratitude is due for every day that is vouchsafed to us. The Lord's Prayer requires extreme concentration of thought if its purport is not to pass through the human mind without result. But so ineradicable are Shamanistic tendencies, that, notwithstanding the Founder's warning against thoughtless repetitions¹³ which immediately precedes the teaching of the Lord's Prayer, as the Paternoster in an unknown tongue, it has for many centuries been, not expressed in prayer, but in Buddhist fashion,¹⁴ repeated by the counting of the beads of a rosary.

The essential point of this prayer, or self-communing, is the so-called third petition, which patiently and gratefully welcomes all that may be decreed for man in this world and the next, as the enactment of a benevolent Providence. Even severe strokes of destiny may turn to inward advantage, since, setting aside the cases in which they harden and embitter, they raise the mind into that disposition of gentleness and forgiveness which renders it most susceptible to Christian truth. The consolation of the new doctrine was not for the sound and strong, but for broken hearts.¹⁵ But the self-training of the moral man has to begin with the dis-

¹² In a similar sense it is said by Jesus the son of Sirach, "Forgive thy neighbour the hurt that he hath done unto thee, so shall thy sins also be forgiven when thou prayest."

¹³ Matt. vi. 7, *μὴ βαττολογήσητε, ὥσπερ οἱ ἔθνικοι· δοκοῦσι γὰρ, ὅτι ἐν τῇ πολυλογίᾳ αὐτῶν εἰσακουσθήσονται.*

¹⁴ As the analogous Buddhist prayer-mills have already been mentioned, we will add that even among the ancient Eranians prayer was prescribed to be repeated 100 and 1000 times. Duncker, *Gesch. der Alterthums*.

¹⁵ Luke v. 31.

cernment of his own faults. Forbearance towards fellow-creatures, conflict with one's own hardness of heart and uncharitableness, are the constantly reiterated precepts of the Gospels. The ordinances of the Old Testament were not upset but enhanced and refined. Not murder only, but all animosity ; not adultery, but every culpable desire, were to be suppressed. No merit was to be assumed for recompensing love by love, for that was done by the heathen also, but, like God, who makes the sun to shine upon the just and the unjust, to return curses with blessings, hatred with benefit, insults with intercessions, was enjoined on Christians as a new code of duty.¹⁶ The subjugation of human nature is everywhere required as a striving towards the kingdom of heaven, and an ennoblement of earthly society is enjoined. To the young man who wishes to bury his father, the Founder replies, " Let the dead bury their dead,"¹⁷ as if every one to whom his own salvation is not the chief concern were a living shadow. Parental and filial or fraternal affection, which is only enlarged self-love, is to be extended to all mankind.¹⁸

In human society, social rights necessitate their own observance. The progress of our race depends on a complete organization of work and functions which is inconceivable without strict observance of the rights of others. When the sense of truth and justice is blunted all society goes to ruin. This inexorable moral law ensures the social training of our race. But the Christian aspires to something higher than the refinement of the social instinct of mankind. Kennan, the traveller, praises the compassionateness of the Koriaks ; he never saw a child receive a blow, he never heard a hard word spoken to a woman ; but those enfeebled by age or hopelessly ill are speared with great dexterity ; the father or mother is usually killed by the son, for the stern necessities of the nomadic life do not allow the migratory community to be burdened by the decrepit, and the social instinct places the general welfare above pity for the individual. If we acknowledge that maxims such as these are incompatible with the Christian code of duty, we admit that our morality rises above

¹⁶ Matt. v. 44-46.

¹⁷ Ibid. viii. 22.

¹⁸ Ibid. x. 37. Mark iii. 33.

and occasionally opposes the social instinct. Our care of those diseased in mind may be regarded as prudential egotism, for no one can foretell whether he may not derive benefit from this social protection. But we also provide for human malformations, such as cretins and idiots. Assuredly it would be more for the benefit of society to abandon such beings to their fate, and to apply the the expenditure required for their care to more profitable purposes. In not doing so we satisfy a sense of duty which cannot be traced to our social instinct.¹⁹ Negro slavery and many systems of bondage were justified by the supposition that the bondsmen required discipline, that is, compulsion to labour; that they thrived much better under pressure, and that a great part of their services was lost to the world after their liberation. Nevertheless, every noble mind, abhorring coercion of every kind, would deem these sordid advantages too dearly purchased. But we owe this sensitiveness of conscience to the teachings of the Gospel implanted in us in youth.

When Christianity is charged with its persecutions of heretics, its inquisitions, its religious wars, the reproach applies only to those who transformed the doctrines of gentleness into the reverse. There has never been any dispute as to the morality of Christianity, but only as to the dogmas as established by the decisions of councils. Christ himself combated the party which assumed to represent orthodox Judaism: he who declared the Sabbath to be made for man, and who has left behind him the words so crushing to dogmatists, "In vain do ye worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandment of men."

The contemners of the doctrines of the Gospel in our times generally overlook the circumstance that all philanthropic efforts have found their strongest auxiliary in the Christian teaching. The abolition of negro slavery was already contemplated, but the accordance of equal rights for all in public life was more warmly advocated by the Christian sense of duty. We owe our present

¹⁹ Among the ancient Mexicans, cretins were also taken care of (Oviedo, *Historia general*), but this was certainly from superstitious fear or as a fancy, just as in the Fiji Islands the chiefs were wont to maintain cripples for their own amusement.

care for the poor to the command to feed the hungry, and to clothe the naked.²⁰ Many other points which may perplex us in the doctrines of the Gospels may perhaps be founded on a misapprehension on the part of the disciples; the sense of the words spoken in Syriac may have suffered more or less in the translation into Greek, or the obscurity of the metaphors may still be cleared up on better acquaintance with the East, as has been the case with the camel and the eye of the needle.²¹ It is due to misrepresentations that Christianity is sometimes regarded as less enlightened than Buddhism, which is said to have gained four hundred millions of adherents without proclaiming either a recompense for good works or a punishment for bad actions. We have already described the true state of the case. The Buddhism of the four hundred millions is destitute neither of a glorious heaven nor of a hell with imaginative tortures. Even in its primitive purity the transmigration of souls acted as a terror to the transgressors of its commandments, for the son of Asoka was barbarously blinded only because, according to Buddhist interpretation, in a former existence he had put out the eyes of hundreds of gazelles.²²

XV.—ISLAM.

BEFORE the appearance of their prophet the tribes of the Arabian peninsula were still in the shackles of fetishism. They worshipped stones, rocks, trees, and images, and also the sun, moon, and constellations.¹ Mohammed himself confesses that in his

²⁰ Mark vii. 7. *Μάτην δὲ σέβονταί με, διδάσκοντες διδασκαλίας ἐντάλματα ἀνθρώπων.*

²¹ The lamented Lady Duff Gordon writes (Letters from Egypt): "Yesterday I saw a camel go through the eye of a needle, i.e., the low-arched door of an enclosure. He must kneel and bow his head to creep through, and thus the rich man must humble himself."

In the oases of Southern Algeria, the small doors near the great gates in the walls are also called the eye of the needle (F. Desor, *Aus Sahara und Atlas*).

²² Bournouf, *Introduction à l'histoire du Bouddhisme*.

¹ L. Krehl, *Religion der vorislamischen Araber*. Leipzig, 1863.

youth he adored the gods of his fathers. The meteoric stone in the Ka'aba at Mecca had long been the object of pilgrimages in connection with which fairs were held, and in order not to deprive his native city of this source of profit, Mohammed condescended to incorporate the worship of this stone into his religious system. The existence of invisible and supernatural beings, jins and angels, was also believed, and endeavours were made to obtain their good-will by worship. Even in very early times the Bedouins acknowledged a creator of the heavens and a ruler of the world under the denomination of Allah, a name derived from the verb *lâh*, which signifies trembling and shining.² On other grounds its relationship to the Hebrew El, or Eloah, and with Alâhah, the old Arabic name for the sun, is also conjectured.³ A future life was denied, so that it was Mohammed's doctrine of resurrection which especially repelled the higher classes of his countrymen.⁴

The prophet, who was left an orphan at an early age, and was in his youth obliged to adopt the humble occupation of a sheep and goat-herd, improved his position in life by marrying at twenty-four a rich widow at least fourteen years older than himself. He suffered all his life from hysterical attacks, and for that reason alone would have been regarded by the races of Africa, Northern Asia, and America as a powerful Shaman. Like all such, he also firmly believed that his revelations were extraneous, and that a higher power spoke by him. When in advancing years his enthusiasm gradually subsided, and practice gave him the power of evoking at will convulsive ecstasies, which were so great as to produce foaming at the mouth, he delivered revelations for the most trivial purposes. Before bringing home his eighth wife, she required that her marriage should be decreed by the word of God, which was given at her demand.⁵ Having sworn to another of his wives to reject a Coptic lady whom he loved, but afterwards repenting of his promise, he procured a revelation from God assuring him that such oaths to women were not obligatory.⁶ Thus the

² A. Sprenger, *Das Leben des Mohammed*, vol. i. p. 250.

³ Von Kremer, *Herrschende Ideen des Islam*, p. 3.

⁴ A. Sprenger, *Das Leben des Mohammed*, vol. i. p. 358.

⁵ *Der Korân*, Sura xvi.

⁶ For instance, see Von Kremer, *Ideen des Islam*, pp. 80, 81.

youth, self-deceived by Shamanism, was at an older age transformed into a crafty impostor. To reconcile the miracle of revelation with reality, it was supposed that the will of God was made known to the Prophet only in its purport, and that time was required to clothe the meaning in that poetical prose which soon so deeply affected the minds of the believers, that pious Moslems, on unexpectedly hearing the menaces of a verse of the Koran, repeatedly fell down unconscious from mere terror, and are even said to have died in consequence.⁷ Mohammed, as a proof of the Divine nature of his inspirations, advised the sceptics, if they believed the Koran was devised by him alone, to try to write even one or two Suras like his.⁸

The Koran itself contains one hundred and fourteen psalms or Suras, differing in length from a single verse to the dimensions of a sermon. Narratives of judicial punishments taken from biblical and ancient Arabic legends, are mixed up, as in a heap devoid of order, with social ordinances and the actual Divine revelations. By arranging them according to the date of their origin we can gain an insight into the growth and development of the new faith, which is merely a recoinage of Jewish and Christian thoughts. The predecessors of the Prophet among the Arabs were the Hanyfes, who worshipped a creator and expected a resurrection of the dead, followed by a judgment of moral acts. Mohammed called himself a Hanyfe, and Abraham the founder of Hanyfism, which in his mouth meant a purified monotheism, which is well called Islâm, a significant word which implies direct opposition to atheism as well as polytheism.⁹ The Prophet was profoundly influenced by the dogmas of the Ebronite Jewish Christians at Jerusalem and Pella, who recognized only the first Gospel as genuine, and rejected the doctrines of the incarnation and redemption.¹⁰ Mohammed himself visited Jerusalem more than once; he honoured Christ and his sister, as he deemed the Holy Ghost, and even the immaculate conception of the Virgin Mary was included in his dogmas.¹¹ The Prophet at first attempted

⁷ Von Kremer, *Ideen des Islâm*.

⁸ Koran, Sura x.

⁹ Sprenger, *Das Leben des Mohammed*, vol. i. p. 72.

¹⁰ *Ibid.* vol. i. p. 22.

¹¹ Koran, Sura xxi.

to found a Jewish Christian community among the Arabs. But as he was probably never able to read, it often happened that he made erroneous appeals to the Old Testament and the Gospels. When he was reproached with such mistakes, he took refuge in the evasion which has from that time been maintained by all Moslems, that the revelations in the Old and New Testaments are of Divine origin, but from vile and interested motives had been so distorted and corrupted by Jews and Christians, that it was necessary that they should be revealed again to the Prophet, fresh and unfalsified. "To thee, Mohammed," it is said in the fifth Sura, "we have given the book of truth, which confirms the law of Moses and the Gospel. Had God so willed it, he would have made of you, ye peoples, one nation, but he has separated you by different laws in order to try the obedience of each to the law which is revealed to him."¹² Later, however, there was no more question of such tolerance and equality. On the 16th of January, 624, the Prophet decreed an alteration of the Kibla, or direction in which prayers were to be said; the face was previously turned towards Jerusalem, but henceforth it was to be directed towards Mecca, although, as if to quiet his own conscience, the Prophet adds in the same Sura which inculcates this ordinance "Direct your prayer where you will, God is there, for God is omnipresent and omniscient."¹³ Against Christian dogmas, and especially against the doctrine of the Trinity, he directed the 112th Sura, which contains the entire creed of the Moslem, and is to be repeated at the most sacred moment of the pilgrimage, while kissing the black stone of the Ka'aba. It runs, "Speak! God is one! The eternal God! He does not beget, he is not begotten! No creature is like unto him!"

The moral decrees enacted by the Prophet on the strength of his Divine mission, were arranged in imitation of the Sinaitic laws, in the following two series, each of five precepts:—1. To acknowledge no other gods but God; 2. to show respect to parents; 3. not to kill children on account of dread of starvation; 4. to preserve chastity; 5. to protect the life of others except where justice demands the contrary. To this first series are attached as injunc-

¹² See Koran, Sura cxi.

¹³ Sura xx.-xxiv.

tions ; 6. inviolability of the property of orphans ; 7. just weights and measures ; 8. no overburdening of slaves ; 9. impartiality of judges ; 10. sacredness of oaths and of the covenant with God.¹⁴ The Mosaic law certainly surpasses this decalogue in point of simplicity. The Prophet obviously racked his brains in order to reach the normal number, and after all inserted mere police regulations. The consecration of the Sabbath was not ordained : Mohammed maintained that it was imposed upon the Jews only on account of their perversity, because they persevered in the celebration of the Saturday, and not as Moses wished of the Friday.¹⁵

The authorization of four lawful wives and an unlimited number of female slaves betrays the weakness of the Prophet, who set no bounds to his own love of pleasure. But it would be unjust to regard polygamy as the essential contrast between Islam and our own religion. Long before Christianity, monogamy was the law among many nations, and still is so among pagan races ; moreover, in the earliest times it was possible while belonging to the Christian Church to have several wives. In common with all nations in a low state of civilization, the Arabs in the time of their heathenism had imposed upon themselves highly complicated dietary prohibitions. The Prophet limited these interdicts to the flesh of swine, of hunted animals, and of blood.¹⁶

To procure credence for his revelations, the Prophet endeavoured to alarm his followers by the threats of the resurrection and a day of judgment. In this the fiery force of his poetic language was of service, and he neglected no opportunity of recalling the judgments already accomplished in biblical and ancient Arabic legends. On the other hand, in wearisome reiteration, he promised the believers and the righteous an Elysium, according to the popular taste—a shady garden with bubbling fountains, delicious fruits, luxurious couches, and a race of hours who united every charm that could eternally satisfy eternal desire. It is true the Koran contains passages which reduce these entrancing descriptions to the level of metaphors adapted to human comprehension,¹⁷ that others represent the contemplation of the

¹⁴ See Koran, Sura vi.

¹⁵ Sura vi.

¹⁶ Sura xvi.

¹⁷ Sura ii.

glory of God as the reward of the righteous,¹⁸ but the extraordinary attraction of Islam was based on the literal interpretation of these sensuous promises; later traditions have taken care to satiate the greedy expectations of the faithful with fabulous delineations of this paradise.¹⁹

The most objectionable doctrine in the Koran is the denial of free-will in man. The destiny of each person is predetermined and recorded, so that the course of life is related to this record as the acting is to the text of a dramatic poem.²⁰ Damnation is decreed for those on whom it falls by an irrevocable counsel of God; for, continues the Koran, had Allah so willed it, all men would have believed, but without His will no soul would attain to faith.²¹ The doctrine of predestination was always maintained by the orthodox, and although the more liberal sects clearly recognized the incompatibility of preordination and punishment with Divine justice and mercy, and held milder views, the weak-minded mass of believers adhered to the letter. On account of this doctrine no priesthood could ever gain ascendancy in the society of Islam, for there was nothing to bind or to loose. Moreover, the Caliphs and their successors were always at the head of the faithful.²²

In addition to the Koran, the Sunna, or book of customs and legal practice, wherever it does not stand in contradiction with revelation, has full authority, and contains ordinances on social and criminal matters, as well as precepts with regard to food and apparel. In addition to this, legal force is imputed to the Record, or Hadyth, which contains such traditional utterances of the Prophet as can be traced back through good witnesses to himself.²³

In Persia these legal authorities were not recognized, and hence arose a division among the faithful into the Sunnites, adherents of the Sunna, and the apostates, or Shyites.

¹⁸ See Koran, Sura lxxv.

¹⁹ Comp. the description of Paradise in M. Wolff's *Mohammedanische Eschatologie*. 1872.

²⁰ Sprenger, *Das Leben des Mohammed*, vol. ii. p. 307.

²¹ Koran, Sura x., also lxxvi. Kremer, *Ideen des Islâm*, p. 9.

²² *Ibid.* p. 280. ²³ Sprenger, *Das Leben des Mohammed*, vol. iii. p. 77.

Shortly after its establishment Islam overran Egypt and Northern Africa; at the beginning of the eighth century it passed over the Straits of Gibraltar, and maintained itself in Western Europe until the fall of Granada, in 1492. In the same century in which it was driven back from Spain to Africa, it succeeded in gaining a footing in Southern Europe in the eastern peninsula, and in 1453 it obtained the dominion over the straits which divide our quarter of the world from Asia Minor.

In the beginning of the eighth century the Arabs pushed their conquests into the territory of the Indus, but their principalities of Mooltan and Mansora soon fell off from the Chalifate. Arab communities existed in all the towns on the coast of Malabar, though Islam was then merely tolerated in those regions. It was only in the year A.D. 1000 that it obtained a firm footing in India among the Ghazuwids,²⁴ and under Baber, the founder of the kingdom of the Great Moguls, the chief power in the peninsula fell into the hands of Mohammedan princes. In Sumatra the doctrine of the Prophet first became predominant in 1206 in the kingdom of Atschin, and in the kingdom of Malacca shortly after its foundation in the year 1253, while in Java it did not supplant Buddhism until after the fall of the state of Madschapahit, in 1478. It reached the island of Celebes in 1512, yet the Buginese were still vainly resisting its spread even in 1640. Islam still continues its progress eastwards. Its furthest limit in that direction is a small mosque at Dobo in the Aru Islands, a dependency of New Guinea.²⁵ But in New Guinea itself there are many new converts among the Papuans.²⁶

In Africa the doctrine of the Prophet was first naturalized in the Mediterranean districts. It made its way across the desert into Bornou between 1086 and 1097, but early in the same century it had spread to the great kingdom of Sonrhay, on the middle Niger, and in the beginning of the thirteenth century it extended to the rulers of Melli on the Upper Niger.²⁷ It reached Wadai, Darfur,

²⁴ Reinaud, *Geographie d'Aboulféda*. Introduction.

²⁵ Wallace, *Malay Archipelago*, vol. ii. p. 276.

²⁶ Otto Finsch, *Neu-Guinea*.

²⁷ Heinrich Barth, *Nord- und Centralafrika*.

and Kordofan only in the beginning and the middle of the seventeenth century.²⁸ Whether the Tuareg were formerly Christians, as Barth conjectures, requires further confirmation, and, again, whether in the former kingdom of Ghana, lying westwards of Timbuctoo, Christianity succumbed to Islam only in 1075, and in Nubia, where according to reliable records it still prevailed in the first half of the fourteenth century.²⁹ Even at present Islam is slowly expelling Christianity from Abyssinia. Within our times the Fellatah have carried it to Adamaua, far into the interior of pagan Africa. The doctrine of the Prophet imposes no change of habits on the Africans. The negro who embraces Islam is assured that he rises higher, and by reason of his purer doctrine is nearer to God than the Christians. Lastly, in Africa the promulgators of the doctrine of the Prophet are poor and unpaid, whereas the missionaries, although they preach contempt for riches, surround themselves with profusion. In the opinion of a clear-sighted observer, these are the reasons why the Christian religion gives way to Islam among the negroes.³⁰ This doctrine has recently been victorious in China. It had early been diffused there; partly by way of Kashgar and the fertile districts on the southern slopes of the Thianshan, partly by sea, following the great mercantile routes to the places on the coast, until towards the end of the ninth century, on the downfall of the Thang dynasty, a persecution of foreigners and the extermination of the Mohammedans took place.³¹ A short time ago a governor established himself at Talifu, in the south-west of the Celestial Kingdom, among the Mohammedan Chinese, and seized a portion of the province of Yunnan. The English who had entered into commercial transactions with this infant state by way of Burmah, were full of praise of the honesty and morality of the Panthays, as these new adherents of Islam were named.³² According to more recent accounts the Chinese again destroyed this new creation in 1872.

²⁸ Waitz, *Anthropologie*.

²⁹ Fr. Kunstmann, *Afrika vor den Entdeckungen der Portugiesen*. 1853.

³⁰ Gerhard Rohlfs in *Ausland*. 1870.

³¹ Peschel, *Geschichte der Erdkunde*.

³² A. Bowers, *Bhamo Expedition*. 1871.

XVI.—THE ZONE OF THE FOUNDERS OF RELIGIONS.

“KNOWLEDGE of the natural characters of different regions of the world,” says Von Humboldt, in one of the most profound passages of his *Physiognomy of Plants*, “is an essential part of the history of the human race and of its culture. For although the beginning of this culture is not determined by physical influences alone, yet its direction and the national character, the gloomy or cheerful temper of mankind, depend largely on climatic conditions. The sky of Greece had great influence on its inhabitants! The colonists in the beautiful and favoured districts between the Euphrates, the Halys, and the Egean Sea began early to recognize moral loveliness and tender feelings. When Europe had sunk back into barbarism, and religious enthusiasm had suddenly brought the sacred East into prominence, our forefathers again brought home from those genial valleys more gentle manners. The poetry of the Greeks and the ruder songs of the primitive people of the north mainly owe their peculiar character to the forms of the plants and animals, to the mountain valleys which surrounded the poet, and to the air which he breathed. Turning only to familiar objects, we all feel different emotions in the dark shade of beech-trees, on hills crowned with scattered fir-trees, or on the grassy plain where the wind rustles through the trembling foliage of the birch. These plants of our native land severally evoke in our minds melancholy, elevating, or gladsome images. The influence of the physical upon the moral world, the mysterious interaction of the sensible and of that which lies beyond the senses, endows the study of nature, when raised to higher points of view, with a peculiar charm which is as yet too little recognized.”

It would be a pleasant task carefully to trace the inward connection ‘betwixt the greatest events in human society and the scenes in which they occurred. No one could better help us in our preparation for such researches than Buckle, according to whom, nothing is simpler and more intelligible than the reaction of the place of abode upon the mental phenomena.’ Where nature terrifies man by portentous objects of alarm, the imagination

is more fully developed than the intellect, and belief in miracles is most luxuriant. "Italy, Spain, and Portugal," says Buckle, "are, of all countries in Europe, most frequently visited by earthquakes; earthquakes intimidate the mind of man, consequently the belief in the interference of supersensual powers with the physical order of the world has been more stubbornly maintained among the inhabitants of Southern Europe than in other parts." The terrible catastrophe which befel Lisbon more than a hundred years ago, although it stands alone in magnitude, may in some degree justify us in considering Portugal among the countries in which earthquakes most frequently occur, but Spain, although not entirely exempt, is not a country either specially or even severely visited by earthquakes. Japan, which so often trembles under the trident of Poseidon, is peopled by a cheerful race of men, given to tricks and jests, and heedless on subjects of religion. Russia, again, is almost entirely free from earthquakes, yet Italy has long been cleansed from a system of exorcism such as still prevails in the Greek Church.

"In the tropics," Buckle continues, "nature appears still more violent and terrible in contrast with human pusillanimity, and hence among the inhabitants of India the imagination is preëminently peopled with illusions. There," he says, "obstacles of every sort were so numerous, so alarming, and apparently so inexplicable, that the difficulties of life could only be solved by constantly appealing to the direct agency of supernatural causes. There the terrified imagination beheld such visions of horror as Civa, or his consort Durga-Kali, the palms of whose hands were constantly reddened with fresh blood, and whose necks were adorned with a string of human skulls."¹

As Indian culture was especially developed in Hindostan proper, that is to say, in the district of the Ganges, exclusive of Bengal, nature, according to Buckle's views, ought there above all to have filled the minds of the population with sensations of fear and awe. Earthquakes do not occur, indeed, but they are replaced by terrific hurricanes. The Bay of Bengal is certainly the source of those cyclones or circular storms which have visited

¹ History of Civilization.

Calcutta twice within the last few years. The range of these scourges is however confined to the coast, and their devastations never extend beyond the limits of Bengal. The Himalayas are also supposed by Buckle to have exercised an intimidating effect, but they are either invisible from the thickly populated districts, or appear only as a beautiful boundary on the northern horizon. When Buckle spoke of pestilences invading tropical Asia with specially destructive footsteps, he was thinking only of the cholera which just at the time he wrote was making a fresh progress through Europe. But our quarter of the world was visited in former times by the black death and the plague—destroying angels which might well be compared with the relatively modern epidemic of India, so that the temperate zone was no more exempt than the tropics. Strangely enough Buckle does not even mention the most fatal evil genius of India, namely, famine, the most active of gravediggers, which even now, when rains fail and rivers run low, occasionally causes greater destruction than any pestilences or cyclones, and transforms densely populated districts into deserts; this happened in 1770, at the beginning of the British rule, when ten out of five-and-twenty millions of Bengalese perished in consequence of a failure of the crops. If the dangers and anxieties inherent in a place of abode exercise a control such as Buckle attributes to them over the dispositions of the people, the Dutch ought to be far more credulous than the Belgians. Constantly, but more especially at the time of the syzygies of the moon, they are threatened by an adversary as pitiless as the earthquake, namely, the sea, which they, inhabiting a territory below the level of the sea, have robbed of its rightful property. This power, though expelled, has frequently avenged itself, as, for instance, when the Zuyder Zee and the Dollart were filled by a sudden inroad, and all the villages with their inhabitants were swallowed up. Lastly, in every nation sailors and miners ought to be more superstitious than any other craftsmen, for they are peculiarly exposed to freaks of the forces of nature quite beyond calculation, yet no one has ever stated that this is the case in any perceptible degree.

Hence we must admit that the greater perils of life in any place of abode have not been the cause of an excessive development

of the imagination. Even Alexander von Humboldt's beautiful saying in regard to the reaction of the Grecian sky on the Hellenic temperament is unconvincing. If one spot on earth deserves the name of paradise rather than another, it is assuredly Mexico, with its lakes, its splendid vegetation, its distant scenery, rendered beautiful by snowy volcanoes, its perpetually bright weather, and its bracing mountain air. But it is under these delightful skies that the gloomy disposition of the natives of Anáhuac has evolved all the horrors of a dark and bloody worship.

Let us, then, rather attempt to ascertain whether the habitual food of the nation stands in causal connection with the phenomena of their temperament. Hindostan, the abode of Brahminism, and Central China, the home of Confucius, are almost equally exposed to sun, and are covered by a similar vegetation. Nature, as Buckle was obliged to admit, is in both places equally great and almost equally terrible; this may at least be strictly asserted of Southern China, and yet in the Celestial Empire imagination has taken quite another direction than in India, or rather, it has scarcely taken any direction at all. The Chinese eat everything, even Holothurians, or sea-cucumbers (Trepang), the very sight of which makes those who are unaccustomed to them shudder. Orthodox Hindoos of high caste, on the contrary, abhor every kind of animal food. But it was not always so. In the time of the Vedas the consumption of animal food was not yet prohibited, and at the same time the Vedic religion was not darkened by the creation of bloodthirsty deities, nor filled with horrors and terrors as in later times. The depression of spirits, the inclination towards the prodigious and grotesque, the weariness of life, the dread of an endless series of transmigrations, first began to develop among the Hindoos simultaneously with the transition to a purely vegetable diet. Probably every one knows by personal experience that our mental functions are dependent upon nutriment; for the genuine unconscious sleep, which is profound and refreshing, flies from us when the stomach is heavily overloaded. But hunger also, like all other cravings, even if partially satisfied, exercises control over the imagination. This biological fact was and still is the origin of the rigid fastings prescribed by religions so widely

different, and made use of by Shamans in every quarter of the world, when they wish to enter into communication with the invisible powers. As often as the usual order of nutriment is interrupted or even disturbed, as soon as it ceases to be regular, the imagination acquires unusual power, and in this shaken or enfeebled condition is more susceptible to that which it ascribes to supersensual operations.

Here, then, we fancy that we have at last found the key that gives us an insight into the control exercised by physical laws in the province of mental phenomena. But turn again to Buckle, although it will this time be not as a counsellor but as a warning. "As regards the daily food," he observes, "the date is in Africa what rice is in the fertile districts of Asia. The date palm is indigenous in all countries from the Tigris to the Atlantic, and it provides millions of human beings with daily sustenance both in Arabia and nearly the whole of North Africa." He adds, moreover, that in various places even camels are fed with dates, which is only exceptionally the case, and then proceeds to say that rice contains an unusual amount of starch, namely, between 83 and 85 per cent., and that dates possess precisely the same nutritious substances, with the single difference that the starch is already converted into sugar. In his opinion this observation is a revelation, for in India, as in Egypt, he beholds the people, devoid of all will, yielding themselves completely to the priesthood. Only those who have not observed the effects of wine and other alcoholic beverages, or of tea, coffee, tobacco, and narcotic substances in general, either on themselves or others, will deny that the nature of the food reacts upon the mental powers of man, that the temperament evoked by different sorts is different. But we are still far from having ascertained anything in regard to the permanent effects of daily food, especially as the human stomach has to a great degree the power of accommodating itself to various food substances, so that with use even narcotics lose much of their effect. Lastly, Buckle deceives himself and the credulous reader when he states that the old Egyptians were date-eaters. We are far from disputing that they knew and cultivated date palms, for we should be at once met by an appeal to their ancient monuments, which bring their daily

life before us as in a picture book. But we deny that the date was a constant or even an important article of food; on the contrary, we maintain that it was only an auxiliary or supplementary food of the Pharaonic people.* Buckle can hardly suppose that the Joseph of Bible history gathered up dates into the royal garner during the seven years of plenty. Nor can he imagine that during the seven years of scarcity Jacob sent his sons to Egypt to buy dates. * When, in the days of Moses, Divine plagues were inflicted upon Egypt a hailstorm destroyed, not the date groves, but the barley and the flax, and spared the other crops, which had had not yet sprung up. The date is the daily food only in the date oases of Arabia, and to a much greater extent in those of North Africa, in Fezzan, and Southern Algeria, that is to say, on the edge and in the midst of the Sahara; there it trains up independent and warlike desert tribes which have not the most remote mental relationship to the rice-eating Hindoos, but are of a completely different character.

Indirectly we can ascertain that religious creations are in no way dependent on the kind of nourishment used by the population. These same Hindoos, whose unbridled fancy created during the epic times the most atrocious deities, were also the greatest story-makers that ever existed. It has long been known that the series of stories, which is of Indian origin, reached the West under the title of the Thousand and One Nights through the Arabs, and that besides this collection there are whole series of narratives which are sometimes put into the mouth of a skeleton, or of a clever parrot, or a wooden image which has suddenly come to life. Buckle recognizes in the numerical exaggerations of the Hindoos, with their countless ages of the world, and even in their language, which possesses an expression for a number of fifty-one places, a servile reverence for remote antiquity; we are more inclined to discern in this a predisposition for arithmetic, for the same people who played so eagerly with quantitative conceptions, benefited human culture by the contri-

* The merit of the Arab conquerors in first instituting and diffusing the cultivation of dates in Egypt is an acknowledged fact. H. Stephan, *Das heutige Aegypten*. 1872.

bution of an educational instrument second only to the invention of written characters, namely, the art of indicating the value of the numbers by their position, or, as we are wont carelessly to express ourselves, the invention of Arabic numeration. We are by no means the first to point out the obvious fact that the creation of religious and of profane fictions are merely to be regarded as different manifestations of the same intellectual capacity. Nations possessed of epic and dramatic creative powers, and those which are fond of building, painting, and sculpture, have also the faculty and the impulse requisite to people an Olympus with varied figures, which are either cheerful or gloomy according to the predominant disposition of their authors. But it may easily be shown that the creation of fictions is not confined to the rice-eating Hindoos. Fictions and legends of striking power have been collected from the scanty population of Iceland. There grain no longer ripens, and shrubs alone will grow; one single mulberry-tree, standing in a sheltered situation at Akreyri, is proudly exhibited by the natives as *the tree* of the island. The people live only on animal food, the produce of cattle-breeding and fishing. Even were it admitted that many of the beautiful legends were only preserved by the Icelanders, and were derived from their old northern home, it is certain that a great number were invented in Iceland itself; even had they originated in Norway, cattle-breeding and fishery decidedly predominated there also, and in former times far more than now. Hence we perceive that the activity of the imagination is quite independent of whether the daily aliment consists exclusively of vegetable or animal substances.

It would appear from this that there is no apparent connection between the greater precariousness of life at any given place of abode, or between the national food and the local religious creations. But we may, perhaps, find something serviceable where we should least expect it, among the old Arabian geographers. Although they were disciples of the Alexandrian Greeks, and familiar with the Ptolemaic division into degrees, in their popular expositions of their science they nevertheless distributed the earth into climates, or, as we are wont to express it, into climatic zones. These zones were not always of the same breadth, but were about

seven degrees, more or less. Each zone was supposed to possess certain products, animal, vegetable, and mineral, in special perfection; even towards the close of the Middle Ages, our schoolmen believed that black men were to be found only on or close to the equator, and that gold and precious stones never occur beyond the limits of the second zone. In the language of this systematic error, Shemseddin,³ who was named after his native city of Demeschqi (Damascus), stated that people of light colour and high intellectual endowments are limited to the third and fourth climates, or between 29° and $33^{\circ} 49'$ north latitude, and that in these zones were born all great founders of religion, philosophers, and scholars, himself included. This zone begins a little to the south of the parallel of Mecca ($21^{\circ} 21'$) a great deal to the south of the parallel of Kapilavastu (27°), the birthplace of Buddha Gautama; on the other hand, its northern margin does not include Rai (Raghes) near Teheran, and still less Balch (Bactra). As we have already mentioned it was in one of these towns that Zoroaster was born. Yet there is some truth in the observation of the Arabian geographers, that the founders of the higher and still existing religions, Zoroaster, Moses, Buddha, Christ, and Mohammed belong to the subtropical zone. For the birthplace of the latest of the prophets alone falls within the tropics, though only by about seventy-four miles. We make no mention of Confucius, not on account of the high latitude of his birthplace in the district of Yentschau, in the province of Shantung, but because we should degrade the other founders of religion were we to reckon the Chinese moralist among their numbers.

The fact that the zone of religious founders does not lie within temperate latitudes, might be explained by the supposition, that it was only in the presence of advanced intellectual development that mankind was able to add a yet higher dignity to human existence by allegiance to ideal objects, and that it was exactly in the subtropical climates that the most ancient social organizations had flourished. But even when civilization in its advance had passed outside the tropics, subtropical Asia still remained the fruitful parent of religions. Christianity did not

³ *Nouvelles annales des voyages*, 6ème série, vol. vi. 1860.

make its appearance in the over-refined European empire of the Romans, but in Palestine. Islam came into existence six hundred years later, not in Byzantium, but in Arabia. In the cold of the temperate zone, man has always been obliged to struggle hard for his existence, working more than praying, so that the burden of the day's labour constantly withheld him from deep inward meditation. In warm countries, on the contrary, where Nature facilitates the acquisition of the necessities of life, and the sultry hours of mid-day prohibit any bodily exertions, opportunities for mental absorption are far more abundant.

The place of abode is not however quite without influence on the direction taken by religious thought. The three monotheistic doctrines, Judaism, Christianity, Islam, originated with the Semitic nations, yet the tendency of the race was not exclusively to monotheism, for other Semites, such as the Phœnicians, Chaldeans, and Assyrians, took other courses, while even among the Jews reversion to polytheism were frequent, and in Egypt especially the people of God sank completely into idolatry. The perpetual reappearance of monotheism received powerful support from the surrounding scenes of nature.

All who have been in the desert extol its beneficent influence on the health and spirits. Aloys Sprenger declares that the air of the desert invigorated him more than that of the high Alps or of the Himalayas, and in a letter to the author he says: "The desert has impressed the Arabs with their remarkable historical character. In the boundless plains, the imagination which guides the youth of men is filled with images quite different from those suggested by forest country. The thoughts thus acquired are rather noble than numerous; out of his own consciousness of power man evolves for himself a yet bolder personality—a personal God by whom he is guided in his wanderings." Lastly, in nomadic life, it frequently happens that a herdsman roams about in solitude for weeks, tortured by hunger and thirst. Even the healthiest then suffers from illusions of the senses. In this state it often occurs that the forsaken wanderer hears voices speaking and calling to him; hence in Arabic there is a special word *Hâtif* for voices of this sort. In Africa, again, *Ragl*, derived from *Radschol*, the man, signifies such anthropomorphous ocular illusions.

Every traveller who has crossed the deserts of Arabia and Asia Minor speaks enthusiastically of their beauties ; all praise their atmosphere and brightness, and tell of a feeling of invigoration and a perceptible increase of intellectual elasticity ; hence between the arched heavens and the unbounded expanse of plain a monotheistic frame of mind necessarily steals upon the children of the desert. The confusion of the Egyptian pantheon, the beautiful images of stone, the sacred animals, and human figures with emblematic heads and symbols, were not forgotten by Moses, the priest of Heliopolis, until he fled to Sinai, the oldest rock known to geology, and which, according to Oscar Fraas, is still uncovered by the smallest particle of any more recent formation, seeming as if it had never been submerged beneath the sea, had never risen up, never moved. Here in the wilderness it was necessary that the old Jewish race, with its Egyptian paganism, should be buried, before monotheism as a result of the thoughts and sights of the desert, could rise and strengthen itself in a new race. In other parts of the Scriptures the healthy influence of the desert is likewise testified. The zealous Elijah retired into the desert ; John the Baptist also preached in the desert of Jordan, clad as a Bedouin, in a raiment of camel's hair, and living on locusts and wild honey. Christ also prepared himself for his career by passing forty days and forty nights in the desert. Lastly, Mohammed, although born in a city, imbibed the milk of a Bedouin foster-mother, lived for a long time as a shepherd, and in his caravan journeys crossed the deserts between his own country and Palestine. The pilgrimages to Mecca, although far more ancient than Islam, are of no little service in strengthening the faith, inasmuch as they are preceded by a journey across the desert. But even independently of this, the followers of the Prophet live in the vicinity of deserts, for the doctrine of Mohammed has spread almost exclusively in the zone of Eastern Monsoons, and only in very late times extended into Africa as far as the Soudan. In India it was unable to extend beyond very narrow limits, and that only with political assistance.

This is probably all that can be accurately ascertained in regard to the influence of the nature of the country on the tendency of the religious feeling of the population. The desert contributes

materially to awaking monotheism, because, from the dryness and clearness of its atmosphere, it does not expose the senses to all the attractive phantoms of forest scenery, the sunbeams as they play through the openings in the trees on the trembling and shining leaves, the marvellous forms of the gnarled branches, creeping roots, and storm-stricken trunks; the creaking and sighing, the whispering and roaring, the hissing and rustling, and all the voices and sounds in wood and forest, amid which the illusion of an invisible animation is so apt to overcome us. Neither do curling mists sweep and steal over the desert as on damp meadow lands. These cloud forms, as they rise over the forests of New Guinea, are venerated by the nations of Doreh as visible manifestation of their good spirit Narvojé. It may therefore be asserted that with the extermination of the forests, not only is the climate of the locality altered, but poetry and paganism have also been struck with the axe. But if a sunny land is favourable to monotheistic emotions, yet at the same time every religious creation is but an expression of the mental endowments of the race. The Semites never possessed any genuinely epic literature, and their dramatic literature was extremely scanty, for they were destitute of the Aryan capacity for framing such productions. It would be an error to trace all the intellectual productions of nations to previous physical conditions alone. They are assuredly subject to a normal course of development, and are nothing more than the necessary expression of a series of causes. But the historical destinies of the nations are certainly among these causes. "It is an old maxim," says Delbrück,¹ "that it is in the experiences of life that each individual finds or loses his God."

THE RACES OF MANKIND.

